BUDDHISM,

IN ITS CONNEXION WITH BRÄHMANISM
AND HINDUISM,

450

IN 178 CONTRAST WITH CHRISTIANITY,

SIR MONIER MONIER-WILLIAMS, K.C.LE.,



JOIN MURRAY ALBEMANLE STREET. 1889.

[All wall come!)



Oxford

HORACE HART, PRINTLE TO THE UNIVERSITY

BUDDHISM,

IN ITS CONNEXION WITH BRAHMANISM AND HINDUISM,

AND

IN ITS CONTRAST WITH CHRISTIANITY.

PK

SIR MONIER MONIER-WILLIAMS, K.C.I.E.,

"H.A. BOX, D.C.L. OF THE DEPOSITION OF OLDERS, BENEVAL, BOX THE DEPOSITION OF THE PROPERTY OF THE STATE OF TH



LONDON: JOHN MURRAY, ALBEMARLE STREET, 1880.

[All rights removed]

PREFACE.

THE 'Duff Lectures' for 1888 were delivered by me at Edinburgh in the month of March. In introducing my subject, I spoke to the following effect:—

'I wish to express my deep sense of the responsibility which the writing of these Lectures has laid upon me, and my carnest desire that they may, by their usefulness, prove in some degree worthy of the great missionary whose name they bear.

^{*}Dr. Duff was a man of power, who left his own foot-print so deeply impressed on the soil of Bengal, that its traces are never likely to be effaced, and still serve to encourage less ardent spirits, who are striving to imitate his example in the same field of labour.

'But not only is the impress of his vigorous personality still fresh in Bengal. He has earned an enduring reputation throughout India and the United Kingdom, as the prince of educational missionaries. He was in all that he undertook an enthusiastic and indefatigable workman, of whom, if of any humanbeing, it might be truly said, that, when called upon to quit the sphere of his labours, "he needed not to be ashamed." No one can have travelled much in India without having observed how wonderfully the results of his indomitable energy and fervid eloquence in the cause of Truth wait on the memory of his work everywhere. Monuments may be erected and lectureships founded to perpetuate his name and testify to his victories over difficulties which few other men could have overcome, but better than these will be the living testimony of successive generations of Hindu men and women, whose growth and progress in true enlightenment will be due to the seed which be planted, and to which God has given the increase."

I said a few more words expressive of my hope that the 'Life of Dr. Duff' would be read and pondered by every student destined for work of any kind in our Indian empire, and to that biography I refer all who are unacquainted with the particulars of the labours of a man to whom Scotland has assigned a place in the foremost rank of her most eminent Evangelists.

I now proceed to explain the process by which these Lectures have gradually outgrown the limits required by the Duff Trustees.

When I addressed myself to the carrying out of their wishes—communicated to me by Mr. W. Pirie Duff— I had no intention of undertaking more than a concise account of a subject which I had been studying for many years. I conceived it possible to compress into

Life of Alexander Duff, D.D., LL.D., by George Smith, C.L.E., LL.D.' London: Hodder and Stoughton; published first in 1879, and a popular edition in 1881.

six Lectures a scholarly sketch of what may be called true Buddhism,—that is, the Buddhism of the Pitakas or Pāli texts which are now being edited by the Pāli Text Society, and some of which have been translated in the 'Sacred Books of the East.' It soon, however, became apparent to me that to write an account of Buddhism which would be worthy of the great Indian missionary, I ought to exhibit it in its connexion with Brahmanism and Hinduism and even with Jainism, and in its contrast with Christianity. Then, as I proceeded, I began to feel that to do justice to my subject I should be compelled to enlarge the range of my researches, so as to embrace some of the later phases and modern developments of Buddhism. This led me to undertake a more careful study of Koeppen's Lamaismus than I had before thought necessary. Furthermore, I felt it my duty to study attentively numerous treatises on Northern Buddhism, which I had before read in a cursory manner. I even thought it incumbent on me to look a little into the Tibetan language, of which I was before wholly ignorant.

I need scarcely explain further the process of expansion through which the present work has passed. A conviction took possession of my mind, that any endeavour to give even an outline of the whole subject of Buldhism in six Lectures, would be rather like the effort of a foolish man trying to paint a panorama of London on a sheet of note-paper. Hence the expansion of six Lectures into eighteen, and it will be seen at once that many of these eighteen are far too long to have been delivered in extense. In point of fact, by an arrangement with the Trustees, only a certain portion of any Lecture was delivered orally. The present work is rather a treatise on Buddhism printed and published in memory of Dr. Duff.

I need not encumber the Preface with a re-statement of the reasons which have made the clucidation of an intricate subject almost hopelessly difficult. They have been stated in the Introductory Lecture (pp. 13, 14).

Moreover the plan of the present volume has been there set forth (see p. 17).

I may possibly be asked by weary readers why I have ventured to add another tributary to the too swollen stream of treatises on Buddhism? or some may employ another metaphor and inquire why I have troubled myself to toil and plod over a path already well travelled over and trodden down? My reply is that I think I can claim for my own work an individuality which separates it from that of others—an individuality which may probably commend it to thoughtful students of Buddhism as helping to clear a thorny road, and introduce some little order and coherence into the chaotic confusion of Buddhistic ideas.

At any rate I request permission to draw attention to the following points, which, I think, may invest my researches with a distinctive character of their own.

In the first place I have been able to avail myself of

the latest publications of the Pali Text Society, and to consult many recent works which previous writers on Buddhism have not had at their command.

Secondly, I have striven to combine scientific accuracy, with a popular exposition sufficiently readable to satisfy the wants of the cultured English-speaking world—a world crowded with intelligent readers who take an increasing interest in Buddhism, and yet know nothing of Sanskrit, Päli, and Tibetan.

Thirdly, I have aimed at effecting what no other English Orientalist has, to my knowledge, ever accomplished. I have endeavoured to deal with a complex subject as a whole, and to present in one volume a comprehensive survey of the entire range of Buddhism, from its earliest origin in India to its latest modern developments in other Asiatic countries.

Fourthly, I have brought to the study of Buddhism and its sacred language Pāli, a life-long preparatory study of Brāhmanism and its sacred language Sanskrit.

Fifthly, I have on three occasions travelled through the sacred land of Buddhism (p. 21), and have carried on my investigations personally in the place of its origin, as well as in Ceylon and on the borders of Tibet.

Lastly, I have depicted Buddhism from the standpoint of a believer in Christianity, who has shown, by his other works on Eastern religious, an carnest desire to give them credit for all the good they contain.

In regard to this last point, I shall probably be told

by some enthusiastic admirers of Buddhism, that my prepossessions and predilections-inherited with my Christianity-have, in spite of my desire to be just, distorted my view of a system with which I have no sympathy. To this I can only reply, that my consciousness of my own prepossessions has made me the more sensitively anxious to exhibit Buddhism under its best aspects, as well as under its worst. An attentive perusal of my last Lecture (see p. 537) will, I hope, make it evident that I have at least done everything in my power to dismiss all prejudice from my mind, and to assume and maintain the attitude of an impartial judge. And to this end I have taken nothing on trust, or at second hand. I have studied Pali, as I have the other Indian Prakrits, on my own account, and independently. I have not accepted unreservedly any man's interpretation of the original Buddhist texts, and have endeavoured to verify for myself all doubtful statements and translations which occur in existing treatises. Of course I owe much to modern Püli scholars, and writers on Buddhism, and to the translators of the Sacred Books of the East; but I have frequently felt compelled to form an independent opinion of my own.

The translations given in the 'Secred Books of the East'—good as they generally are—have seemed to me occasionally misleading. I may mention as an instance the constant employment by the translators of the word 'Ordination' for the ceremonies of admission to the Buddhist monkhood (see pp. 76-80 of the

present volume). I have ventured in such instances to give what has appeared to me a more suitable equivalent for the Pāli. On the same principle I have avoided all needless employment of Christian terminology and Bible-language to express Buddhist ideas.

For example, I have in most cases excluded such words as 'sin,' 'holiness,' 'faith,' 'trinity,' 'priest' from my explanations of the Buddhist creed, as wholly unsuitable.

I regret that want of space has compelled me to curtail my observations on Jainism—the present representative of Buddhistic doctrines in India (see p. 529.) I hope to enter more fully on this subject hereafter.

The names of authors to whom students of Buddhism are indebted are given in my first Lecture (pp. 14, 15). We all owe much to Childers. My own thanks are specially due to General Sir Alexander Cunningham, to Professor E. B. Cowell of Cambridge, Professor Rhys Davids, Dr. Oldenberg, Dr. Rost, Dr. Morris, Dr. Wenzel, who have aided me with their opinions, whenever I have thought it right to consult them. Dr. Rost, C.I.E., of the India Office, is also entitled to my warmest acknowledgments for having placed at my disposal various subsidiary works bearing on Buddhism, some of which belong to his own Library.

My obligations to Mr. Hoey's translation of Dr. Oldenberg's 'Buddha,' to the translations of the travels of the Chinese pilgrims by Professor Legge, Mr. Beal, M. Abel Rémusat, and M. Stanislas Julien, to M. Huc's

travels, and to Mr. Scott's 'Burman,' will be evident, and have been generally acknowledged in my notes. I am particularly grateful to Mr. Sarat Chandra Das, C.I.E., for the information contained in his Report and for the instruction which I received from him personally while prosecuting my inquiries at Darjiling.

I have felt compelled to abbreviate nearly all my quotations, and therefore occasionally to alter the phraseology. Hence I have thought it right to mark them by a different type without inverted commas.

With regard to transliteration I must refer the student to the rules for pronunciation given at p. xxxi. They conform to the rules given in my Sanskrit Grammar and Dictionary. Like Dr. Oldenberg, I have preferred to substitute Sanskrit terminations in a for the Pāli o. In Tibetan I have constantly consulted Jäschke, but have not followed his system of transliteration.

In conclusion, I may fitly draw attention to the engravings of objects, some of which were brought by myself from Buddhist countries. They are described in the list of illustrations (see p. xxix), and will, I trust, give value to the present volume. It has seemed to me a duty to make use of every available appliance for throwing light on the obscurities of a difficult subject; and, as these Lectures embrace the whole range of Buddhism, I have adopted as a frontispiece a portrait of Buddha which exhibits Buddhism in its receptivity and in its readiness to adopt serpent-worship, or any other superstition of the races which it strove to convert.

On the other hand, the Wheel, with the Tri-ratna and the Lotus (pp. 521, 522), is engraved on the title-page as the best representative symbol of early Buddhism. It is taken from a Buddhist sculpture at Amaravati engraved for Mr. Fergusson's 'Tree and Serpent-worship' (p. 237).

The portrait which faces page 74 is well worthy of attention as illustrating the connexion between Bud-

A reference to pages 74, 226, 232 of the following Lectures will make the connexion which I wish to illustrate clearer. In many images of the Buddha the robe is drawn over both shoulders, as in the portrait of the living Sannyasi. Then mark other particulars in the portrait: -c.g. the Rudraksha rosary round the neck (see 'Brahmanism and Hindhism, p. 67). Then in front of the mixed seat of the Sannyasi are certain ceremonial implements. First, observe the Kamandalu, or water-gourd, near the right hand corner of the seat. Next, in front of the seat, on the right hand of the figure, is the Upa-patra—a subsidiary vessel to be used with the Kamandalu. Then, in the middle, is the Tamra-pairs or copper vessel, and on the left the Pasica-pairs with the Adamani (see Beahmanism and Hinduism, pp. 401, 402). Near the left hand corner of the seat are the wooden clogs. Finally, there is the Danda or staff held in the left hand, and used by a Sannyasi as a defence against evil spirits, much as the Dorje (or Vajra) is used by Northern Buddhist monks (see p. 323 of the present volume). This mystical staff is a bamba with six knots, possibly symbolical of six ways (Gati) or states of life, through which it is believed that every being may have to migrate—a belief common to both Brahmanism and Buddhism (see p. 122 of this volume). The staff is called Su-darsana (s. name for Vishau's Cakra), and is daily worshipped for the preservation of its mysterious powers. The mystic white roll which begins just above the left hand and ends before the left knot is called the Lakshmivastra, or anspicious covering. The projecting piece of cloth folded in the form of an axe (Parasu) represents the weapon of Parasu-Rama, one of the incarnations of Vishau (see pp. 110, 270 of 'Brühmanism and Hindrian') with which he subdued the enemics of the Brahmans. With this so-called axe may be contrasted the Buddhist weapon for keeping off the powers of evil (engraved at p. 352).

dhism and Brahmanism. It is from a recently-taken photograph of Mr. Gauri-Saŭkar Uday-Saŭkar, C.S.I.—a well-known and distinguished Brahman of Blaunagar—who (with Mr. Percival) administered the State during the minority of the present enlightened Maharaja. Like the Buddha of old, he has renounced the world—that is, he has become a Sannyasi, and is chiefly engaged in meditation. He has consequently dropped the title C.S.I., and taken the religious title—Svāmi Šrī Sačcidānanda-Sarasvatī. His son, Mr. Vijay-Šaŭkar Gaurī-Šaŭkar, kindly sent me the photograph, and with his permission I have had it engraved.

It will be easily understood that, as a great portion of the following pages had to be delivered in the form of Lectures, occasional repetitions and recapitulations were unavoidable, but I trust I shall not be amenable to the charge of repeating anything for the sake of 'padding.' I shall, with more justice, be accused of 'cramming,' in the sense of attempting to force too much information into a single volume.

January 1, 1889.

POSTSCRIPT.

Since writing the foregoing prefatory remarks, I have observed with much concern that a prevalent error, in regard to Buddhism, is still persistently propagated. It is categorically stated in a newspaper report of a quite recent lecture, that out of the world's population of about 1500 millions at least 500 millions are Buddhists, and that Buddhism numbers more adherents than any other religion on the surface of the globe.

Almost every European writer on Buddhism, of late years, has assisted in giving currency to this utterly erroneous calculation, and it is high time that an attempt should be made to dissipate a serious misconception.

It is forgotten that mere sympathizers with Buddhism, who occasionally conform to Buddhistic practices, are not true Buddhists. In China the great majority are first of all Confucianists and then either Täoists or Buddhists or both. In Japan Confucianism and Shintoism co-exist with Buddhism. In some other Buddhist countries a kind of Shamanism is practically dominant. The best authorities (including the Oxford Professor of Chinese, as stated in the Introduction to his excellent work 'The Travels of Fa-hien') are of opinion that there are not more than 100 millions of real Buddhists in the world, and that Christianity with its 430 to 450 millions of adherents has now the numerical preponderance over all other religions. I am entirely of the same opinion. I hold that the Buddhism, described in the following pages, contained within itself, from the earliest times, the germs of disease, decay, and death (see p. 557), and that its present condition is one of rapidly increasing disintegration and decline.

We must not forget that Buddhism has disappeared from India proper, although it dominates in Coylon and Burma, and although a few Buddhist travellers find their way back to the land of its origin and sojourn there.

Indeed, if I were called upon to give a rough comparative numerical estimate of the six chief religious systems of the world, I should be inclined, on the whole, to regard Confucianism as constituting, next to Christianity, the most numerically prevalent creed. We have to bear in mind the immense populations, both in China and Japan, whose chief creed is Confucianism.

Professor Legge informs me that Dr. Happer—an American Presbyterian Missionary of about 45 years standing, who has gone carefully into the statistics of Buddhism—reckons only 20 millions of Buddhists in China, and not more than 72½ millions in the whole of Asia. Dr. Happer states that, if the Chinese were required to class themselves as Confucianists or Buddhists or Taoists, 45ths, if not 45 ths, of them would, in his opinion, claim to be designated as Confucianists.

In all probability his estimate of the number of Buddhists in China is too low, but the Chinese ambassador Liu, with whom Professor Legge once had a conversation on this subject, ridicaled the view that they were as numerous as the Confucianists.

Undeniably, as it seems to me, the next place after Christianity and Confucianism should be given to Brahmanism and Hinduism, which are not really two systems but practically one; the latter being merely ERROR IN REGARD TO PREVALENCE OF BUDDHISM. XVII

an expansion of the former, modified by contact with Buddhism.

Brahmanism, as I have elsewhere shown, is nothing but spiritual Pantheism; that is, a belief in the universal diffusion of an impersonal Spirit (called Brahman or Brahma)—as the only really existing Essence—and in its manifesting itself in Mind and in countless material forces and forms, including gods, demons, men, and animals, which, after fulfilling their course, must ultimately be re-absorbed into the one impersonal Essence and be again evolved in endless evolution and dissolution.

Hinduism, with its worship of Vishou and Siva, is based on this pantheistic doctrine, but the majority of the Hindus are merely observers of Brahmanical institutions with their accompanying Hindu caste usages. If, however, we employ the term Hindu in its widest acceptation (omitting only all Islāmized Hindus) we may safely affirm that the adherents of Hinduism have reached an aggregate of nearly 200 millions. In the opinion of Sir William Wilson Hunter, they are still rapidly increasing, both by excess of births over deaths and by accretions from more backward systems of belief.

Probably Buddhism has a right to the fourth place in the scale of numerical comparison. At any rate the number of Buddhists can scarcely be calculated at less than 100 millions.

In regard to Muhammadanism, this creed should not, I think, be placed higher than fifth in the coumeration. In its purest form it ought to be called EVIII ERROR IN REGARD TO PREVALENCE OF BUDDHISM.

Islām, and in that form it is a mere distorted copy of Judaism.

The Empress of India, as is well known, rules over more Muhammadans than any other potentate in the world. Probably the Musalman population of the whole of India now numbers 55 millions,

As to the number of Muhammadans in the Turkish empire, there are no very trustworthy data to guide us, but the aggregate is believed to be about 14 millions; while Africa can scarcely reckon more than that number, even if Egypt be included.

The sixth system, Taoism (the system of Lao-tsze), according to Professor Legge, should rank numerically after both Muhammadanism and Buddhism.

Of course Jainism (p. 529) and Zoroastrianism (the religion of the Pärsis) are too numerically insignificant to occupy places in the above comparison.

It is possible that a careful census might result in a more favourable estimate of the number of Buddhists in the world, than I have here submitted; but at all events it may safely be alleged that, even as a form of popular religion, Buddhism is gradually losing its vitality—gradually loosening its hold on the vast populations once loyal to its rule; nay, that the time is rapidly approaching when its capacity for resistance must give way before the mighty forces which are destined in the end to sweep it from the earth.

CONTENTS.

n. c.											PAGE
Preface	1.4			- 6	-		4.0	- 1		1	·V
Postseript of	to the	opm	mon	error	in re	gard	to th	e con	para	live	
prevalene	e of E	uddl	nasm	in the	work	1 .	100	+		4	xiv
List of Illus	tratio	8.0	-	-	-	141	1		-		xxix
Rules for P					1	4				1	xxxi
Pronunciatio	on of l	Budd	ha, e	de. I	Adden	da an	d Cor	rigene	In		XXXII

LECTURE 1.

INTRODUCTORY ORSERVATIONS.

Buddhism in its relation to Brühmanism. Various sects in Brühmanism. Croed of the ordinary Hindh. Rise of scopticism and infidelity. Materialistic school of thought. Origin of Buddhism and Jainism. Manysidedness of Buddhism. Its complexity. Labours of various scholars. Divisions of the subject. The Buddha, his Law, his Order of Monks. Northern Buddhism 1-17

LECTURE II.

THE BUDDHA AS A PERSONAL TEACHER.

The Buddha's biography. Date of his birth and death. His names, epithets, and titles. Story of the four visions. Birth of the Buddha's son. The Buddha leaves his home. His life at Rāja-griha. His study of Brahmanical philosophy. His sexennial fast. His temptation by Māra. He attains perfect enlightenment. The Buddhi-tree. Buddha and Muhammad compared. The Buddha's proceedings after his enlightenment. His first teaching at Benares. First sermon. Effect of first teaching. His first sixty missionaries. His fire-sermon. His eighty great disciples. His two chief and sixteen leading disciples. His forty five years of preaching and dimeration. His death and last words. Character of the Buddha's teaching. His method illustrated by an epitome of one of his parables.

LECTURE III.

THE DHARMA OR LAW AND SCHIPTURES OF RUDDHISM.

Origin of the Buddhist Law (Dharma). Buddhist scriptures not like the Veda. First council at Raja-griba. Kasyapa chosen as leader. Recitation of the Buddha's proceepts. Second council at Vaisali. Candra-gapta. Third council at Patna. Composition of southern canon. Tri-pitaka or three collections. Bales of discipline, moral precepts, philosophical precepts, Commentaries. Buddha-ghosha. Asoka's inscriptions. His edicts and proclamations. Fourth council at Jalandhara. Kanishka. The northern canon. The nine Neptlese ennonical scriptures. The Tibetau canonical scriptures (Kanjur). . . . 53-70-

LECTURE IV.

THE SANGHA OR BUDDHIST ORDER OF MONES.

Nature of the Buddhist brutherhood. Not a priesthood, not a hierarchy. Names given to the monks. Method of admission to the monkhood. Admission of novices. Three-refuge formula. Admission of full monks. Four resources. Four prohibitions. Offences and peramees. Eight practices. The monk's daily life. His three garments. Confession. Definition of the Sangha or community of monks. Order of Nuns. Lay-brothers and lay-sisters. Relation of the laity to the monkhood. Duties of the laity. Later hierarchical Buddhism. Character of monks of the present day in various countries.

LECTURE V.

The Philosophical Doctrixes of Buddiess.

The philosophy of Buddhism founded on that of Brahmanism, Three ways of salvation in Brahmanism. The Buddha's one way of salvation. All life is misery. Indian pessimistic philosophy. Twelve-linked chain of causation. Celebrated Buddhist formula. The Buddha's attitude towards the Sankhya and Vedanta philosophy of the Brahmans. The Buddha's negation of spirit and of a

Supreme Being. Brithmanical theory of meteropsychosis. The Buddhist Skandhas. The Buddhist theory of transmigration. Only six forms of existence. The Buddhis's previous hirths. Examples given of stories of two of his previous births. Destiny of man dependent on his own acts. He-creative force of acts. Act-force creating worlds. No knowledge of the first act. Cycles of the Universe. Interminable succession of existences like rotation of a wheel. Buddhist Kalpas or ages. Thirty-one ahodes of six classes of beings rising one above the other in successive tiers of lower worlds and three sets of heavens.

LECTURE VI.

THE MORALITY OF BUDDENSH AND ITS CHIEF AIM— ARMYSHID OR NIMYĀNA.

Inconsistency of a life of morality in Buddhism. Division of the moral code. First five and then ten shief rules of moral conduct. Positive injunctions. The ten fetters binding a man to existence. Seven jewels of the Law. Six (or ten) transcendent virtues. Examples of moral precepts from the Dharma-pada and other works. Moral merit easily acquired. Aim of Buddhist morality. External and internal morality. Inner condition of heart. Four paths or stages leading to Arhatship or moral perfection. Three grades of Arhats. Series of Buddhas. Gautama the fourth Buddha of the present age, and last of twenty-five Buddhas. The future Buddha. Explanation of Nirvana and Pari-nirvana as the true aim of Buddhist morality. Buddhist and Christian morality contrasted

LECTURE VII.

CHANGES IN BUDDELSM AND ITS DISAPPRABANCE FROM INDIA.

Tendency of all religious movements to deterioration and disintegration. The corruptions of Buddhism are the result of its own fundamental dectrines. Re-statement of Buddha's early teaching. Recoil to the opposite extreme. Sects and divisions in Buddhism. The first four principal sects, followed by eighteen, thirty-two, and ninety-six. Mahā-yūm or Great Method (vehicle).

Hins-yana or Little Method. The Chinese Buddhist travellers,
Fa-hien and Hinnen Theong. Reasons for the disappearance of
Buddhism from Indio. Gradual amalgamation with surrounding
systems. Interaction between Buddhism, Vaishpavism, and
Saivism. Ultimate merging of Buddhism in Brühmanism and
Hindüism

LECTURE VIII.

RISE OF THEISTIC AND POLYTHEISTIC BUDDHISM.

Development of the Mahä-yana or Great Method. Gradual deification of saints, sages, and great men. Tendency to group in triads. First triad of the Buddha, the Law, and the Order. Buddhist triad no trinity. The Buddha to be succeeded by Maitreya. Maitreya's heaven longed for. Constitution and gradations of the Buddhist brotherhood. Headship and government of the Buddhist monasteries. The first Arhats. Progress of the Mahayana doctrine. The first Bodhi-sattva Maitreya associated with numerous other Bodhi-sattvas. Deification of Maitreya and elevation of Gautama's great pupils to Bodhi-sattvaship. Purtial deification of great teachers. Nägärjuna, Gorakh-näth. Harlanm and Josephat

LECTURE IX

THEASTIC AND POLYTHEISTIC BUDDHISM.

Second Buddhist triad, Maŭju-ŝrī, Avalokiteŝvara or Padmapūni and Vajra-pāṇi. Description of cuch. Theory of five human Buddhas, five Dhyāni-Buddhas formed by grouping together one from each. Theory of Ādi-Buddha. Worship of the Dhyāni-Buddha Amitabha. Tiers of heavens connected with the four Dhyānas or stages of meditation. Account of the later Buddhist theory of lower worlds and three groups of heavens. Synopsis of the twentysix beavens and their inhabitants. Hindū gods and demons adopted by Buddhism. Hindū and Buddhist mythology . 195-222

LECTURE X.

Mystical Boddhism in its connexion with the Yoga Philosophy,

PAGE

LECTURE XI.

HIEBARCHICAL BUDDHISM, ESPECIALLY AS DEVELOPED IN TIBET AND MONGOLIA.

The Sangha Development of Hierarchical gradations in Ceylon and in Burma, Tibetan Buddhism. Northern Buddhism connected with Shamanism. Lämism and the Lämistic Hierarchy. Gradations of monkhood, Avatara Limas. Vagabond Lamas. Female Hierarchy. Two Lamistic sects. Explanation of Avatara theory. History of Tibet. Early history of Tibetan Buddhism. Thumi Sambhota's invention of the Tibetan alphabet. Indian Buddhists sent for to Tibet. Tibetan canon. Tibetan kings. Founding of monasteries. Buddhism adopted in Mongolia. Hierarchical Buddhism in Mongolia. Invention of Mongolinn alphabet. Birth of the Buddhist reformer Tsong Khapa. The Red and Yellow Cap schools. Monasteries of Galdan, Brepung, and Sera. Character of Tsong Khapa's reformation. Resemblance of the Roman Catholic and Limistic systems. Death and canonization of Tsong Khapa. Development of the Avatara theory. The two Grand Linnas, Dalai Lama and

PAGE

Panchen Läma. Election of Dalai Läma. Election of the Grand Lämas of Mongolis. List of Dalai Lämas. Discovery of present Dalai Läma. The Läma or Khanpo of Galdau, of Kurun or Kuren, of Kuku khotun. Lämism in Ladak, Tangut, Nepäl, Bhutan, Sikkim. In China and Japan. Divisions in Japanese Buddhism. Buddhism in Russian territory

LECTURE XII.

CEREMONIAL AND RITUALISTIC BUDDIESM.

Opposition of early Buddhism to sacerdotalism and ceremonialism. Reaction. Religious superstition in Tibet and Mongolia. Accounts by Koeppen, Schlagintweit, Markham, Huc, Sarat Chandra Dia. Admission-ceremony of a novice in Burma and Ceylon. Boy-pupils. Daily life in Burmese monasteries, according to Shway Yoe. Observances during Vassa. Pirit ceremony. Maha-bana Pirit. Admission-ceremonies in Tibet and Mongolia. Dress and equipment of a Lamistic monk. Dorje. Prayer-bell. Use of Tibetan language in the Ritual. A. Csoma de Körös' life and labours. Form and character of the Lamistic Ritual. Hac's description of a particular Ritual. Holy water, conseerated grain, tea-drinking. Ceremonies in Sikkim and Ladak, Ceremony at Sarat Chandra Das' presentation to the Dalai Lama. Ceremony at translation of a chief Lama's soul. Other ceremonies. Upozatha and fast-days. Circumandulation: Comparison with Roman Catholic Ritual 393-339

LECTURE XIII.

PESTIVALS, DOMESTIC BYCES, AND FORMULARIES OF PRAYERS.

New Year's Festivals in Burms and Tibet. Festivals of Buddha's birth and death. Festival of lamps. Local Festivals. Chase of the spirit-kings. Religious masquerades and dances. Religious dramas in Burms and Tibet. Wespons used against evil spirits. Dorje. Phurba. Tattooing in Burms. Domestic rites and usages. Birth-ceremonies in Ceylon and Burms. Name-giving ceremonies. Horoscopes. Baptism in Tibet and Mongolia. Amulets. Marriage-ceremonies. Freedom of women in Buddhist countries. Usages in sickness. Merit gained by saving snimal-life. Usages at death. Cremation. Funeral-ceremonies in Sikkim, Japan, Coylon, Burma, Tibet, and Mongolia. Exposure of corpses in Tibet and Mongolia. Prayer-formularies. Monlam. Mani-padme or 'jewel-lotus' formulary. Prayer-wheels, praying-cylinders and method of using them. Formularies on rocks, etc. Man Dangs. Prayer-flags. Mystic formularies. Rosaries. Pamaru. Manual of daily prayers. 340-386

LECTURE XIV.

SACRED PLACES.

The sacred land of Buddhism. Kapila-vastu, the Buddha's birth-place. The arrow-fountain. Buddha-Gaya, Ascient Secred tree. Restoration of Temple. Votive Stupes. Mixture of Buddhism and Hinduism. Histon Throng's description of Buddha-Gaya. Sarnath near Benares. Humed Stups. Sculpture illustrating four events in the Buddha's career. Baja-griba Scene of incidents in the Boddha's life. Devadatta's plots. Satta-panni cave. Sravasti. Residence in Jetavana monastery. Sandal-wood image. Miracles. Vaisāli, place of second council. Description by Hiouen Theong and Fa-hion. Great monolith. Nalanda monastery. Hiquen Kausambl. Thrang's description. Sankasya, place of Buddin's descent from heaven. Account of the triple ladder. Saketa or Ayodhyfi. Mirneulous tree. Knnyā-kubja. Silāditya. Aśoka's palace. Founding of bospitals. First Stūpa. Kesariya. Ruined mound. Stapa. Kusi-nagara, the place of the Buddha's death and Pari-nirvana . 387-425

LECTURE XV.

MONASTERIES AND TEMPLES.

Pive kinds of dwellings permissible for monks. Institution of monasteries. Cave-monasteries, Monasteries in Ceylon, Barma, and British Sikkim. Monastery at Kilang in Labit; at Kunbum; at Kuku khotun; at Kuren; at Lhässa. Palace-

Paul

Residence of Dalai Lams, and Mr. monastery of Potalu. Manning's interview with him. Monasteries of La brang, Ramodhe, Moro, Gar Ma Khian. Three mother-monasteries of the Yellow Sect. Galdan, Sera, and Danung. Tashi Lunger and the Tashi Lama. Mr. Bogle's interview with the Tashi Lama. Turner's interview with the Grand Linux of the Terpaling monastery. Sarat Chondra Day description of the Tashi Lunpo monastery. Monasteries of the Red Sect, Sam ye and Sakya. Monastery libraries. Temples. Cave-temples or Unityas. The Elori Cairya. The Kärle Cairya. Village temples. Temples Temple at Kelani. Tooth-temple at Kandy. Burmese temples. Rangoon pagoda. Temples in Sikkim, Mangolia, and Tibet. Great temple at Llaiess; at Ramoche; at Tashi Lunpo

LECTURE XVI

IMAGES AND IDOLS.

Introduction of idolatry into India. Ancient image of Buildia.

Gradual growth of objective Buildhism. Development of imageworship. Self-produced images. Hisusen Thung's account of the
midal-wood image. Form, character, and general characteristics
of images. Outgrowth of Buildha's skull. Nimbus. Size, height,
and different attitudes of Buildha's images. 'Meditative,' Witness,' Serpent-rampied,' Argumentative or Teaching,' Preaching,' Benedictive,' Mendicant,' and 'Recumbent' Attitudes.

Representations of Buildha's birth. Images of other Buildhas
and Buildi-sattvas. Images of Amitablas, of Maitreya, of Manjusit, of Avalokitesvara, of Kwan-yin and Vajra-pani. Images of
other Buildi-sattvas, guds and goddesses.

465-492

LECTURE XVII.

BACKED ORDECTS.

Relics. Hindu ideas of impurity connected with death.

PAGE

Worship of foot-prints. Probable origin of the worship of foot-prints. Alleged foot-prints of Christ. Vishnu-pad at Gaya. Jaina pilgrims at Mount Parasuath. Adam's Peak. Foot-prints in various countries. Mr. Alaksstor's description of the footprint in Siam. Marks on the soles of the Ruddha's feet . 506-514

Sacred trees. General prevalence of tree-worship. Belief that spirits inhabit trees. Offsrings hong on trees. Trees of the seven principal Bublius. The Asynttha or Pippain is of all trees the most revered. Other sacred trees. The Kalpa-tree. Wishing-tree. Kabir Var tree.

Sacred symbols. The Tri-ratna symbol. The Cakra or Wheel symbol. The Lotus-flower. The Svastika symbol. The Throne symbol. The Umbrella. The Sankha or Couch shell: 520-523

Miscellaneous objects. Bells. Seven precious substances. Seven treasures belonging to every universal monarch . 526-528

SUPPLEMENTARY REMARKS ON THE CONNEXION OF BUDDHISM WITH JAINISM.

Difference between the Buddhist and Jaina methods of obtaining liberation. Nigarthan. Two Jaina sects. Digrambarns and Svetämbarns. The three chief points of difference between them. Their sacred books. Characteristics of both sects as distinguished from Buddhism. Belief in existence of souls. Moral code. Three-jewels. Five moral probibations. Prayer-formula. Temples erected for acquisition of healt. 529-536

LECTURE XVIII.

BUDDHISM CONTRASTED WITH CHRISTIANITY.

PAGE

True Buddhism is no religion. Definition of the word 'religion.'

Four characteristics constitute a religion. Gautama's claim to be called 'the Light of Asia' examined. The Buddha's and Christ's first call to their disciples. The Christian's reverence for the body contrasted with the Buddhist's contempt for the body. Doctrine of storing up merit illustrated, and shown to be common to Buddhism, Brahmanism, Hinduism, Confucianism, Zoronstrianism, and Muhammadanism. Doctrine of Karma or Act-force. Buddhist and Christian doctrine of deliverance compared. Buddhist and Christian moral precepts compared. The many benefits conferred upon Asia by Buddhist admitted. Religious feelings among Buddhists. Buddhist toleration of other religions.

Historic life of the Christ contrasted with legendary hiography of the Buddha. Christ God-sent. The Buddha self-sent. Miracles recorded in the Bible and in the Tri-pitaka contrasted. Buddhist and Christian self-sacrifice compared. Character and style of the Buddhist Tri-pitaka contrasted with those of the Christian Bible. Various Buddhist and Christian doctrines contrasted. Which doctrines are to be preferred by rational and thoughtful men in the nineteenth century?

OBSERVE.

The prevalent error in regard to the number of Buddhists at present existing in the world is pointed out in the Postscript at the end of the Preface (p. xiv).

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

WITH DESCRIPTIONS.

	Submission between the applications of the American	PAGE
1.	Hruss Image of Gautarna Buddha obtained by the Author from Ceylon Frontispiece. He is seated on the Mutalinda Serpent, see p. 4805, in an attitude of profund meditation, with eyes helf closed, and five rays of light emerging from the crown of his bend.	
2.	Vignette, representing the Cakea or 'Wheel' Symbol with Tri-catea symbols in the outer circle and Lotus symbol in the centre (see pp. 521-522)	
3-	Map illustrative of the Sacred Land of Baddhism To fire	21
4	Portrait of Mr. Gauri-Sankar Uday-Sankar, C. S. I., now Svanti Sri Succidinanda-Sarasvati	74
5	Magical Darje or thunderbolt used by Northern Buskilhists .	141
6.	Prayer-bell used in worship	324
7.	Magical weapon called Phur-pa, for defence against evil spirits. Used by Northern Buddhists. Prought free Duriting in 1884.	
8.	Amulet worn by a Tibetan woman at Dürjiling in 1884. Purchased at Dürjiling and given to the Author by Mr. Sarat Chandra Disc.	358
g.	Hand Prayer-wheel brought by the Author from Darjiling	375
o.	Damaru, or sacred drum, used by vagabond Buddlast monks	385
in.	Ancient Buddhist temple at Buddha-Gaya, as it appeared	
	Freezest about the middle of the 200 century on the rolls of Asska's temple, at the spot where textures attained broken all the spot where textures attained broken all the spot where textures attained broken attained by Mr. 6 textures.	261
18.	The man temple at Buddler-Caya, as restored in 1874 To./an. From a photograph by Mr. Region interpol by 50; K. W. Sustem.	3//3

13.	Bronze model dag up at Moulmein, representing triple ladder by which Buddha is supposed to have descended from heaven (from original in South Kensington Museum)	418
14.	Remains of a colorsal statue of Buddha To face Probably in "argumentative" or "tenching" status (see p. 481). It was found by General Sir A. Cenningham close to the south side of the Buddha-Gaya temple. The date (Samvat 64-A.B.142) is imeribed on the pedestal.	467
ia.	Torre-cotta image of Raddha dag up at Buddha-Guya. Half the size of the original sculpture. Buddha is in the attitude of mediatrica maker the tree, with a halo or arresta round his head. Probable date, not surfeer than 9th century.	477
10.	Semipture found by General Sir A. Canningham at Sarmith, near Benares	
17.	Scalpture of Buddha in 'Witness-attitude' on attaining Buddhahood, under the tree (an umbralla is above). Found at Buddha-Gays. Bute about the 9th century. The original is remarkable for its smiling features and for the circular mark on the forehold. The drawing is from a photograph belonging to Sir A. Consingham.	
18.	Scalpture of Buddha in "Witness-attitude" on attaining Buddhahood under the tree Fran a nicke high up on the western side of the Buidha-Gaya temple. It has the "Yadharma" formula (p. ro4 inscribed on each side. It is half the size of the original scalpture. Probable date about the 11th century.	480
19.	Sculpture found at Buddha-Gaya representing the earliest Triant, viz. Buddha, Dharma, and Sangha	485
26	Volive Stape found at Buddha-Gaya To face Probable date about 9th or 10th century of our sea.	505
21.	Clay model of a small votive Stupa. Selected from several which the author saw in the act of being made by a menk outside a monastery in British Sikkim in 1884. This model probably contains the 'Ye dharma' or some other formula on a seal inside. The organizing is exactly the size of the original.	

RULES FOR PRONUNCIATION.

VOWELS.

A, a, pronounced as in rural, or the last a in America; \tilde{A} , \tilde{a} , as in tax, father; I, i, as in fall; \tilde{I} , i, as in police; U, u, as in ball; \tilde{U} , \tilde{u} , as in rade; Ri, ri, as in matrix; Ri, ri, as in matrix; E, e, as in prey; Ai, ai, as in aisle; O, e, as in go; Au, au, as in Haus (pronounced as in German).

CONSONANTS.

K, k, pronounced as in kill, seek; Kh, kk, ss in inkhorn; G, g, as is gun, dog; Gh, gh, as in loghat; N, d, as ng in sing (sid).

C, & as in dolor (in music).= English ch in church lurch (luc'); Ch, ch, as in churchhill (durchill); J, j, as in jet; Jh, jh, as in bedge-hog (hejhog); Ñ, ñ, as in singe (siñj).

T, t, as in true (tru); Th, th, as in anthill (anthill); D, d, as in drum (drum); Dh, dh, as in redhaired (reghaired); N, n, as in some (num).

T, t, as in water (as procounced in Ireland); Th, th, as nut-hook (but more dental); D, d, as in dice (more like th in this); Dh, dh, as in adhere (more dental); N, n, as in not, in.

P. p. as in put, sip; Ph, ph, as in uphill; B, b, as in bear, rub; Bh, bh, as in abhor; M, sn, as in map, jam.

Y, y, as in yet; R, r, as in red, year; L, l, as in he; Y, v, as in the (but like to after consonants, as in twice).

S, s, as in sure, seasion; Sh, sh, as in shun, head; S, s, as in sir, hiss. H, h, as in hit.

In Tibetan the vowels, including even s and s, have generally the short sound, but accentuated vowels are comparatively long. I have marked such words as Lama with a long mark to denote this, but Kaeppen and Jasehke write Lama. Jasehke says that the Tibetan alphabet was adapted from the Lancha form of the Indian letters by Thumi (Thomai) Sombhota (see p. 270) about the year 632.

OBSERVE.

It is common to hear English-speakers mispronounce the words Buddha and Buddhism. But any one who studies the rules on the preceding page will see that the u in Buddha, must not be pronounced like the u in the English word 'bud,' but like the u in bull.

Indeed, for the sake of the general reader, it might be better to write Booddha and Booddhism, provided the so be pronounced as in the words 'wood,' good.'

ADDENDA AND CORRIGENDA.

Page 21, lies 15. One hundred is given as a round number. The actual distance is about one hundred and twenty miles.

Page 138, line 16. It must not be interred that the episcale of the Blaggavad-gith is of great antiquity. This point I have made clear in Bruhamnism and Hinduism' (p. 63) as well as in 'Indian Wisdom.' My object at p. 138 is simply to show that Nirvana is an expression community Buddhism. Brihamnism, and Hinduism.

Page 161, line z. Song Yun is properly written Sung Yun or Sung-Yun

Page 179, line 16. Probably all the images of Dharma are meant to be female, as described in the note on the same page, and at p. 485.

Pago 296, line 2. 'Cloven-headed' seems a majorina for elevenheaded; but the account of the creation of Avalokitesyum at p. 487 at this volume justifies 'charge-headed.

Page 440, line to from bottom, for Lhusta year Lluissa.

It is fixed that the lang-mark over the letter A may have been omitted in one or two cases or may have broken off in printing.

BUDDHISM.

LECTURE 1

Introductory. Buddhism in relation to Brahmanism.

In my recent work on Brahmanism I have traced the progress of Indian religious thought through three successive stages—called by me Vedism, Brahmanism, and Bindnism—the last including the three subdivisions of Saivism, Vuishmavism, and Saktism. Furthermore I have attempted to prove that these systems are not really separated by sharp lines, but that each almost imperceptibly shades off into the other.

I have striven also to show that a true Hindu of the orthodox school is able quite conscientionsly to accept all these developments of religious belief. He holds that they have their authoritative exponents in the successive bibles of the Hindu religion, namely, (1) the four Vedas—Rig-veda, Yajur-veda, Sāma-veda, Atharva-veda—and the Brāhmaṇas; (2) the Upanishads; (3) the Law-books—especially that of Manu; (4) the Bhakti-sāstras, including the Rāmāyaṇa, the Mahā-bhārata, the Purāṇas—especially the Bhāgavata-purāṇa—and the Bhāgavata-gitā; (5) the Tantras.

³ Brühmmisse and Hindaisaa? Third Edition: John Murray. Albemarie Street.

The chief works under these five heads represent the principal periods of religious development through which the Hindu mind has passed.

Thus, in the first place, the hymns of the Vedas and the ritualism of the Brahmanas represent physiolatry or the worship of the personified forces of nature—a form of religion which ultimately became saturated with sacrificial ideas and with ceremonialism and asceticism. Secondly, the Upanishads represent the pantheistic conceptions which terminated in philosophical Brahmanism. Thirdly, the Law-books represent caste-rules and domestic usages. Fourthly, the Rāmāvana, Maha-bharata, and Puranas represent the principle of personal devotion to the personal gods, Siva, Vishnu, and their manifestations; and fifthly, the Tantras represent the perversion of the principle of love to polluting and degrading practices disguised under the name of religious rites. Of these five phases of the Hindū religion probably the first three only prevailed when Buddhism arose; but I shall try to make clear hereafter that Buddhism, as it developed, accommodated itself to the fourth and even ultimately to the fifth phase, admitting the Hindu gods into its own creed, while Hindnism also received ideas from Buddhism.

At any rate it is clear that the so-called orthodox Brāhman admits all five series of works as progressive exponents of the Hindū system—although he scarcely likes to confess openly to any adoption of the fifth. Hence his opinions are of necessity Protean and multiform.

The root ideas of his creed are of course Pantheistic, in the sense of being grounded on the identification of the whole external world—which he believes to be a mere illusory appearance—with one eternal, impersonal, spiritual Essence; but his religion is capable of presenting so many phases, according to the stand-point from which it is viewed, that its pantheism appears to be continually sliding into forms of monotheism and polytheism, and even into the lowest types of animism and fetishism.

We must not, moreover, forget—as I have pointed out in my recent work—that a large body of the Hindus are unorthodox in respect of their interpretation of the leading doctrine of true Brühmanism.

Such unorthodox persons may be described as sectarians or dissenters. That is to say, they dissent from the orthodox pantheistic doctrine that all gods and men, all divine and human souls, and all material appearances are mere illusory manifestations of one impersonal spiritual Entity—called Atman or Purusha or Brahman—and they believe in one supreme personal god—either Siva or Vishuu or Krishna or Rāma—who is not liable (as orthodox Brāhmans say he is) to lose his personality by subjection to the universal law of dissolution and re-absorption into the one eternal impersonal Essence, but exists in a heaven of his own, to the bliss of which his worshippers are admitted 1.

And it must be borne in mind that these sectarians are very far from resting their belief on the Vedas, the Brahmanas, and Upanishads.

Their creed is based entirely on the Bhakti-sastras

¹ The heaven of Siva is Kailasa, of Vishing is Vaikumples, of Kejelman is Goloka.

—that is, on the Ramayana, Maha-bharata, and Puranas (especially on the Bhagavata-purana) and the Bhagavadgita, to the exclusion of the other scriptures of Hinduism.

Then again it must always be borne in mind that the terms 'orthodox' and 'unorthodox' have really little or no application to the great majority of the inhabitants of India, who in truth are wholly innocent of any theological opinions at all, and are far too apathetic to trouble themselves about any form of religion other than that which has belonged for contories to their families and to the localities in which they live, and far too ignorant and dull of intellect to be capable of inquiring for themselves whether that religion is likely to be true or false.

To classify the masses under any one definite denomination, either as Pantheists or Polytheists or Monotheists, or as simple idol-worshippers, or fetish-worshippers, would be wholly misleading.

Their faculties are so enfeebled by the debilitating effect of early marriages, and so decalened by the drudgery of daily toil and the dire necessity of keeping body and soul together, that they can scarcely be said to be capable of holding any definite theological creed at all.

It would be morer the truth to say that the religion of an ordinary Hindu consists in observing caste-customs, local usages, and family observances, in holding what may be called the Folk-legends of his neighbourhood, in propitiating evil spirits and in worshipping the image and superscription of the Empress of India, impressed on the current coin of the country.

As a rule such a man gives himself no uneasiness

whatever about his prospects of happiness or misery in the world to come.

He is quite content to commit his interests in a future life to the care and custody of the Brahmans; while, if he thinks about the nature of a Supreme Being at all, he assumes His benevolence and expects His good will as a matter of course.

What he really troubles himself about is the necessity for securing the present favour of the inhabitants of the unseen world, supposed to occupy the atmosphere everywhere around him—of the good and evil demons and spirits of the soil—generally represented by rude and grotesque images, and artfully identified by village priests and Brahmans with alleged forms of Vishnu or Siva.

It follows that the mind of the ordinary Hindu, though indifferent about all definite dogmatic religion, is steeped in the kind of religiousness best expressed by the word δεισιδοιμονία. He lives in perpetual dread of invisible beings who are thought to be exerting their mysterious influences above, below, around, in the immediate vicinity of his own dwelling. The very winds which sweep across his homestead are believed to swarm with spirits, who unless duly propitiated will blight the produce of his fields, or bring down upon him injury, disease, and death.

Then again, besides the orthodox and besides the sectorian Hindū and besides the great demon-worshipping, idolatrous, and superstitions majority, another class of the Indian community must also be taken into account—the class of rationalists and free-thinkers.

These have been common in India from the earliest times.

First came a class of conscientious doubters, who strove to solve the riddle of life by microscopic selfintrospection and sincere searchings after truth, and these did their best not to break with the Veda, Vedic revelation, and the authority of the Brahmans.

Earnestly and reverently such men applied themselves to the difficult task of trying to answer such questions as - What am I? Whence have I come? Whither am I going? How can I explain my consciousness of personal existence? Have I an immaterial spirit distinct from, and independent of, my material frame ! Of what nature is the world in which I find myself? Did an all-powerful Being create it out of nothing? or did it evolve itself out of an eternal protoplasmic germ? or did it come together by the combination of eternal atoms? or is it a mere illusion! If created by a Being of infinite wisdom and love, how can I account for the co-existence in it of good and evil, happiness and misery? Has the Creator form, or is He formless! Has He qualities and affections, or has He none !

It was in the effort to solve such insoluble enigmas by their own maided intuitions and in a manner not too subversive of traditional degma, that the systems of philosophy founded on the Upanishads originated.

These have been described in my book on Brālmanism. They were gradually excogitated by independent thinkers, who claimed to be Brāhmans or twice-born men, and nominally accepted the Veda with its Brāhmaṇas, while they covertly attacked it, or at least abstained from denouncing it as absolutely untrue. Such men facitly submitted to sacerdotal authority, though they really propounded a way of salvation based entirely on self-evolved knowledge, and quite independent of all Vedic sacrifices and sacrificing priests. The most noteworthy and orthodox of the systems propounded by them was the Vedānta¹, which, as I have shown, was simply spiritual Pantheism, and asserted that the one Spirit was the only real Being in the Universe.

But the origin of the more morthodox systems, which denied the authority of both the Veda and the Brahmans, must also be traced to the influence of the Upanishads. For it is underiable that a spirit of atheistic infidelity grew up in India almost pari passu with dogmatic Brahmanism, and has always been prevalent there. In fact it would be easy to show that periodical outbursts of unbelief and agnosticism have taken place in India very much in the same way as in Europe; but the tendency to run into extremes has always been greater on Indian soil and beneath the glow and glamour of Eastern skies. On the one side, a far more unthinking respect than in any other country has been paid to the authority of priests, who have declared their supernatural revelation to be the very breath of God, sacrificial rites to be the sole instruments of salvation,

¹ The Sankhya system, as I have shown, was closely connected with the Vedanta, though it recognized the aparate existence of countless individual Purushus or spirits instead of the one (called Arman). Both had much in common with fladdlism, though the latter substituted Swaya 'a void' for Purusha and Arman.

and themselves the sole mediators between earth and heaven; on the other, far greater latitude than in any other country has been conceded to infidels and atheists who have poured contempt on all sacerdotal dogmas, have denied all supernatural revelation, have made no secret of their disbelief in a personal God, and have maintained that even if a Supreme Being and a spiritual world exist they are unknowable by man and beyond the cognizance of his faculties.

We learn indeed from certain passages of the Veda (Rig-veda II. 12. 5; VIII. 100. 3, 4) that even in the Vedic age some denied the existence of the god Indra.

We know, too, that Yaska, the well-known Vedic commentator, who is believed to have lived before the grammarian Pāṇini (probably in the fourth century n. c.), found himself obliged to refute the sceptical arguments of Kautsa and others who pronounced the Veda a tissue of nonsense (Nirukta I. 15, 16).

Again, Manu—whose law-book, according to Dr. Bühler, was composed between the second century B. c. and the second A. D., and, in my opinion, possibly earlier—has the following remark directed against sceptics:—

'The twice-born man who depending on rationalistic treatises (heta-sästra) contemns the two roots of law (śruti and smriti), is to be excommunicated (vahishkāryaḥ) by the righteous as an atheist (nāstiku) and despiser of the Veda* (Manu II. 11).

Furthermore, the Mahā-bhārata, a poem which contains many ancient legends quite as ancient as those of early Buddhism, relates (Santi-parvan 1410, etc.) the story of the infidel Ćārvāka, who in the disguise of a mendicant Brahman uttered sentiments dangerously heretical.

This Carvaka was the supposed founder of a materialistic school of thought called Lokayata. Rejecting all instruments of knowledge (pramana) except perception by the senses (pratyaksha), he affirmed that the soul did not exist separately from the body, and that all the phenomena of the world were spontaneously produced.

The following abbreviation of a passage in the Sarvadarsana-sangraha; will give some idea of this school's infidel doctrines, the very name of which (Lokāyata, 'generally current in the world') is an evidence of the popularity they enjoyed:—

> No beaven exists, no final liberation, No soul, no other world, no rites of casts, No recompense for acts; let life be spont, In merriment*; let a man borrow money And live at ease and feast on melted butter. How can this body when reduced to dust Revisit earth? and if a ghost can page To other worlds, why does not strong affection For those he leaves behind attract him back? Oblations, funeral rites, and sacrifices Are a mere means of livelihood devised By ascerdotal cuming-nothing more, The three composers of the triple Veda Were regues, or evil spirits, or buffoons. The regitation of mysterious words And jabber of the priests is simple nonsense.

Then again, the continued prevalence of sceptical opinions may be shown by extracts from other portions

⁴ Freely translated by me in Indian Wisdom, p. 131, and literally translated by Prof. E. B. Cowell.

² Let us est and drink for to-morrow we die. I Cur. xv. 32.

of the later literature. For example, in the Ramayana (II, 108) the infidel Brahman Javali gives utterance to similar sentiments thus:—

'The books composed by theologians, in which menare enjoined to worship, give gifts, offer sacrifice, practise ansterities, abandon the world, are mere artifices to draw forth donations. Make up your mind that no one exists hereafter. Have regard only to what is visible and perceptible by the senses (pratyaksham). Cast everything beyond this behind your back.'

Furthermore, in a parallel passage from the Vishnupurana, it is declared that the great Deceiver, practising illusion, beguiled other demon-like beings to embrace many sorts of heresy; some reviling the Vedas, others the gods, others the ceremonial of sacrifice, and others the Brahmans¹. These were called Nastikas.

Such extracts prove that the worst forms of scepticism prevailed in both early and medieval times. But all phases and varieties of heretical thought were not equally offensive, and it would certainly be unfair and misleading to place Buddhism and Jainism on the same level with the reckless Pyrrhonism of the Čarvakas who had no code of morality.

And indeed it was for this very reason, that when Buildlaism and Jainism began to make their presence felt in the fifth century s, v, they became far more formidable than any other phase of scepticism.

Whether, however, Buddhism or Jainism be entitled to chronological precedence is still an open question,

¹ See Dr. John Muir's Article on Indian Materialists, Journal of Boyal Asiatic Society, N. S. xix, p. 302.

about which opinions may reasonably differ. Some hold that they were always quite distinct from each other, and were the products of inquiry originated by two independent thinkers, and many scholars now consider that the weight of evidence is in favour of Jainism being a little antecedent to Buddhism. Possibly the two systems resulted from the splitting up of one sect into two divisions, just as the two Brāhma-Samājes of Calcutta are the product of the Ādi-Samāj.

One point at least is certain, that notwithstanding much community of thought between Buddhism and Jainism, Buddhism ended in gaining for itself by far the more important position of the two. For although Jainism has shown more tenacity of life in India, and has lingered on there till the present day, it never gained any hold on the masses of the population, whereas its rival, Buddhism, radiating from a central point in Hindustan, spread itself first over the whole of India and then over nearly all Eastern Asia, and has played—as even its most hostile critics must admit—an important rôle in the history of the world.

To Buddhism, therefore, we have now to direct our attention, and at the very threshold of our inquiries we are confronted with this difficulty, that its great popularity and its wide diffusion among many peoples have made it most difficult to answer the question:—What is Buddhism? If it were possible to reply to the inquiry in one word, one might perhaps say that true Buddhism, theoretically stated, is Humanitarianism, meaning by that term something very like the gospel of humanity preached by the Positivist, whose doctrine is the eleva-

tion of man through man—that is, through human intellect, human intuitions, human teaching, human experiences, and 'accumulated human efforts—to the highest ideal of perfection; and yet something very different. For the Buddhist ideal differs toto colo from the Positivist's, and consists in the renunciation of all personal existence, even to the extinction of humanity itself. The Buddhist's perfection is destruction (p. 123).

But such a reply would have only reference to the truest and earliest form of Buddhism. It would cover a very minute portion of the vast area of a subject which, as it grew, became multiform, multilateral, and almost infinite in its ramifications.

Innumerable writers, indeed, during the past thirty years have been attracted by the great interest of the inquiry, and have vied with each other in their efforts to give a satisfactory account of a system whose developments have varied in every country; while lecturers, essayists, and the authors of magazine articles are constantly adding their contributions to the mass of floating ideas, and too often propagate crude and erroneous conceptions on a subject, the depths of which they have never thoroughly fathomed.

It is to be hoped that the annexation of Upper Burna, while giving an impulse to Pali and Buddhistic studies, may help to throw light on some obscure points.

Certainly Buddhism continues to be little understood by the great majority of educated persons. Nor can any misunderstanding on such a subject be matter of surprise, when writers of high character colour their descriptions of it from an examination of one part of the system only, without due regard to its other phases, and in this way either exalt it to a far higher position than it deserves, or depreciate it unfairly.

And Buddhism is a subject which must continue for a long time to present the student with a boundless field of investigation. No one can bring a proper capacity of mind to such a study, much less write about it clearly, who has not studied the original documents both in Pali and in Sanskrit, after a long course of preparation in the study of Vedism, Brahmanism, and Hinduism. It is a system which resembles these other forms of Indian religious thought in the great variety of its aspects. Starting from a very simple proposition, which can only be described as an exaggerated truism -the truism, I mean, that all life involves sorrow, and that all sorrow results from indulging desires which ought to be suppressed-it has branched out into a vast number of complicated and self-contradictory propositions and allegations. Its teaching has become both negative and positive, agnostic and gnostic. It passes from apparent atheism and materialism to theism, polytheism, and spiritualism. It is under one aspect mere pessimism; under another pure philanthropy; under another monastic communism; under another high morality; under another a variety of materialistic philosophy; under another simple demonology; under another a mere farrage of superstitions, including necromancy, witchcraft, idolatry, and fetishism. In some form or other it may be held with almost any religion, and embraces something from almost every creed. It is founded on philosophical Brahmanism, has much in common with Sankhya and Vedanta ideas, is closely connected with Vaishnavism. and in some of its phases with both Saivism and Saktism, and yet is, properly speaking, opposed to every one of these systems. It has in its moral code much common ground with Christianity, and in its mediceval and modern developments presents examples of forms, ceremonies, litanies, monastic communities, and hierarchical organizations, scarcely distinguishable from those of Roman Catholicism; and yet a greater contrast than that presented by the essential doctrines of Buddhism and of Christianity can scarcely be imagined. Strangest of all, Buddhism-with no God higher than the perfect man-has no pretensions to be called a religion in the true sense of the word, and is wholly destitute of the vivifying forces necessary to give vitality to the dry bones of its own morality; and yet it once existed as a real power over at least a third of the human race, and even at the present moment claims a vast number of adherents in Asia, and not a few sympathisers in Europe and America,

Evidently, then, any Orientalist who undertakes to give a clear and concise account of Buddhism in the compass of a few lectures, must find himself engaged in a very venturesome and difficult task.

Happily we are gaining acquaintance with the Southern or purest form of Buddhism through editions and translations of the texts of the Pāli Canon by Fausböll, Childers, Rhys Davids, Oblenberg, Morris, Trenckner, L. Feer, etc. We owe much, too, to the works of Turnour, Hardy, Clough, Gogerly, D'Alwis,

Burnouf, Lassen, Spiegel, Weber, Koeppen, Minayeff, Bigandet, Max Müller, Kern, Ed. Müller, E. Kuhn, Pischel, and others. These enable us to form a fair estimate of what Buddhism was in its early days.

But the case is different when we turn to the Northern Buddhist Scriptures, written generally in tolerably correct Sanskrit (with Tibetan translations). These continue to be little studied, notwithstanding the materials placed at our command and the good work done, first by the distinguished 'founder of the study of Buddhism,' Brian Hodgson, and by Burnouf, Wassiljew, Cowell, Senart, Kern, Beal, Foucaux, and others. In fact, the moment we pass from the Buddhism of India, Ceylon, Burma, and Siam, to that of Nepal, Kashmir, Tibet, Bhatan, Sikkim, China, Mongolia, Manchuria, Corea, and Japan, we seem to have entered a labyrinth, the clue of which is continually slipping from our hands.

Nor is it possible to classify the varying and often conflicting systems in these latter countries, under the one general title of Northern Buddhism.

For indeed the changes which religious systems undergo, even in countries adjacent to each other, not unfrequently amount to an entire reversal of their whole character. We may illustrate these changes by the variations of words derived from one and the same root in neighbouring countries. Take, for example, the German words selig, 'blessed,' and knabe, 'a boy,' which in England are represented by 'silly' and 'knave.'

A similar law appears to hold good in the case of religious ideas. Their whole character seems to change by a change of latitude and longitude. This is even true of Christianity. Can it be maintained, for instance, that the Christianity of modern Greece and Rome has much in common with early Christianity, and would any casual observer believe that the inhabitants of St. Petersburg, Berlin, Edinburgh, London, and Paris were followers of the same religion?

It cannot therefore surprise us if Buddhism developed into apparently contradictory systems in different countries and under varying climatic conditions. In no two countries did it preserve the same features. Even in India, the land of its birth, it had greatly changed during the first ten centuries of its prevalence. So much so that had it been possible for its founder to reappear upon earth in the fifth century after Christ, he would have failed to recognize his own child, and would have found that his own teaching had not escaped the operation of a law which experience proves to be universal and inevitable.

It is easy, therefore, to understand how difficult it will be to give any semblance of unity to my present subject. It will be impossible for me to treat as a consistent whole a system having a perpetually varying front and no settled form. I can only give a series of somewhat rough, though, I hope, trustworthy outlines, as far as possible in methodical succession.

And in the carrying out of such a design, the three objects that will at first naturally present themselves for delineation will be three which constitute the well-known triad of early Buddhism—that is to say, the Buddha himself, His Law and His Order of Monks.

Hence my aim will be, in the first place, to give such

a historical account of the Buddha and of his earliest teaching as may be gathered from his legendary biography, and from the most trustworthy parts of the Buddhist canonical scriptures. Secondly, I shall give a brief description of the origin and composition of those scriptures as containing the Buddha's 'Law' (Dharma); and thirdly, I shall endeavour to explain the early constitution of the Buddha's Order of Monks (Sangha). After treating of these three preliminary topics, I shall next describe the Law itself; that is, the philosophical doctrines of Buddhism, its code of morality and theory of perfection, terminating in Nirvana. Lastly, I shall attempt to trace out the confused outlines of theistic, mystical, and hierarchical Buddhism, as developed in Northern countries, adding an account of sacred objects and places, and contrasting the chief doctrines of Christianity. In regard to the Buddhism of Tibet, I shall chiefly base my explanations on Koeppen's great worka work never translated into English and now out of print. -as well as on my own researches during my travels through the parts of India bordering on that country.

And here I ought to state that my explanations and descriptions will, I fear, be wholly deficient in picturesqueness. My simple aim will be to convey clear and correct information in unembellished language; and in doing this, I shall often be compelled to expose myself to the reproach contained in the expressions, carvita-carvanam, 'chewing the chewed,' and pishta-peshanam, 'grinding the ground.' I shall constantly be obliged to tread on ground already well trodden.

To begin, then, with the Buddha himself.

LECTURE II.

The Buildha as a personal Teacher.

Ir is much to be regretted that among all the sacred books that constitute the Canon of the Southern Buddhists (see p. 61)—the only true Canon of Buddhism there is no trustworthy biography of its Founder.

For Buddhism is nothing without Buddha, just as Zoroastrianism is nothing without Zoroaster, Confucianism nothing without Confucius, Muhammadanism nothing without Muhammad, and I may add with all reverence, Christianity nothing without Christ.

Indeed, no religion or religious system which has not emanated from some one heroic central personality, or in other words, which has not had a founder whose strongly marked personal character constituted the very life and soul of his teaching and the chief factor in its effectiveness, has ever had any chance of achieving world-wide acceptance, or ever spread far beyond the place of its origin.

Hence the barest outline of primitive Buddhism must be incomplete without some sketch of the life and character of Gautama Buddha himself. Yet it is difficult to find any sure basis of fact on which we may construct a fairly credible biography.

In all likelihood legendary histories of the Founder of

Buddhism were current in Nepal and Tibet in the early centuries of our era; but unhappily his too enthusiastic and imaginative admirers have thought it right to testify their admiration by interweaving with the probable facts of Gautama Buddha's life, fables so extravagant that some modern critical scholars have despaired of attempting to sift truth from fiction, and have even gone to the extreme of doubting that Gautama Buddha ever lived at all.

To believe nothing that has been recorded about him, is as unreasonable as to accept with unquestioning faith all the miraculous circumstances which are made to encircle him as with a halo of divine glory.

We must bear in mind that when Gautama Buddha lived—about the fifth century B.c.—the art of writing was not common in India? We may point out, too, that in all countries, European as well as Asiatic—notably in Greece (witness, for example, the familiar instance of Socrates)—men have thought more of preserving the sayings of their teachers than of recording the facts of their lives.

And we must not forget that in India—where the imaginative faculties have always been too active, and anything like real history is unknown—any plain matter-of-fact biography of the most heroic personage would have few charms for any one, and little chance of gaining acceptance anywhere.

Hence it has happened that the ballads (gatha) and legends current about Gautama among Northern

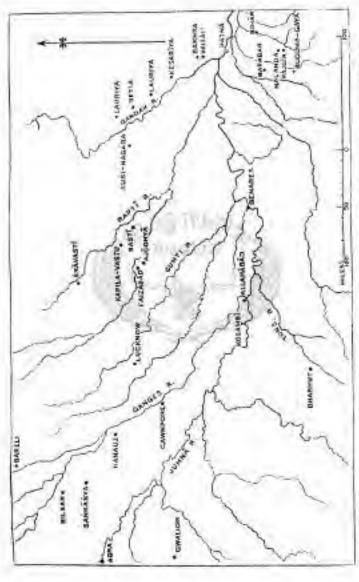
¹ It is difficult to accept the theory of those who maintain that writing had not been invented.

Buddhists, bristle with the wildest fancies and the most absurd exaggerations.

Yet it is not impossible to detect a few scattered historical facts beneath stories, however childish, and legends, however extravagant. We shall not at least be far wrong, if, in attempting an outline of the Buddha's life, we begin by asserting that intense individuality, fervid carnestness, and severe simplicity of character, combined with singular beauty of countenance, calm dignity of bearing, and above all, almost superhuman persuasiveness of speech, were conspicuous in the great Teacher.

The earliest authorities, however, never claim for him anything extraordinary or superhuman in regard to external form. It was only in later times that Bud dhist writers pandered to the superstitions of the people, by describing the Buddha as possessed of various miraculous characteristics of mind and body. He is said to have been of immense stature—according to some, eighteen feet high—and to have had on his body thirty-two chief auspicious marks (mahā-vyanjana), regarded as indications of a Supreme Lord and Universal Ruler, eighty secondary marks (anu-vyanjana), besides one hundred and eight symbols on the sole of each foot, and a halo extending for six feet round his person.

All that can be said with any degree of probability about his personal appearance is, that he was endowed with certain qualities, which acted like a spell, or with a kind of irresistible magnetism, on his hearers. These must have formed, so to speak, the foundation-stone on which the superstructure of his vast influence rested.



SACRED LAND OF REDURENT, AND REENE OF THE BEHARDAY PRESENTED AND PRESENCES FOR THIRT-TIME.

Unhappily, no authoritative Buddhist scripture gives any trustworthy clue to the exact year of the Buddha's birth. The traditions which refer back his death to a date corresponding to 543 B.C. are now rejected by modern European scholars. Nor can we as yet accept as infallible the results of the latest researches, which making use of various other data, such as the inscriptions on coins, rocks, and columns, place his death more than a century later. We shall not, however, be far wrong if we assert that he was born about the year 500 B.C. at Kapila-vastu (now Bhūila)—a town situated about half-way between Basti and Ajūdhyā (Ayodhyā) in the territory of Kosala (the modern Oudh, see pp. 29, 48), about sixty miles from its capital city Śrāvasti (a favourite residence of Gautama), and about one hundred miles north-west of Benares, and near the borders of the kingdom of Magadha (now Behar).

His father, named Suddhodana, was a land-owner of the tribe of the Sākyas (a name possibly connected with the Sanskrit root Sak, 'to be powerful'), whose territory in the Gorakh-pur district extended from the lower Nepalese mountains to the river Rapti in Oudh. It has been conjectured that the Sākyas may have been originally a non-Āryan tribe, connected perhaps with certain nomad immigrants from Tibet or Northern Asia, who may have immigrated into India at various periods; but even if this could be proved, it would have to be admitted that the Sākyas had become Āryanized. It is said that the chief families claimed to be Rājputs, tracing back their origin to Ikshvāku, the first of the Solar race. It appears, too, that though belonging to the Kshatriya caste, they were agriculturists, and mainly engaged in the cultivation of rice. It is also asserted that Sākya families were in the habit of taking the name of the family of the Brahmans who were their spiritual guides and performed religious offices for them, and that the family of Saddho-lam took the name Gautama, that is, descendant of the sage Gotama. It does not, however, seem necessary to account for the name in this manner. It was an auspicious name, which in ancient times might have been given to the child of any great had-owner as a proof of orthodoxy, or with the view, perhaps, of pleasing the Brāhmans and securing their prayers and good wishes on its behalf.

The father of the Founder of Buddhism was simply a chief of the Säkya tribe—certainly not a king in our sense of the term—but rather a great Zomindar or landlord, whose territory was not so large in area as Yorkshire. His name Suddhodana, 'one possessed of pure rice,' probably indicated the occupation and ordinary food of the peasantry inhabiting the district belonging to him and subject to his authority. Those who have travelled much in India must often have met great land-owners of the Suddhodana type—men to whom the title Mahā-raja is given much as 'Lord' is to our aristocracy. For example, the Mahā-raja of Darbhanga is probably a more important personage than Gautama's father ever was, and his territory larger than that of Suddhodana ever was.

The name Gautama (in Pāli spelt Gotama) was the personal name corresponding to that given to all children at the name-giving ceremony. It was not till

his supposed attainment of perfect wisdom that Gautama assumed the title of Buddha, or 'the enlightened one.' But from that time forward this became his recognized title. Every other name besides Gautama (or Gotama), and every other title except Buddha (or together, Gautama Buddha), are simply epithets; for example, Sākya-muni, 'sage of the tribe of the Sākyas;' Sakya-sinha, 'lion of the Sakyas; 'Sramana (Samano), 'the ascetic;' Siddhartha, 'one who has fulfilled the object (of his coming): Sugata, 'whose coming is auspicious;' Tathagata, 'who comes and goes as his predecessors; Bhagavaa (Bhagava), the blessed lord; Sasta (Sattha), 'the Teacher;' Asarana-sarana, 'Refuge of the refugeless; 'Adityn-bandhu, 'Kinsman of the Sun; Jina, 'conqueror; Maha-vira, 'great hero; 'Mahapurusha, 'great man ;' Cakravarti, 'nniversal monarch.' Devout Buddhists call him 'Lord of the World,' 'the Lord, 'World-honoured One,' 'King of the Law,' 'the Jewel,' etc.; and prefer to use the titles rather than the personal name Gautama, which is thought too familiar,

The names of previous Buddhas, supposed to have existed in previous ages, are given at p. 136.

Little of the story of the miraculous birth of Buddha is worthy of repetition. Since, however, a white elephant is reckoned among the sacred objects of Buddhism, as something rare and precious, it is worth while mentioning the fable, that when the time came for the Bodhi-sattva to leave the Tushita heaven (p. 120) and be born on earth as Gautama Buddha, be descended into the womb of his mother in the form of a white elephant. He was born under a Sal tree and the god Brahmā

received him from his mother's side. His mother, Māyā, died seven days afterwards, and the infant was committed to her sister (Makā-prajāpatī), a second wife of Suddhodana.

It is not related of Gautama that, as he grew up, any efforts were made to imbue him with sacred learning; though, as a Kshatriya, he was privileged to receive instruction in certain portions of the Veda.

Nor are we told of him that as a Kshatriya he was trained to the profession of a soldier. It is more probable, that his love of contemplation developed itself very early, and that from a desire to humour this not uncommon Oriental propensity, he was allowed to pass most of his time in the open air.

There is a well-known legend, which relates how Gautama's relations came in a body to his father and complained that the youtle's deficiency in martial and athletic exercises would incapacitate him, on reaching manhood, from taking part in warlike expeditions. This might be reckoned among the few trustworthy lostorical incidents, were the story not marred by the legendary addition, that on a day of trial being fixed, the youth, without any previous practice, and of course to the surprise of all present, proved his superiority in archery and in 'the twelve arts.'

One statement may certainly be accepted without much qualification. It is said that Gantama was made to marry early, according to the universal custom throughout India in the present day. No son of any respectable person in modern times could remain unmarried at the age of sixteen or seventeen, without, so to speak, tarnishing the family escutcheon, and exposing the youth himself to a serious social stigma, likely to cling to him in after-life. In ancient times marriage was equally universal, and there is no reason to suppose that among Kshatriyas it was delayed to a much later period of life.

No doubt, therefore, the future Buddha had at least one wife (whose name was Yasodharā, though often called Rāhula-mātā, 'Rāhula's mother'), and probably at least one son, named Rāhula. It is said that this son was not born till his father was twenty-nine years of age, or not till the time when a sense of the vanity of all human aims, and a resolution to abundon all worldly ties, and a longing to enter upon a monastic life had begun to take possession of his father's mind.

The story of the four visions, which led to his final renunciation of the world, is profusely overlaid with fanciful hyperbole, but, however slight the basis of fact on which it may reasonably be held to rest, it is too picturesque and interesting to be passed over without notice. I therefore here abridge the account given in Mr. Beal's translation of the Chinese version of the Abhinishkramana-sutm, varying (for the sake of brevity) the phraseology, but retaining the expression 'prince':—

One day the prince Gautama resolved to visit the gardens in the neighbourhood of his father's city, desiring to examine the beautiful trees and flowers.

Then there appeared before his eyes in one of the streets the form of a decrepid old man, his skin shrivelled, his head bald, his teeth gone, his body infirm and bent. A staff supported his tottering limbs, as he stood right across the path of the prince's advanc-

ing chariot.

Seeing this aged person, Siddhartha inquired of his charioteer:—'What human form is this, so miserable and so distressing, the like of which I have never seen before?'

The charioteer replied:- 'This is what is called an

old man."

The prince again inquired :—'And what is the exact meaning of this expression "old"?'

The charioteer answered:—'Old age implies the loss of bodily power, decay of the vital functions, and failure of mind and memory. This poor man before you is old and approaching his end.'

Then asked the prince :- 'Is this law universal?'

'Yes,' he replied, 'this is the common lot of all living creatures. All that is born must die.'

Soon afterwards another strange sight presented itself—a sick man, worn by disease and suffering, pale and miserable, scarcely able to draw his breath, was seen tottering on the road.

Then the prince inquired of his charioteer :—'Who is this unhappy being?'

The charioteer replied;—'This is a sick man, and such sickness is common to all.'

Soon afterwards there passed before them a corpse, borne on a bier.

Then asked the prince:—'Who is this borne onwards on his bed, covered with strangely-coloured garments, surrounded by people weeping and lamenting?'

'This,' replied the charioteer, 'is called a dead body; he has ended his life; he has no further beauty of form, and no desires of any kind; he is one with the stones and the felled tree; he is like a ruined wall, or fallen leaf; no more shall he see his father or mother, brother or sister, or other relatives; his body is dead, and your body also must come to this."

Next day on his going out by a different gate there appeared advancing with measured steps a man with a shaven crown, and monk's robe—his right shoulder bare, a religious staff in his right hand, and a mendicant's alms-bowl in his left.

'Who is this,' the prince inquired, 'proceeding with slow and dignified steps, looking neither to the right hand nor to the left, absorbed in thought, with shaven head and garments of reddish colour t'

'This man,' said the charioteer, 'devotes himself to charity, and restrains his appetites and his bodily desires. He hurts nobody, but does good to all, and is full of sympathy for all.'

Then the prince asked the man himself to give an account of his own condition.

He answered:—'I am called a homeless ascetic; I have forsaken the world, relatives, and friends; I seek deliverance for myself and desire the salvation of all creatures, and I do harm to none.'

After hearing these words, the prince went to his father and said, 'I wish to become a wandering ascetic (parivrājika) and to seek Nirvāṇa; all worldly things, O king! are changeable and transitory.'

Such is an epitome of the legendary story of the four visionary appearances, so called because they are supposed to have been divine visions or appearances,

miraculously produced. The remainder of the legendary life of Gautama Buddha is interesting and here and there not without some historical value, and portions of it I now add in an abridged form.

Very shortly after the occurrences just described, Gautama receives intelligence of the birth of his son This is the first momentous crisis of his life, and Gantama remains for a long time lest in profound thought. He sees in his child the strongest of all fetters, binding him to family and home. But his mind is made up. He must fly at once, or be for ever held in bondage. Around him gather the beautiful women of his father's household, striving by their blandishments to divert him from his purpose; but in vain. He seeks the chamber of his wife, and finds her asleep with her hand on the head of his infant son. He longs for a last embrace; but fearing to arouse her suspicious hurries away. Outside, his favourite horse is waiting to aid his flight. He accomplishes the first stage of what Buddhists call with pride the Mahabhinishkramana, 'the great going forth from home; but not without overcoming other still more formidable trials. For Mara, the evil deity who tempts men to include their possions (see p. 120), makes himself visible, and promises the prince all the glories of empire if he will return to the pleasures of worldly life.

Finding all his allurements disregarded, Mara alters his method of attack; he fills the air with mighty thunderings, and creates on the road before the youthful fugitive's eyes apparitions of torrents, lofty mountains, and blazing conflagrations. But nothing alarms or deters him. 'I would rather,' he exclaims, 'be torn to pieces limb by limb, or be burnt in a fiery furnace, or be ground to pieces by a falling mountain than forego my fixed purpose for one single instant.'

Arrived at a safe distance from his father's territory, he exchanges garments with a passing beggar, cuts off his own hair with a sword, and assumes the outward aspect and character of a wandering ascetic. The hair does not fall to the ground but is taken up to the Trayastripsas heaven (p. 120), and worshipped by the gods.

His first halting-place is Bāja-griba (now Rāj-gir), the chief city of Magadha, which, with Kosala (Oudh, pp. 21, 48), afterwards became the boly land of Buddhism. There he attaches himself as a disciple to two Brāhmans named Āļāra (in Sanskrit Ārāḍa, with epithet Kālāpa or Kālāma) and Uddaka (Udraka, also written Rudraka, and called Rāma-putta, Mahā-vagga I. 6. 3), who imbue him with their own philosophical tenets and theory of salvation. Sufficient evidence exists to warrant a belief in this part of the story.

No place in India abounds in more interesting Buddhistic remains than Rāja-griha (about 40 miles south-east of Patna), proving that it was one of the most sacred places of Buddhism, consecrated by some of its most cherished associations. Its Pāli name is Rāja-gaha. It may be conjectured that the connexion between the metaphysics of Buddhism and those of Brāhmanism was due to Gautama's intercourse with the Brāhmans of this district, and to the ideas he thus imbibed at the earliest stage of his career.

But to resume our story. Gautama fails to find in

Brālmanical philosophy that rest and peace for which his soul was craving when he left his home.

Still there was another way of emancipation and union with the Universal Soul, taught by the Brahmans. This was the way of Tapas¹, or self-inflicted bodily pain and austerity.

From the earliest times a favourite doctrine of Brahmanism has been, that self-inflicted bodily suffering is before all things efficacious for the accumulation of religious merit, for the acquirement of supernatural powers, and for the spirit's release from the bondage of transmigration and its re-absorption into the One Universal Spirit.

Among other forms of self-inflicted pain, religious devotees (Tapasvis) sometimes went through the process of sitting all day long unmoved during the hottest months on a prepared platform or plot of ground, surrounded by five fires, or by four blazing fires, with the burning sun above their heads as a fifth *. Even gods (and notably Siva) are described as mortifying themselves by bodily austerities (topas), so as not to be outdone by men; for according to the theory of Hindūism, the gods themselves might be supplanted and even ousted from their rank and position as

¹ Tapes is a Sanskrit word, derived from the root top, 'to burn, torment.' It is connected with Lat, topes, thech Siere, which last originally denoted. 'fo burn,' not 'to bury' deal bodies. Tapes ought not to be translated by 'penance,' unless that word is restricted to the sense poena, 'pain.'

² Such men are called Pañón-tapas (Manu VI, 23). A good reprebentation of this form of Tapas may be seen in the Museum of the Indian Institute, Oxford.

divinities by the omnipotence acquirable by human devotees through a protracted endurance of severe bodily suffering.

Hence we are not surprised to find it recorded of Gautama Buddha, that seeking in vain for rest in the teaching of Brāhmanical philosophy, and eager to try the effect of a course of self-mortification, he wandered forth from Raja-griha to a wood in the district of Gayā, called Uruvilvā (or Uruvelā).

There, in company with five other ascetics, he began his celebrated sevenaial fast. Sitting down with his legs folded under him on a raised seat in a place unsheltered from sun, wind, rain, dew, and cold, he gradually reduced his daily allowance of food to a single grain of rice. Then holding his breath, he harassed and macerated his body, but all in vain. No peace of mind came, and no divine enlightenment. He became convinced of his own folly in resorting to bodily austerity as a means of attaining supreme enlightenment, and delivering himself from the evils and sufferings of life.

Rousing himself, as if from a troubled dream, he took food and nourishment in a natural way, thereby incurring the temporary disapproval of his five companions in self-mortification. Then, when sufficiently refreshed, he moved away to another spot in the same district. There, under the shelter of a sacred fig-tree (Aévattha, Ficus religiosa, known as the Pippala or Pipal), in a village, afterwards called Buddha-Gaya, he gave himself up to higher and higher forms of meditation (Jhāna - Dhyāna). In this he merely conformed

to the Hindu Yoga,—a method of attaining mystic union with the Deity, which although not then formulated into a system, was already in vogue among the Brahmans. There can be little doubt that the Dharapa, Dhyana (see p. 209), and Samadhi of the Yoga were resorted to, even in Gantama's time, as a means for the attainment of perfect spiritual illumination, as well as of final absorption in the Deity.

In Mann VI, 72 it is said:— Let him purge himself from all taints (doshān) by suppression of breath, from sin by restraints of thought (dhāranābhih), from sensual attachments by control, and from unspiritual qualities by meditation (dhyānem).

In the later work called Bhagavad-gitā (see p. 95 of this volume) it is declared:—'holding his body, head, and neck quite immovable, seated on a firm seat in a pure spot with Kusa grass around, the devotee (Yogi) should look only at the tip of his nose, and should meditate on the Supreme Being' (VI. 11, 12). Further on he is directed to meditate so profoundly as to think about nothing whatever (VI. 25).

The very Gayatri or ancient Vedic prayer (Rig-veda III. 62, to, see p. 78 of this volume)—which is to Hindus what the Lord's Prayer is to Christians, and is still repeated by millions of our Indian fellow-subjects at their daily devotions—was originally an act of meditation, performed with the very object Gautama had in view—supreme enlightenment of mind:—'Let us meditate (Dhimahi, root dhyai) on the excellent glory of the divine vivifying Sun, may be enlighten our understandings.' Even the selection of a seat under

an Asvattha tree was in keeping with Brahmanical ideas (see 'Brahmanism and Hindúism,' p. 335).

The first result, however, of his engaging in abstract meditation, was that he seemed to himself to be as far as ever from the emancipation which was the one aim of his great renunciation. Why not then return to the world? Why not indulge again in the pleasures of sense? Why not go back to home, wife, and child? Thoughts of this kind passed through his mind, while all his old affections and feelings seemed to revive with tenfold intensity. Then on one particular night, during this mental struggle, Mara, the Destroyer and personification of carnal desire, seized his apportunity. The spirit of evil had bided his time; had waited to assail the sage at the right moment, when protracted self-mortification had done its work—when with exhausted strength he had little power of resistance.

It is certainly remarkable that a great struggle between good and evil, right and wrong, truth and error, knowledge and ignorance, light and darkness, is recognized in all religious systems, however false. (See a notable allusion to this in Sankara's Commentary to Chandogya Upanishad, p. 26, IL 2-8.)

The legendary description of the Buddha's temptation, and of the assault made upon him by Māra (the deadly spirit of sensuous desire'), and by all his troop of attendants, is so interesting and curious, notwithstanding its extravagance, that I here abridge it:—

Fiends and demons swarmed about him in the form

According to Dr. Oldenberg, the Mrityu of the Karlaquanishad.

of awful monsters, furies, vampires, hobgoblins, armed to the teeth with every implement of destruction. Their million faces were frightful to behold, their limbs encircled by myriads of scrpeats, their heads enveloped in a blaze of fire. They surrounded the saint and assailed him in a thousand different ways. Missiles of all kinds were hurbel against him; poison and fire were showered over him—but the paison changed into flowers, the fire formed a halo round his head.

The buffled evil one now shifted his ground. He summoned his sixteen enchanting daughters, and sent them to display their charms in the presence of the youthful saint. But the resolute young ascetic was not to be lured by their wiles. He remained calm and impassive, and with a stern face rebuked the maidens for their boldness, foreing them to retire discomfited and disgraced.

Other forms of temptation followed, and the debilitated ascetic's strength seemed to be giving way. But this was merely the crisis. After rising to higher and higher stages of abstract meditation at the end of a long night he shook off his foe. The victory was won, and the light of true knowledge broke upon his mind. A legend relates that in the first night-watch he gained a knowledge of all his previous existences; in the second—of all present states of being; in the third—of the chain of causes and effects (p. 102); and at the dawn of day he knew all things.

The dawn on which this remarkable struggle terminated was the birthday of Buddhism. Gautama was at that time about thirty-five years of age. It was then, and not till then, that his Bodhi-sattvaship (see p. 135) ended and he gained a right to the title Buddha, 'the Enlightened.' No wonder that the tree under which he sat became celebrated as 'the tree of knowledge and enlightenment.' It is remarkable, too, that just as the night on which the Buddha attained perfect enlightenment is the most sacred night with Buddhists, so the Bodhi-tree (in familiar language, Bo-tree) is their most sacred symbol—a symbol as dear to Buddhists as the Cross is to Christians.

And what was this true knowledge, evolved out of a mind sublimated by intense meditation?

This is, perhaps, the strangest point of all in this strange story. It was after all a mere partial one-sided truth—the outcome of a single line of thought, dwelt upon with morbid intensity, to the exclusion of every other line of thought which might have modified and balanced it. It was an ultra-pessimistic view of the miseries of life, and a determination to ignore all its counterbalancing joys. It was the doctrine that this present life is only one link in a chain of countless transmigrations—that existence of all kinds involves suffering, and that such suffering can only be got rid of by self-restraint and the extinction of desires, especially of the desire for continuity of personal existence.

For let it be made clear at the outset, that whatever may be said of the Christian-like self-renunciation enjoined by the Buddhist code of morality, the only self it aims at renouncing is the self of personality, and the chief self-love it deprecates is the self-love which consists in craving for continuous individual life. To those who have never travelled or resided much in the East, indedgence in such a morbid form of pessimism, under glowing skies and amid bright surroundings, may seem almost an impossibility. But those who know India by personal experience are aware that its climate is not combeive to optimistic views of life, and that even in the present day men of the Buddha type, who seek in various ways to impress their pessimistic theories of existence on their fellow-men, are not uncommon.

In the course of my travels I frequently met ascetics who had given up family and friends, and were leading a life of morose seclusion, and pretended meditation, undergoing long courses of bodily mortification. Nay, I have even seen men who, to prove their atter contempt for the pleasures of worldly existence, and to render themselves fit for the extinction of all personality by absorption into the Universal Soul, have sat in one posture, or held up one arm for years, or allowed themselves no bed but a bed of spikes, no shelter but the foliage of trees. Gautama's course of protracted cogitation therefore had in it nothing peculiar or original.

Nor need we doubt that certain historical facts underlie the legendary narrative. We cannot admit with the learned Securit and Kern that the life of Gautama was based on a mere solar myth. To us it is more difficult not to believe than to believe that there lived in the fifth century B.c. the youthful son of a petty Rāja or land-owner in Oudh, distinguished from ordinary

In the same way the Cistercian monks of Fountain's Abbey lived under certain trees while the Abbey was building.

men by many remarkable qualities of mind and body—
notably by a thoughtful and contemplative disposition;
that he became impressed with a sense of the vanity of
all earthly aims, and of the suffering caused by disease
and death; that he often said to himself, 'Life is but a
troubled dream, an incubus, a nightmare,' or, like the
Jewish sage of old, 'All the days of man are sorrow,'
'Man walketh in a vain shadow and disquieteth himself
in vain;' and that like many other of the world's philosophers, instead of acquiescing in the state of things
around him, and striving to make the best of them, or
to improve them, he took refuge from the troubles of
life in abandoning all its ties, renouncing all its joys,
and suppressing all its affections and desires.

And again, it is more difficult not to believe than to believe that in such a man introspection and abstinence, protracted for many years, induced a condition of mind favourable to ecstatic visions, which were easily mistaken for flashes of inner enlightenment.

We know, indeed, that eleven centuries later another great thinker arose among the Semitic races in Western Asia, who went through the same kind of mental struggle, and that Muhammad, like Gautama, having by his long fasts and austerities brought himself into a highly wrought condition of the nervous system, became a fanatical believer in the reality of his own delusions and in his own divine commission as a teacher.

But the parallel between the Buddha and Muhammad cannot be carried on much further. And indeed, in point of fact, no two characters could be more different. For the Buddha never claimed to be the channel of a supernatural revelation; never represented the knowledge that burst on his mind as springing from any but
an internal source; never taught that a divine force
operating from without compelled him to communicate
that knowledge to mankind; never dreamed of propagating that knowledge to others by compulsion, much
less by the sword. On the contrary, he always maintained that the only revelation he had received was an
illimination from within—due entirely to his own
intuitions, assisted by his reasoning powers and by severe
purgatorial discipline protracted through countless previous births in every variety of badily form.

But how did this internal self-enlightenment!—the great distinguishing feature of Buddhism—first find expression! It is said that the first words uttered by the Buddha at the momentons crisis when true knowledge burst upon him, were to the following effect:—

Through countless births have I wandered, seeking but not discovering (anibbisan) the maker of this my mortal dwelling-house (gala-karaka), and still again and again have birth and life and pain returned. But now at length art thou discovered, thou builder of this house (of flesh). No longer shalt thou rear a house for me. Rafters and beams are shattered and with destruction of Desire (Tauhā) deliverance from repeated life is gained at last (Dhamma-pada 153, 154, Sumangala 46).

¹ The Blagavad-gită (V. z8) asserts:— The sage (Yogi) who is internally happy, internally at peace, and internally illumined, attains extinction in Brahma. This is pure Buddhism if we substitute Cessation of individual existence for Brahma.

Contrast with these first utterances of Gautama Buddha the first words of Jesus Christ:—

'Wist ye not that I must be about My Father's business?' (St. Luke ii. 49.)

The Buddha's first exclamations, as well as the account of his subsequent sayings and doings, are the more worthy of credit as taken from the Southern Canon.

The Mahā-vagga (I. 1) tells us that after attaining complete intelligence, the Buddha sat cross-legged on the ground under the Buddha-tree for seven days, absorbed in meditation and enjoying the bliss of enlightenment. At the end of that period, during the first three watches of the night, he fixed his mind on the causes of existence. Then having thought out the law of causation (p. 102), he exclaimed: When the laws of being become manifest to the carnest thinker, his doubts vanish, and, like the Sun, he dispels the hosts of Māra,

Next he meditated for another seven days under a banyan tree, called the tree of goat-herds (aja-pāla). It was there that a haughty Brāhman accosted him with the question, 'Who is a true Brāhman?' and was told, 'One free from evil and pride; self-restrained, learned, and pure.'

Then he meditated under another tree for a third period of seven days. There the scrpent (Naga) Mućalinda (or Mućilinda) coiled his body round the Buddha, and formed a canopy to protect him from the raging of a storm—this being one of the trials he had to go through. When it was over the Buddha exclaimed, 'Happy is the seclusion of the satisfied man (tushta) who has learned and seen the truth.' A fourth period of meditation was passed under the tree Rajayatana, making four times seven days. May not these symbolize the four stages of meditation (p. 209)? Later legends, however, reckon seven times seven days.

During the whole of the interval between the first acquisition of knowledge and the setting forth to proclaim it, the Buddha fasted, being too elated to seek food, and only once receiving it from two merchants, named Tapussa (Trapusha) and Bhallika. These became his first lay-reverers (p. 89) by repeating the double formula of reverence for the Buddha and for his doctrine (the Sangha not being then instituted, Maha-v° I. 4. 5). A later legend relates that they received in return eight of his hairs which they preserved as relics.

In connexion with the legend of a forty-nine days' fast, I may mention that an ancient carving of Gautama was pointed out to me at Buddha-Gaya, which represents him as holding a bowl of rice-milk divided into fortynine portions, one for each day.

With these legends we may contrast the simple Gospel narrative of Christ's forty days' fast in the wilderness.

The Buddha's first resolution to come forth from his seclusion and proclaim his gospel to mankind is of course a great epoch with all Buddhists.

And here it should be observed, that, strictly, according to Gautama's own teaching he ought to have ceased from all action on arriving at perfect enlightenment. For had he not attained the great object of his ambition—the end of all his struggles—the goal of all his efforts—carried on through hundreds of existences? He had, therefore, no more lives to lead, no more misery to

FIRST TEACHING AT BENARES.

undergo. In short he had achieved the summum bonum of all true Buddhists—the extinction of the fires of passions and desires—and had only to enjoy the well-earned peace (nirvriti) of complete Nirvāņa. Yet the love of his fellow-men impelled him to action (pravritti). In fact it was characteristic of a supreme Buddha that he should belie, by his own activity and compassionate feelings, the utter apathy and indifference to which his own doctrines logically led (p. 128).

But he did not carry out his benevolent design without going through another course of temptation (which
it is usual to compare with the temptation of Christ).
Evil thoughts arcse in his mind, and these were
suggested, according to later legends, by Main (p. 33).
thus:—'With great pains, blessed one, hast thou acquired this doctrine (dharma). Why proclaim it?
Beings lost in desires and lusts will not understand it.
Remain in quietude. Enjoy Nirvāṇa' (Mahā-v° I. 5. 3).

To counteract these malevolent suggestions, the god Brahmā Sahāmpati (Pāli Sahāmpati, p. 210) presented himself and exclaimed:—'Arise, O spotless one, open the gate of Nirvāņa. Arise, look down on the world lost in suffering. Arise, wander forth, preach the doctrine.'

First the Buddha thought of his two teachers, Alara and Uddaka (p. 29), but found they were dead. Next he thought of the five ascetics whom he had offended by his abandonment of the method of gaining true knowledge through painful austerities. They were at that time prosecuting their bodily mortifications at Benares in the Deer-park called Isipatana. It was only natural that the Buddha should think of wouding

his way in the first instance to Benares, even if special considerations had not drawn him there; for that city was the great centre of Eastern thought and life, the Indian Athens, where all peculiar doctrines were most likely to gain a hearing.

On his way thither, Upaka, a member of the Ajivaka sect of naked ascetics, met him and inquired why his countenance was so height (parisuddha)? He replied, 'I am the all-subther, the all-wise, the stainless, the highest teacher, the conqueror (p. 135); I go to Benares to dissipate the world's darkness' (Mahā-vagga I, 6, 7).

The five ascetics (Kaundinya = Kondañño, Aśvajit = Assaji, Vāshpa, Mahānāma, and Bhadrika) were soon converted by his words, and by merely repeating the triple formula were admitted at once to his Order of monks. They constituted, with Gautama, the first six members of the Sangha, or fraternity of men seeking release from the misery of existence by combitic monasticism.

And of what nature were Gautama Buddha's first didactic utterances? His first sermon, delivered in the Deer-park at Benares, is held in as much reverence by Buddhists as the first words of Christiane by Christians. It is called Dhamma-čakka-ppavattana-sutta, or in Sauskrit Dhamma-čakka-pravartuma-sūtra, 'the discourse which set in motion the wheel of the law,' or 'of the universal dominance of the true belief.'

The following is the substance of it, as given in the Mahā-vagga (I. 6. 17). It is important to note that the Buddha spoke in the vernacular of Magadha (now called Pah), and not to men generally, but to the first five would-be members of his Order of monks:—

There are two extremes (anta), O mouks (Bhikkhus), to be avoided by one who has given up the world—a life devoted to sensual pleasures (kāma), which is degrading, common, vulgar, ignoble, profitless; and a life given to self-mortification (ātma-klamatha)—painful, ignoble, profitless. There is a middle path, avoiding both extremes—the noble eightfold path discovered by the Buddha (Tathāgata)—which leads to insight, to wisdom, to quietude (upāšama), to knowledge, to perfect enlightenment (sambodhi), to final extinction of desire and suffering (Nirvāṇa).

So far there is nothing very explicit in the discourse. Doubtless such precepts as 'virtue is a mean' and that 'medio totissimus ibis' are useful, though trite, troths; but the difficulty is to prove that the Buddha's eightfold path is really a middle course of the kind described; for the most fanatical enthusiasts will always regard their own creed, however extravagant, as moderate.

The Buddha, therefore, goes on to propound what he calls the four noble truths (ariya-saccani = ārya-satyāni), which are the key to his whole doctrine. They may be stated thus:—

All existence—that is, existence in any form, whether on earth or in heavenly spheres—necessarily involves pain and suffering (dukkha).
 All suffering is caused by lust (rāga) or craving or desire (tanhā = trishnā, 'thirst') of three kindš—for sensual pleasure (kāma), for wealth (vibhava), and for existence (bhava).
 Cessation of suffering is simultaneous with extinction of lust, craving, and desire (p. 139).
 Extinction of lust, craving, and desire, and cessation of suffering are

accomplished by perseverance in the noble eightfold path (ariyo ntthangiko maggo), viz. right belief or views (sammā ditthi), right resolve (sankappo), right speech, right work (kammanto), right livelihood (ājīvo), right exercise or training (vāyāmo = vyāyāma), right mindfulness (sati, p. 50), right mental concentration (samādhi).

And how is all life mere suffering (I. 6. 19) !-

'Birth is suffering. Decay in suffering. Illness is suffering. Death is suffering. Association with (samprayogo) objects we bute is suffering. Separation from objects we have in suffering. Not to obtain what we desire is suffering. Clinging (upidana) to the five elements (p. 109) of existence is suffering. Complete reseation of thirst (tapha) and desires is cossation of suffering. This is the noble truth of suffering.

This sermon (called in Ceylon the first Bana = Bhana, 'recitation,' p. 70) was addressed to monks, and however unfavourably it must compare with that of Christ (St. Luke iv. 18), addressed not to monks but to suffering sinners—and however obvious may be the idea that pain must result from giving way to lust and the desire for life through countless existences—is of great interest because it embodies the first teaching of one, who, if not worthy to be called 'the Light of Asia,' and certainly unworthy of comparison with the 'Light of the World,' was at least one of the world's most successful teachers.

Bear in mind that, as the result of his earliest meditation (pp. 39, 56, 102), the Buddha made ignorance precedulust as the primary cause of life's misery.

Of course the real significance of the whole sermon depends on the interpretation of the word 'right' (sammā=samyak) in describing the eightfold path, and the plain explanation is that 'right belief' means believing in the Buddha and his doctrine; 'right resolve' means abandoning one's wife and family as the best method of extinguishing the fires of the passions; right speech is recitation of the Buddha's doctrine; right work (Karmānta) is that of a monk; right livelihood is living by alms as a monk does; right exercise is suppression of the individual self; right mindfulness (Smriti) is keeping in mind the impurities and impermanence of the body; right mental concentration is trance-like quietude.

Mark, too, that in describing the misery of life, association with loved objects is not mentioned as compensating for the pain of connexion with lateful objects.

The Buddha's early disciples were not poor men; for the sixth to be admitted to the Saugha was a high-born youth named Yasa. Then this youth's father, a rich merchant, became the first lay-disciple by repeating the triple formula (pp. 40, 78), and his mother and wife became the first lay-sisters. Next, four high-born friends of Yasa, and subsequently fifty more became monks. Thus, not long after the first sermon, Gautama had sixty enrolled monks; all from the upper classes.

In sending forth these sixty monks to preclaim his own gospel of deliverance, he addressed them thus :-

'I am delivered from all fetters (p. 127), human and divine. You too, O monks, are freed from the same fetters. Go forth and wander everywhere, out of compassion for the world and for the welfare of gods and men. Go forth, one by one, in different directions. Preach the doctrine (Dharmam), salutary (kalyāṇa) in its beginning, middle, and end, in its spirit (artha) and in its letter (vyañjana). Proclaim a life of perfect restraint,

chastity, and celibacy (brahmaćariyam). I will go also to preach this doctrine' (Mahā-vagga I. 11, 1).

When his monk-missionaries had departed, Gantama himself followed, though not till Mara (p. 41) had again tempted him. Quitting Benares he journeyed back to Uruvela, near Gava. There he first converted thirty rich young men and then one thousand orthodox Brahmans, led by Kasyapa and his two brothers, who maintained a secred fire (Brahmanism, p. 364). The firechamber was haunted by a fiery spake-demon; so Buddha asked to occupy the room for a night, fought the serpent and confined him in his own alms-bowl. Next he worked other miracles (said to have been 3500 in number), such as causing water-to recede, fire-wood to split, firevessels to appear at his word. Then Kasyapa and his brothers, convinced of his miraculous powers, were admitted with the other Brahmans to the Sangha. Thus Buddha gathered round him about a thousand monks,

To them on a hill Gayāsīsa (Brahma-yoni), near Gayā, he preached his 'burning' fire-sermon (Mahā-v' I. 21): 'Everything, O monks, is burning (adittam = ādīptam). The eye is burning; visible things are burning. The sensation produced by contact with visible things is burning—burning with the fire of lust (desire), enmity and defusion (rāgagginā dosngginā mohagginā), with birth, demy (jamyā), death, grief, lamentation, pain, dejection (domanassehi), and despair (upāyāsehi). The car is burning; sounds are burning; the nose is burning, odours are burning; the tongue is burning, tastes are burning; the body is burning, objects of sense are burning. The mind is burning;

thoughts are burning. All are burning with the fire of passions and lusts. Observing this, O monks, a wise and noble disciple becomes weary of (or disgusted with) the eye, weary of visible things, weary of the ear, weary of sounds, weary of odours, weary of tastes, weary of the body, weary of the mind. Becoming weary, he frees himself from passions and lusts. When free, he realizes that his object is accomplished, that he has lived a life of restraint and chastity (brahma-ćariyam), that re-birth is ended.'

It is said that this fire-sermon—which is a key to the meaning of Nirvāṇa—was suggested by the sight of a conflagration. It was Gautama's custom to impress ideas on his hearers by pointing to visible objects. He compares all life to a flame; and the gist of the discourse is the duty of extinguishing the fire of lusts, and with it the fire of all existence, and the importance of monkhood and celibacy for the attainment of this end.

Contrast in Christ's Sermon on the Mount the words addressed to the multitude (not to monks), 'Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God.'

The Buddha and his followers next proceeded to Rājagriha. Among them were two, afterwards called 'chief
disciples' (Agra-śrāvakas), Săriputta and Moggallāna (or
Maudgalyāyana), who died before the Buddha, and sixteen leaders among the so-called eighty 'great disciples'
(Mahā-śrāvakas); the chief of these being Kūśyapa (or
Mahā-kāśyapa), Upāli, and Ānanda (a cousin), besides
Anuruddha (another cousin), and Kātyāyana. Of course
among the eighty are reckoned the five original Benares
converts. At a later time two chief female disciples

(Agra-śrāvikās) named Khemā and Uppala-vaṇṇā (Utpala-vaṇṇā) were added (see p. 86). Each leading disciple was afterwards called Sthavira, 'an elder,' or Mahā-sthavira, 'great elder' (Pāli Thera, Mahāthera; fem. Theri). Mark, too, that Bimbi-sāra, king of Magadha, and Prasenajit (Pasenadi), king of Kosala, were Gautama's lay-disciples and constant patrons.

It was not long before the Buddha's followers were more formally incorporated into a monastic Order (Sangha), and rules of discipline drawn up (see pp. 61, 72, 73, 83). And doubtless the success of Buddhism was due to the carrying out of this idea of establishing a brotherhood offering a haven of rest to all.

About forty-five years elapsed between Gautama's attainment of Buddhahood and his death. During that period be continued teaching and itinerating with his disciples; only going 'into retreat' during the rains. A list of 45 places of residence is given. He seems to have resided oftenest at Śrūvustī (p. 21) in the monastery Jetavana given by Anātha-pindika; but the whole region between Śrāvastī and Rāja-griha (p. 29), for nearly 300 miles, was the scene of his itineration. Favourite resorts near Rāja-griha were the 'Vulture-peak' and Bambu-grove (Velu-vana); but continual itineration was one chief means of propagating Buddhism.

It is said that his death occurred at Kusi-nagara 1 (Kusinārā), a town about eighty miles east of Kapila-

Or Kusa-nagara, identified by Gen. Sir A. Couningham with Kasia, 35 miles east of Gorakh-pore on an old channel of the Chota-Gandak.

vastu—the place of his birth—when he was eighty years of age, and probably about the year 420 B. C.

The story is that Gautama died from eating too much pork (or dried boar's flesh?). As this is somewhat derogatory to his dignity it is not likely to have been fabricated. A fabrication, too, would scarcely make him guilty of the inconsistency of saying 'Kill no living thing,' and yet setting an example of eating flesh-meat.

These were his words when he felt his end near :-

'O Ananda, I am now grown old, and full of years, and my journey is drawing to its close; I have reached eighty years—my sum of days—and just as a worn-out cart can only with much care be made to move along, so my body can only be kept going with difficulty. It is only when I become plunged in meditation that my body is at case. In future be ye to yourselves your own light, your own refuge; seek no other refuge. Hold fast to the truth as your lamp. Hold fast to the truth as your refuge; look not to any one but yourselves as a refuge '(Mahā-parinibbāna-sutta II. 32, 33).

Afterwards he gave a summary of every monk's duties, thus:—'Which then, O monks, are the truths (= the seven jewels, p. 127) it believes you to spread abroad, out of pity for the world, for the good of gods and men? They are: 1. the four earnest reflections (Smriti, Sati-patthana, on the impurities of the body, on the impermanence of the sensations, of the thoughts, of

I give 420 as a round number. Bhys Davids has good reasons for fixing the date of Gautama's death about 8.0. 417. Oldenberg about 480, Curmingham 478, Kern 388. The old date is 543.

See Book of the great Decease, translated by Rhya Luvids, p. 72.

the conditions of existence, p. 127); z. the four right exertions (Sammappadhāna, viz. to prevent demerit from arising, get rid of it when arisen, produce merit, increase it); z. the four paths to supernatural power (Iddhi-pāda, viz. will, effort, thought, intense thought); z. the five forces (Paūća-bala, viz. faith, energy, recollection, self-concentration, reason); z. the proper use of the five organs of sense; 6, the seven 'limbs' of knowledge (Bodhy-nuga, viz. recollection, investigation, energy, joy, serenity, concentrationof mind, equanimity); z. the noble eightfold path' (p. 44). See Mahā-parinibbāna III, 65.

Then shortly before his decease, he said, 'It may be, Ananda, that in some of you the thought may arise:—
The words of our Teacher are ended; we have lost our Master. But it is not thus. The truths and the rules of the Order, which I have taught and preached, let these be your teacher, when I am gone' (VI. 1).

'Behold now, O monks, I exhort you: - Everything that cometh into being passeth away; work out your own perfection with diligence.' (III. 66).

Not long after his last atterances the Buddha, who had before through intense meditation attained Nirvāņa or extinction of the fire of desires, passed through the four stages of meditation (p. 209) till the moment came for his Pari-nirvāṇa, whereby the fire of life also was extinguished. A couch had been placed for him between two Sal trees (p. 23), with the head towards the north. In sculptures he is represented as lying on his right side at the moment of death, and images of him in this position are highly venerated.

The chief men of Kusi-nagara burnt his body with

the ceremonies usual at the death of a Cakravartin or Universal Ruler, which the Buddha claimed to be.

Then his ashes were distributed among eight princes, who built Stūpas over them (Baddha-vansa 28).

A legend states that when the Buddha died there was an earthquake. Then the gods Brahmā and Indra appeared and the latter exclaimed: 'Transient are all the elements of being; birth and decay are their nature; they are born and dissolved; then only is happiness when they have ceased to be' (Mahā-p' VI. 16).

Contrast with Buddha's last words the last words of Christ: 'Father, into Thy lands I commend my Spirit.'

A greater contrast than that presented by the account of the Buddha's death and the Gospel parative of the death of Christ can scarcely be imagined.

Of course as a result of discourses during forty-five years, a large number were gathered into Gantama's monastic Order. His first aim was the founding of this Order, and his chief sermons were to his monks; but he accepted all men and ultimately multitudes attached themselves to him as lay-brethren (p. 87).

In fact Gautama's doctrine of a universal brotherhood, open to all, constituted the corner-stone of his popularity. He spoke to them in their own provincial dialect, which could not have differed much from the Pali of the texts—and he enforced his words by dialogues, parables, fables, reiterations, and repetitions. Probably he was the first introducer of real preaching into India, and by his practical method he seemed to bring down knowledge from the clouds to every man's door.

The following parable is an example: 'As the

peasant sows the seed but cannot say: the grain shall swell to-day, to-morrow germinate, so also it is with the disciple; he must obey the precepts, practise meditation, study the doctrine; he cannot say to-day or to-morrow, I shall be delivered. Again: as when a herd of deer lives in a forest a man comes who opens for them a false path and the deer suffer hart; and another comes who opens a safe path and the deer thrive; so when men live among pleasures the evil one comes and opens the false eightfold path. Then comes the perfect one and opens the safe eightfold path of right belief, etc.' (p. 44, Oldenberg, 191, 192).

Six rival heretical teachers are alluded to. His chief opponent was his cousin Devadatta, who set up a school of his own, and is said to have plotted against the Buddha's life. His efforts failed (Calla-vagga VII), and he himself came to an untimely end. Possibly he may have belonged to the rival Jaina sect (Nigantha) of naked ascetics, of which the great leader was Vardhamāna Mahāvīra Nāta-putta (=Jūāti-putra).

Gautama's teaching gained the day. It claimed universality, and was aptly symbolized by a wheel rolling among all alike. Yet at first it had no attractions for the poor and the child-like.

By degrees, a fuller system, adapted in an ascending scale to laymen, novices, monks, nuns, and Arhats, was developed—a system which had its abstruse doctrines suited to men of philosophical minds, as well as its plain practical side. This constituted the Buddhist Dharma, which was ultimately collected in certain sacred books to be next described.

LECTURE III.

The Law (Dharma) and Sacred Scriptures of Buddhism.

Probably most educated persons are aware that Buddhists have their own sacred scriptures, like Hindus, Parsis, Confucianists, Muhammadans, Jews, and Christians. It is not, however, so generally known that in one important particular these Buddhist scriptures, constituting the Tri-pituka (p. 61), differ wholly from other sacred books. They key no claim to supernatural inspiration. Whatever doctrine is found in them was believed to be purely human—that is, was held to be the product of man's own natural faculties working naturally.

The Tri-pitaka was never like the Veda of the Brahmans, believed to be the very 'breath of God'; the same care, therefore, was not taken to preserve every sound; and when at last it was written down the result was a more scholastic production than the Veda,

Moreover, it was not composed in the Sanskrit of the Veda and Sastras—in the sacred language, the very

¹ The Satapatha-brāhmaņa (p. 1064) and the Britad-ārmņyaka Uponishad (p. 455) affirm that the Rig-Yajur-Sāma- and Atharva-veda, the Uponishads, Itihāsas, and Purāṇas were all the breath (nihāvasītāni) of the Sapreme Being. And Sāyaṇa, the well-known Indian Commentator on the Rig-veda, speaking of the Sapreme Being in his Introduction, saya, Yasya nihāvasītām Vedāh, * whose breath the Vedas were.*

grammar and alphabet of which were supposed to come from heaven—but in the vernacular of the part of India in which Buddhism flourished. Indeed, it is a significant fact that while the great sages of Sanskrit literature and philosophy, such as Vyāsa, Kumārila, and Sankara, in all probability spoke and taught in Sanskrit, the Founder of Buddhism preferred to communicate his precepts to the people in their own vernacular, afterwards called Pāli. Nevertheless, he never composed a single book of his own. In all probability he never wrote down any of his own precepts; for if writing was then invented, it was little practised, through the absence of suitable materials. This is the more remarkable as Buddhism ultimately became an instrument for introducing literary culture among uncivilized races.

All that Gautama did was to preach his Dharma. 'Law,'
during forty-five years of itineration, and oral teaching.
It was not till some time after his death that his sayings were collected (p. 97), and still longer before they
were written down. Itineration, recitation of the Law,
and preaching were the chief instruments for the propagation of Buddhism.

At present the Buddhist Canon is about as extensive as the Buddhuanical², and in both cases we are left in

^{*} How else can we account for Phyini's applying the term Bhāshā to colloquial Sanskrit I Professor E. R. Cowell holds that Pāṇini's standard is the Brāhmaņa language as opposed to the Samhitā of the Veda and to Loke or ordinary usage.

According to Professor Rhys Davids, the Pali text of the whole Tri-pitaka, or true Caron of Buddhist Scripture, contains about twice as many words as our Bible; but he calculates that an English translation, if all repetitions were given, would be about four times as

doubt as to the date when the books were composed. How, then, did their composition take place?

All that can be said is that at three successive epochs after the Buddha's death, three gatherings of his followers were held for the purpose of collecting his sayings and settling the true Canon, and that a fourth assembly took place much later in the North.

The first of these assemblages can scarcely with any fitness be called a Council. Nor can the fact of its meeting together in any formal manner be established on any trustworthy historical basis. It is said that a number of monks (about five hundred, called Mahāsthavirāh, 'the great elders,' Pāli Mahā-therā) assembled in a cave called Sattapaṇṇi, near the then capital city of Magadha—Rāja-griha, now Rāj-gtr—under the sanction of king Ajāta-satru, during the rainy season immediately succeeding the death of Gautama, to think over, put together, and arrange the sayings of their Master, but not, so far as we know, to write them down.

There, in all likelihood, they made the first step towards a methodical arrangement. But even then it is doubtful whether any systematic collections were composed. The assembled monks chose Kāšyapa (or Mahā-kāšyapa, p. 47), the most esteemed of all the Buddha's surviving disciples, as their leader, and chanted the Thera-vāda (Sthavira-v'), 'words of the elders,' or precepts of their Founder preserved in the memory of the older men; the rules of discipline (Vinaya) being

long. I should state here that in this chapter Koeppen, Childers, Rhys Davids, and Oldenberg have all been referred to, though I have not failed to examine the original Phil documents toyself.

recited by Upāli 1, and the ethical precepts (Sūtra), which constituted at first the principal Dharma 2 (par excellence, in contradistinction to the Vinaya), being imparted by Gautama's favourite Ānanda (p. 47); while the philosophical doctrines—then undeveloped—were communicated by the president, Kāšyapa. If any arrangement was then made it was probably in two collections—the Vinaya and Dharma (say about 400 B.C.)

In regard to the Dharma, two main lines were, in all likelihood, laid down as the basis of all early teaching. The first consisted of the four sublime verities, as they are called—that is, of the four fundamental truths originally taught by the Founder of Buddhism, namely, the inevitable inherence of suffering in every form of life, the connexion of all suffering with indulgence of desires, especially with craving for continuity of existence, the possibility of the cessation of suffering by restraining lusts and desires, and the eightfold course leading to that cessation (see p. 44).

The second line of doctrine probably consisted of an outline of the twelve-linked chain of causality (nidâna), which traced back all suffering to a still deeper origin than mere lusts and desires—namely, to ignorance (p. 103).

It is not, however, at all likely that any philosophical

[&]quot;Upth is said to have been originally the family barber of the Sakyas. Professor Objenberg rightly remarks that this did not make him a man of low position, though he was probably the lowest in rank of all the early disciples of Gantama.

Professor Oldenberg, in his preface to his edition of the Mahavagga, shows that in early times there were only two divisions of the Pitaka, one called Vinaya and the other Dharma (Dhamma), which were often contrasted.

or metaphysical doctrines were clearly and methodically formulated at the earliest assembly which took place soon after Gautama's death. It is far more probable that the first outcome of the gathering together of the Buddha's disciples was simply the enforcing of some strict rules of discipline for the Order of monks, and this may have taken place soon after 400 B.C.

After a time, certain relaxations of these rules or unauthorized departures from them (ten in number, such as reception of money-gifts, eating a second meal in the afternoon, drinking stimulating beverages, if pure as water in appearance!), began to be common. The question as to whether liberty should be alkewed in these points, especially in the first, shock the very foundations of the community. In fact the whole society became split up into two contending parties, the strict and the lax, and a second Council became necessary for the restoration of order. All ten points were discussed at this Council, said to have consisted of 700 monks and held at Vaišālī (Vesālī, now Besārh), 27 miles north of Patna, about 380 B.C.2 The discussions were protracted for eight months, and all the ten unlawful relaxations were finally prohibited.

The ten usually enumerated are the three above-named and seven others, viz. power of admitting to the Order and confession in private houses, the use of comfortable sents, relaxation of monastic rules in remote country places, power of obtaining a dispensation from the Order ofter the infringement of a rule, drinking whey, putting salt aside for future use, power of citing the example of others as a valid excuse for relaxing discipline.

According to Professor Oldenberg's calculation. The date is doubtful. A round number (say 350 B.C.) might be given.

It has been observed that this second Council stands in a relation to Buddhism very similar to that which the Council of Nicea bears to Christianity.

The exact date, however, of either the first or second assemblies cannot be determined with precision.

Not long afterwards occurred the political revolution caused by the well-known Candra-gupta (= Sandrakottus)-sometimes called the first Aśoka (or disparagingly, Kālāšoka). This man, who was a low-born Śūdra,* usurped the throne and founded the Maurya dynasty, after killing king Nanda and taking possession of Pățaliputra (or Palibothra, now Patna, the thea metropolis of Magadha or Behār), about 315 s. c. He extended the kingdom of Magadha over all Hindustan, and became so powerful that when Alexander's successor, Seleukos Nikator (whose reign commenced about 312 B. C.), invaded India from his kingdom of Bactria, so effectual was the resistance offered by Candra-gupta, that the Greek thought it politic to form an alliance with the Hindu king, and sent his own countryman, Megasthenes, as an ambassador to reside at his court.

To this circumstance we owe the earliest authentic account of Indian customs and usages, by an intelligent observer who was not a native; and Megasthenes narrative, preserved by Strabo, furnishes a basis on which a fair inference may be founded that Brahmanism and Buddhism existed side by side in India on amicable terms in the fourth and third centuries a.c. There is even ground for believing that king Candragupta himself favoured the Buddhists, though outwardly he never renounced his faith in Brahmanism.

Candra-gupta's reign is thought to have lasted until 291 B.C., and that of his son and successor, Vindusāra, from 291 to (say) about 260 B.C. Then came Candragupta's grandson, the celebrated Aśoka (sometimes called Dharmāšoka), who, though of Sūdra origin, was perhaps the greatest Hindū monarch of India.

It was about this period that Gautama Buddha's followers began to develope his doctrines, and to make additions to them in such a way that the Abhi-dharma or 'further Dharma' had to be added to the Sutra which constituted the original Dharma (p. 56). Even in Gautama's time there were great dissensions. Afterwards differences of opinion increased, so that before long eighteen schools of schismatic thought (p. 158) were established. The resulting controversies were very disturbing, and a third Council became necessary. It consisted of a thousand oldest members of the Order, and was held in the 16th or 17th year of Asoka's reign at Patna (Pāṭali-putra), about 244–242 B.C.

This third Council was, perhaps, the most important; for through its deliberations the decision was arrived at to propagate Buddhism by missions. Hence missionaries, supported by king Asoka (see p. 66), were sent in all directions; the first being Mahinda (Mahendra), the king's son, who carried the doctrine into Ceylon.

Dr. Oldenberg has shown that in a part of the Tri-pitaka now extant, the first and second Councils are mentioned but not the third. The plain inference is that the portion of the Buddhist Canon in which the second Council is described cannot be older than that Council. Yet in all likelihood a great part of the Vinaya (including the Patimokkha and the Khan-dhaka, p. 62) was composed before the second Conneil—possibly as early as about 400 s.c.—and the rest of the Canon during the succeeding century and a half before the third Council—that is, from 400 to 250 s.c. It was composed in the then vernacular language of Magadha (Magadha), where all three Councils were held.

It seems, however, probable that in each district to which Buddhism spread the doctrine of its founder was taught in the peculiar dialect understood by the inhabitants. It even appears likely that when Gautama himself lived in Kosala (Oudh) he preached in the dialect of that province just as he taught in Magadhi when he resided in Magadha. The Culbivagga (V. 33. 1) makes him direct that his precepts should be learnt by every convert in the provincial dialect, which doubtless varied slightly everywhere. In time it became necessary to give fixity to the sacred texts, and the form they finally assumed may have represented the prevalent dialect of the time, and not necessarily the original Magadhi Prakrit. This final form of the language was called Pali² (or Tanti), and no

Professor Oldenberg places the locality of the Pali on the eastern coast of Southern India in the northern part of Kolinga (Puri in Orisa), and would therefore make it an old form of Uriya. That country be thinks had most frequent communications with Coylon.

^{*} Prefessor Childers thought that Pali merely meant the language of the line or series of fexts, the word pali like tanti meaning 'line,' Pali differs from the Prakrit of the Inscriptions, and from that of the dramas, and from that of the Jainas (which is still later and called Ardha-magadhi), by its retention of some consonants and infusion of Sanskrit. The Gatha dialect of the northern books is again different.

doubt differs from the earlier Asoka inscription dialect, and from Māgadhi Prākrit as now known.

Some think that the Pali resulted from an artificial infusion of Sanskrit. It is said that nearly two-fifths of the Pali vocabulary consists of unmodified Sanskrit.

At any rate, it was in this language that the Buddhist Law was carried (probably by Mahendra) into Ceylon, and the whole Canon is thought by some to have been handed down orally till it was written down there about 85 B.C. Oral transmission, we know, was common in India, but if edicts were written by Asoka (p. 67), why should not the Law have been written down also?

As, however, Pali was not spoken in Ceylon, the Pali commentaries brought by Mahendra were translated by him into Sinhalese, and the Pali originals being lost, were not retranslated into Pali till about the beginning of the fifth century of our era.

Turning next to the final arrangement of the Pāli Canon, we find that it resolved itself into three collections (called Tri-piṭaka, Pāli Tipiṭaka, 'Three baskets,' the word piṭaka, however, not occurring in the early texts), namely: 1. Vinaya, 'discipline' for the Order; 2. Sūtra (Pāli Sutta), 'precepts,' which at first constituted the principal Dharma, or moral Law (p. 56); 3. Abhi-dharma (Abhi-dhamma), 'further Dharma,' or additional precepts relative to the law and philosophy.

This division was not logical, as each collection may treat of the subjects belonging to the others.

Taking, then, in the first place, the Vinaya or diseipline portion of the Buddhist bible, we ought to observe that a portion of it (the Patimokkha) is not only the oldest, but also the most important in its hearing on the whole theory of Buddhism. For, as we shall point out more fully hereafter, the Buddha's paramount aim was to convince others that to get rid of ignorance, gain knowledge, practise morality, and obtain deliverance, it was incumbent on a wise man to renounce married life and become a member of a monastic Order.

Pure Haddhism, in fact, was pure monachism—implying celibory, poverty, and mendicancy—and this could not be maintained without rules for discipline and outward conduct, which, as adopted by the Buddha, were simply a modification of the rules for the two religious orders of the Brahma-čarī and Sannyāsī, already existing in Brāhmanism.

With regard to the classification of the Vinaya rules, they were divided into three sets: a. the Khandbaka, in two collections called Mahā-vagga (Mahā-varga), 'great section,' and Ćulla-vagga, 'minor section' (vagga = varga); b. the Vibhanga (including the two works called Pārājika and Pācittiya), or a systematic arrangement and explanation of certain ancient 'release-precepts' (pratimoksha-sūtra, Pāli Pātimokkha) for setting free, through penances, any who had offended against the Order; c. Parivāra-pāṭha, or a comparatively modern summary of the above two divisions.

Mark, bowever, that the Vinaya abounds in details of the life and teaching of Gautama.

The second Pitaka, called Sutta (Sūtra), 'precepts,' contains the ethical doctrines which at first constituted the whole Buddhist Law. It consists of five Nikāyas, or collections, viz. a, the Dīgha, or collection of 34 long suttas, among which is the Mahā-parinibbāna-sutta (one of the oldest parts of the Canon after the Pātimokkha); b. the Majjhima, or collection of 152 suttas of middling length; c. the Samyutta, or collection of 55 groups of joined suttas, some of them very short; d. the Anguttara, or miscellaneous suttas in divisions, which go on increasing by one (anga); c. the Khuddaka, or minor collection, consisting of fifteen works.

According to one school, this fifth Nikāya is more correctly referred to the Abbi-dhamma Pitaka. In character, however, it conforms more to the Sutta. Of its fifteen works, perhaps the most important are the following six:—

The Khuddaka-pātba, 'short readings;' the Dhammapada, 'precepts of the Law' (or 'verses of the Law,' or 'footsteps of the Law'); the Jātaka (with their commentaries), a series of stories relating to about 5501 previous births of the Buddha (p. 111), which have formed the basis of many stories in the Pañés-tantra, fables of Æsop, etc.; the Sutta-nipāta, 'collection of discourses;' the Thera-gāthā (= Sthavira-g'), 'verses or stanzas by elder monks;' Therī-gāthā, 'verses by elder nuns.'

The other nine are the Udāna, containing \$2 short suttas and joyous utterances of the Buddha at crises of his life; the Itivuttaka, 'thus it was said' (=ity ukta), 110 sayings of the Buddha; the Vimāna-vatthu, on the mansions of the gods (which move about at will and sometimes descend on earth); the Peta-vatthu (=Preta-vastu, Peta standing for Preta and Pitri).

¹ 550 is a round number. The text of the Jatakas has been edited by Fausbill and translated by Rhys Davids and others. See a specimen at p. 112.

on departed spirits; the Niddesa, a commontary on the Sutta-nipata; the Pati-sambhida, on the supernatural knowledge of Arbats; the Apadana (Sanskrit Avadana), stories about the achievements of Arbats; the Buddha-vansa, or history of the 24 preceding Buddhus (the Digha mentions only six) and of Gautama; the Cariya-pitaka, treasury of acts, giving stories based on the Jatakas, describing Gautama's acquisition of the ten transcendent virtues (p. 128) in former births.

The works included in this Sutta-pitaka frequently take the form of conversations on doctrine and morality, between Gautama, or one of his chief disciples, and some inquirer. As constituting the ethical Dharma, they are the most interesting portion of the Canon.

With regard to the third Pitaka, called Abhi-dhamma (Abbhi-dharma, 'further dharma'), which is held by modern scholars to be of later origin and supplementary to the Sutta (p. 62), it contains seven prose works. Moreover, it was once thought to relate entirely to metaphysics and philosophy; but this is now held to be an error, for all seven works treat of a great variety of subjects, including discipline and ethics. Metaphysical discussions occur, but it is probable that originally Buddha kept clear of metaphysics (see p. 98).

Besides the numerous works we have thus described as constituting the Tri-pitaka or three collections of

^{&#}x27;The seven are called: i. Plasmma-sangari, 'enumeration of conditions of existence,' califol by Dr. E. Müller; z. Vihhanga, 'explanations;' 3. Katha-vatthu, 'discussions on one thousand controverted points;' 4. Paggala-panisatti, 'explanation of personality;' 5. Dhātu-kathā, 'account of elements;' 6. Yamuka, 'pairs;' 7. Paṭṭhāna, 'causes,'

works of the Southern Buddhists, there are the Pāli commentaries called Attha-kathā (Artha-kathā, 'telling of meanings!'), which were translated into Sinhalese, according to tradition, by Mahendra himself. Afterwards the original Pāli text was lost and some of the commentaries were retranslated into Pāli by Buddha-ghosha, 'he who had the very voice of Budrtant are to end of the fourth and beginning of the fifth century or our era.

The Mana-varisa or 'history of the great families of Ceylon, a well-known work (written in Pali by a monk named Maha-nama in the fifth century and translated by Turnour), gives an account of this writer. It says that a Brāhman youth, born near Buddha-Gayā in Magadha, had achieved great eclebrity as a disputant in Brahmanical philosophy. This youth was converted by a Buddhist sage in India, and induced to enter the Buddhist monastic Order. He soon became renowned for his eloquence, and was on that account called Buddha-ghosha. He wrote a commentary, called Atthasalini, on the Dhamma-sangani, a work belonging to the Abhi-dharma. He also wrote a most valuable Pāli compendium of Buddhist doctrine called Visuddhimagga, 'path of purity,' and a commentary on the Dharma-pada containing many parables. He went to Ceylon about A.D. 430 for the purpose of retranslating the Sinbalese commentaries into Pali. His literary reputation stands very high in that island, and he was instrumental in spreading Buddhism throughout Burma.

⁴ A list of these is given in Childers' Dictionary.

See Introduction to Buddha-ghoola's Parables, by Professor Max Maller; Turnour's Mahā-vapis, pp. 250-253.

It may be noted that the two important Pali works, Mahā-vaṇṣa and Dipa-vaṇṣa (Dvipa-vaṇṣa), perhaps the oldest extant histories of Ceylon, are also fairly authentic sources for Buddhistic history before Christ,

Turn we now to the Mahayana or 'Great Vehicle.'

This cannot be said to possess any true Canon distinct from the 'Though certain Nepalese Sanskrit works, anapassa in later fines, are held to be canonical by Northern Buddhists.

To understand this part of the subject we must revert to the great king Asoka. It is usual to call this second and more celebrated Asoka the Constantine of Buddhism. Being of Sudra origin he was the more inclined to favour the popular teaching of Gautama, and, as he was the first king who adopted Buddhism openly (about 257 B.C.) he doubtless did for Buddhism very much what Constantine did for Christianity.

The Buddhist system then spread over the whole kingdom of Asoka, and thence over other portions of India, and even to some outlying countries. For gradually during this period most of the petty princes of India, from Peshawar and Kashmir to the river Kistna, and from Surat to Bengal and Orissa, if not actually brought under subjection to the king of Magadha, were compelled to acknowledge his paramount authority.

This is proved by Asoka's edicts, which are inscribed on rocks and stone pillars? (the earliest dating from

They are in two quite distinct kinds of writing. That at Kapurdagarbi—sometimes called Northern Asaka or Ariano-Pāli—is clearly Semitic, and traccable to a Phomician source, being written from right to left. That at Girnar, commonly called Southern Asaka or

about 251 B.C.), and are found in frontier districts separated from each other by enormous distances.

These inscriptions are of the greatest interest and value, as furnishing the first authentic records of Indian history. They are written in a more ancient language than the Päli of Ceylon, and in at least three different dialects. Ten of the most important are found on six rocks and five pillars (Lāṭs), though numerous other monuments are scattered over Northern India, from the Indian Ocean to the Bay of Bengal, from the Vindhya range on the south to the Khaibur Pass on the north.

Indo-Pali, is read from left to right, and is not so clearly traceable. If it came from the west it probably came through a Pablavi chamsel, and gave rise to Devanagari. General Canninghou and others believe this latter character to have originated independently in India. James Prinsep was the first to decipher the inscription character.

¹ See Dr. R. N. Cust's article in the 'Journal of the National Indian Association' for June, 1879, and one of his Selected Essays, and General Sir A. Cunningham's great work, 'The Corpus Inscriptionum. Indicarum.' The General rockons thirteen rock inscriptions, seventeen cave inscriptions, and six inscribed pillars.

The eight most important rock inscriptions are those on (1) the Rock of Kapurda-parhi (at Shāhhāz-garhi), in British Afghānistān, forty miles enst-north-east of Peshāwar—this is in the Ariano-Pāli character; (2) the Rock of Khālsi, situated on the bank of the river Jumnā, just where it leaves the Himālaya mountains, fifteen miles west of the hill-station of Mussourie; (3) the Rock of Girnār, half-a-mile to the east of the city of Junagurh, in Kāthiāwār; (4) the Rock of Dhadi, in Kathack (properly Kaṭak), twenty miles north of Jagan-nāth; (5) the Rock of Jangada, in a large old fort eighteen miles west-north-west of Ganjam in Madras; (6) Dairāt; (7) Rūpnāth, at the foot of the Kaimar range; (8) Salmsaram, at the north-east end of the Kaimar. The second Rairāt inscription is most important as the only one which mentioned Buddha by mome.

The five most important pillars are: (1) the Fillar at Delhi known

In these proclamations and edicts (one of which was addressed to the third Buddhist Council), king Asoka, who calls himself Priya-darsi (Pāli Piya-dassi), issues various orders. He prohibits the slaughter of animals for food or sacrifice, gives directions for what may be called the first hospitals, i. c. for treating men and even animals medically, appoints missionaries for the propagation of Buddhist doctrines, inculcates prace and mercy, charity and toleration, morality and self-denial, and what is still more remarkable, enjoins quinquennial periods of national humiliation and confession of sins by all classes, accompanied by a re-proclamation of the Buddha's precepts. Asoka, in fact, became so zealous a friend of Buddhism, that he is said to have maintained 64,000 Buddhist monks in and around the country of Magadha, which was on that account called the land of monasteries (Vihāra - the modern Bihār or Behār).

No doubt it was Ašoka's propagation of Buddhism by missions in various countries—where it came in contact with and partly adopted various already existing indigenous faiths and superstitions—that led to the ultimate separation of the Buddhist system into the two great divisions of Southern and Northern.

Indeed, the formation of a Northern School, as distinct from a Southern, became inevitable after the conversion of Kanishka, the Indo-Scythian king of Kushmu, who

as Firez Shah's Lat; (2) another Pillar at Lathi, which was removed to Calcutta, but has recently been restored; (3) the Pillar at Allahabad, a single shaft without capital, of polished sandstone, thirty-live feet in height; (4) the Pillar at Lauriya, near Bettiah, in Bengal; (5) the Pillar at another Lauriya, seventy-seven miles north-west of Patria.

came from the North, and became a zealous Buddhist. He probably reigned in the second half of the first century (a. b.), and extended his dominious as far as Gujarat, Sindh, and even Mathura (see p. 167, note 2).

It was during Kanishka's reign that a fourth Council' was held at Jälandhara in Kashmīr, under Pāršva and Vasu-mitra. It consisted of 500 monks, who composed three Sanskrit works of the nature of commentaries (Upadeśa, Vinaya-vibhāshā, Abbidharma-vibhāshā) on the three Pāli Pitakas. These were the earliest books of the Mahā-yāna or Northern School, which ofterwards formulated its more developed ductrines on the Indus, while the Pāli Camon of the South represented the true doctrine promulgated on the Ganges.

Kashnur was a centre of Sanskrit learning, and Kanishka, who was a patron of it, became to Northern Buddhism what Aśoka had been to Southern. Hence in process of time other Northern Buddhist books were written in Sanskrit, with occasional Gathas or stanzas in an irregular dialect, half Sanskrit, half Prakrit.

It is usual to enumerate nine Nepalese canonical scriptures (Dharmas);—t. Prajūā pāromitā, 'transcendent knowledge,' or an abstract of metaphysical and mystic philosophy; 2. Gaṇḍa-vyūha; 3. Daša-bhūmīśvara (describing the ten stages leading to Buddhalood); 4. Samādhi-rāja; 5. Laūkāvatāra; 6. Saddharmapaṇḍarīka, 'Lotus of the True Law;' 7. Tathāgaṭaguhyaka (containing the secret Tantric doctrines); 8. Labita-vistara (giving a legendary life of Buddha);

⁴ Hionen Throng states that the three communications were engraved on sheets of copper and bacied in a Stupa. Beal, I. 152-156.

9. Suvarna-prabhāsa. The eighth is probably as old as the 2nd century of our era, and next comes the sixth. Tibetan translations were made of all of them. These extend to 100 volumes and are collectively called Ka'gyur or Kan'gyur (Kanjur). We owe our knowledge of these to the indefatigable Hungarian traveller, Alexander Csoma de Körös.

Copies of the Sanskrit works were brought to England by Mr. B. H. Hodgson. The sixth has been translated by Burnouf and recently by H. Kern. Dr. Rajendra-lala-mitra has edited the eighth. As to the non-canonical works M. Senart has edited part of the Mahavastu, and Professor E. B. Cowell and Mr. R. A. Neil, the Divyavadana. They contain interesting old legends—some about the achievements of Asoka, some about Buddha himself, some perhaps from lost Vinaya books.

As to the Päli written character, it is a question whether that current in the holy land of Buddhism, or in Ceylon, or in Siam (Kambodia), or in Burma—that is, Devanāgarī, Sinhalese, Kambodian, or Burmese—should be used. Many think Burmese most suited to it, and in Europe the Roman character is preferred.

It should be added that the recitation (Bhāna, Sanskrit root Bhan, 'to speak;' in Sinhalese spelt Bana) of the Law is one of the principal duties of monks, the reciter being called Bhānaka. A peculiar mode of intoning is called Sara-bhañña (sara = svara). The Buddha, they say, is not extinct, for he lives in the Dharma and in the Sangha, in the Law and in the monks who recite it. Hence the importance of recitation in the Buddhist system (p. 84).

LECTURE IV.

The Sangha or Buddhist Order of Monks.

PRRHAPS the first point made clear by the study of the Buddhist Scriptures is, that the Buddha never seriously thought of founding a new system in direct opposition to Brahmanism and caste. Even his Order or fraternity of Monks, which attained a world-wide celebrity and spread through a great part of Asia, was a mere imitation of an institution already established in India. He himself was a Hindu of the Hindus, and he remained a Hindu to the end. His very name, Gautama, connected him with one of the most celebrated Hindu sages, and was significant of his original connexion with orthodox Brāhmanism. It is true he was a determined opponent of all Brahmanical sacerdotalism and ceremonialism, and of all theories about the supernatural character of the Vedas (see p. 53); but, being himself a Hindu, he never required his adherents to make any formal renunciation of Hinduism, as if they had been converted to an entirely new faith; just as, if I may say so with all reverence, the Founder of the Christian Church, being Himself a Jew, never required His followers to give up every Jewish usage.

Nor had the Buddha any idea of courting popularity as a champion of social equality and denouncer of all distinctions of rank and ancient traditions—

a kind of Tribune of the people, whose mission was to protect them from the tyranny of the upper classes.

There was, no doubt, at one time a prevalent opinion among scholars that Gautama aimed at becoming a great social reformer. It was generally supposed that he began by posing before his fellow-countrymen in a somewhat ad captandum manner as a popular leader and liberator, whose mission was to deliver them from the tyranny of caste. But such an opinion is now known to be based on mistaken assumptions. What ought rather to be claimed for him is that he was the first to establish a universal brotherhood (Sangha) of comobite monks, open to all persons of all ranks. In other words, he was the first founder of what may be called a kind of universal monastic communism (for Buddhist monks never, as a rule, lived alone), and the first to affirm that true enlightenment—the knowledge of the highest path leading to saintship—was not confined to the Brahmans, but open to all the members of all castes. This was the only sense in which he abolished caste. His true followers, however, constituted a caste of their own, distinguished from the laity. From the want of a more suitable term we are forced to call them 'monks !."

And this Order of monks was not a hierarchy. It had no ecclesiastical organization under any centralized authority. Its first Head, Gautama, appointed no successor. It was not the depository of theological learning. Nor was it a mediatorial caste of priests, claiming to

Our word mosk (derived from paragés, 'one who lives alone,') is not quite mitable unless it be taken to mean 'one who withdraws from worldly life.' See p. 75.

mediate between earth and heaven. It ought not to be called a Church, and it had no rite of ordination in the true sense. It was a brotherhood, in which all were under certain obligations of celibacy, moral restraint, fasting, poverty, itineration and confession to each other—all were dominated by one idea, and pledged to the propagation of the one doctrine, that all life was in itself misery, and to be got rid of by a long course of discipline, as not worth living, whether on earth or in heaven, whether in present or future bodies. The founding of a monastic brotherhood of this kind which made personal extinction its final aim, and might be co-extensive with the whole world, was the Buddlan's principal object.

In point of fact, the so-called enlightenment of mind which entitled him to Buddhahood, led him at the early stage of his career into no abstruse or transcendental region of thought, but took a very practical direction. It led him to see that an association of monks offering equality of condition to high and low, rich and poor, and a haven of refuge to all oppressed by the troubles of life, would soon become popular. His Order started with first ten, then fifty, then sixty original members (see p. 45), but its growth soon surpassed all anticipations, and its ramifications extended to distant countries, where, like the branches of the Indian fig-tree, they sent down roots to form vigorous independent plants, even after the decay of the parent stem. On this account it was called the fraternity of the four quarters (Catuddisa, Mahā-vagga VIII. 27. 5) of the globe.

In brief, a carefully regulated monastic brotherhood, which opened its arms to all comers of all ranks, and enforced on its members the duty of extending its boundaries by itinerancy, and by constantly rolling onward the wheel of the true doctrine (Law), constituted in its earliest days the very essence, the very backbone of Buddhism, without which it could never have been propagated, nor even have held its own.

But we repeat that in this, his main design, Gautama was after all no innovator; no introducer of navel ideas.

Monachism had always been a favourite adjunct of the Brāhmanical system, and respect for monastic life had taken deep root among the people. Thus we find it laid down in its most authoritative exponent, Manu's Law-book (Book VI), that every twice-born man was bound to be first an unmarried student (Brahma-čāri), next a married householder, and then at the end of a long life he was to abandon wife and family and become a Sannyāsī, 'ascetic,' or Bhikshu, 'mendicant,' wandering from door to door. In fact, it was through these very states of life that Gautama himself, as a Kahatriya, was theoretically bound to have passed.

Hindū monks, therefore, were numerous before Buddhism. They belonged to various seets, and took various vows of self-torture, of silence, of fasting, of poverty, of mendicancy, of celibacy, of abandoning caste, rank, wife and family. Accordingly they had various names. The Brāhman was called a Sannyāsī, "one who gives up the world." Others were called Vairāgī, "free from affections;" Yogī, "seeking mystic union with the Deity;" Dig-ambara, "sky-clothed," naked; "Tapasvī, "practising ansterities;" Yati, "restraining desires;" Jitendriya, "conquering passions; Sramaņa, "undergoing discipline;"

Bhikshu, 'living by alms;' Nirgrantha, 'without ties.'
Such names prove that asceticism was an ancient institution. The peculiarity about Gautama's teaching in
regard to monachism was that he discouraged 'solitary
asceticism, severe austerities, and irrevocable vows,
though he enjoined moral restraint in celibate fraternities, conformity to rules of discipline, upright conduct,
and confession to each other.

His usual mode of designating his monks was by the old term Bhikshu (Pāli Bhikkhu), 'living by alms,' to indicate their poverty. They were also called Śrāmaņera and Śramaṇa (Pāli Sāmaṇera, Samaṇa), as subject to monastic discipline². Those who cutered the stream leading to Arlatship (p. 132) were called Ārya.

The term Śrāvaka, 'hearers,' seems to have been used in the Hīna-yāna system to denote great disciples only, and especially those 'great disciples' (p. 47) of Gautama who heard the Law from his own lips, and were afterwards called Sthaviras and became Arhats (p. 133). They had also the title Āyushmat, 'possessing life.'

We perceive again the close connexion between Brahmanism and Buddhism; for clearly the Brahmacarī and Sannyāsī of the one became the Śramanera or junior monk, and Śramana or senior monk of the other.

As to the name Sramana (from root Sram, 'to toil'), bear in mind that, although Buddhism has acquired

Although be discouraged, he did not prohibit manks from living solitary lives. See p. 132 as to the Pratyeka-Buddha, and note, p. 72.

^{*} Some prefer to derive the Phli Samono from the Sanskrit root Sam, 'to be quiet.' Smāsānika, 'frequenting burning grounds,' is a later name, life being to monks a kind of graveyard.

the credit of being the easiest religious system in the world, and its monks are among the idlest of men—as having no laborious ceremonics and no work to do for a livelihood—yet in reality the carrying out of the great object of extinguishing lasts, and so getting rid of the burden of repeated existences, was no sinceure if earnestly undertaken. Nor was it possible for men to lead sedentary lives, whose only mode of avoiding starvation was by house to house itinerancy.

As to the form of admission, there was no great strictness in early times, when all applicants were admitted without inquiry. It was only when the Order increased that murderers, robbers, debtors, soldiers and others in the King's service, lepers, cripples, blind, oneeyed, deaf and dumb, and consumptive persons, and all subject to fits were rejected.

Originally it was enough for the Buddha to have said, 'Come (chi), follow me.' This alone conferred discipleship. In time, however, he commissioned those he had himself admitted to admit others. Then the form of admission to the brotherhood was divided into two stages, marked by two ceremonies, which have been very unsuitably compared to our ordination services for deacon and priest. At any rate the term 'ordination' is wholly misleading, if any idea of a priestly commission or gift of spiritual powers be implied.

The youthful layman who desired admission to the first degree, or that of a novice, had to be at least

We may note that in the 'Clay-Cart,' a Sanskrit drama written in an early century of our ern, a gambler becomes a Buddhist monk.

fifteen years old ' (Mahā-v' I. 50); and such novices had to be at least twenty (from conception) before the second rite or admission to the full monkhood.

The first rite was called pravrajyā (pabbajjā), 'going forth from home' (Mahā-v' I, 12). Persons admitted to this first degree of monkhood were called Śrāmaṇera (Sāmanera), 'novices,' though they were also called 'new' or 'junior monks' (Navako Bhikkhu). They might be admitted by a senior monk without appearing before any formal conclave; but not without the consent of their parents, and not without attaching themselves to a religious teacher (upādhyāya) after their admission. It is said that Gautaum was neged by his father Śuddhodana to require the sauction of parents, in rather touching and remarkable words, to the following effect:—

'The love for a son cuts into the cuticle (chavi); having cut into the cuticle, it cuts into the inner skin (camma); having cut into the inner skin, it cuts into the flesh; having cut into the flesh, it cuts into the tendons (nhāru or nahāru); having cut into the tendons, it cuts into the bones; having cut into the bones, it reaches the marrow (aṭṭhi-minjā), and abides in the marrow. Let not Pabbajjā, therefore, be performed on a son without his father's and mother's permission' (Mahā-vagga I. 54).

The admission ceremony of a novice was extremely

^{&#}x27;I hear from Dr. Oldenberg that the mention in his 'Buildies' of twelve years as the minimum is a mistake. The age of eight mostioned by Prof. Rhys Davids as the minimum, must be a modern rule poculiar to Ceylon, if it be admissible at all.

simple, and confined to certain acts and words on the part of the candidate, witnessed by any competent monk. The Sangha, as a body, took no part in it. The novice first cut off his hair, put on three yellow ragged garments (tri-civara), adjusted the upper robe so as to leave the right shoulder bare, and then before a monk repeated three times the three-refuge formula:

- · I go for refuge to the Buddha (Buddham sarayam gaechami)."
- · I go for refuge to the Law (Dharman saranon gaedhani).'
- *I go for refuge to the Order (Sangham saraman gaééhāmi)."

Very remarkably, this, the only prayer of true Buddhism, resembled the Gāyatrī or sacred prayer of the
Veda (repeated by the Brahma-cārī) in consisting of
three times eight syllables. But if the Buddhist novice
had a right to the Brahma-cārī's sacred cord (upavita),
this was probably abandoned on admission. He was
then instructed in the Ten Precepts (Dasa-sila or sikkhāpada), which were really ten prohibitions (Mahā-vagga
I. 56), requiring ten abstinences (veramanī):—

from destroying life (pāṇātipato = prāṇātipāta);
 from taking anything not given (adinnādāna);
 from unchastity (abrahmaćariyā);
 from speaking falsely (musā-vāda = mṛishā-vāda);
 from drinking strong drinks (surā);
 from eating at forbidden times (vikāla-bbojana);
 from daneing, singing, music, and worldly spectacles (visūka);
 from garlands, scents, unguents or ornaments;
 from the use of a high or broad bed;
 from receiving gold or silver. The prohibition not to receive money, even in return for religious teaching or any supposed spiritual benefits conferred, was held to be most important, and was for a

long time obeyed, though in the end monasteries became owners of large property and landed estates.

Of course the Upasampada, or admission to full monkhood (described Mahā-vagga I. 76), was a more formal ceremony. A conclave (Sangha) of at least ten monks was required. The candidate had to appear before them, but was first instructed by some competent and learned monk as to the nature of the rite and the questions he would have to answer. This instructor also directed him to choose some other monk competent to act as his Upādhyāya (upajjhāya) or teacher for five years after his admission, and made him provide himself with an alms-bowl and with the usual yellow monkish vestments. Then his first instructor presented himself before the conclave and informed them that the candidate was ready to be admitted. Thereupon the novice came forward, adjusted his upper garment so as to cover the left shoulder, bowed down before the feet of the assembled monks, seated himself on the ground, and, raising his joined hands, asked three times for admission to the full monkhood, thus: - 'I entreat the Sangha for full monkhood (Upasampada), have compassion on me and uproot me (ullumpatu mām) from the world,' repeated thrice.

Thereupon he was questioned [not, as in our Ordination Service: 'Are you inwardly moved by the Holy Spirit to take upon you this office?' Not: 'Will you apply all your diligence to frame and fashion your own life and that of your family so as to be wholesome examples?' but] thus:—Are you free from leprosy, boils, consumption, fits, etc.? Are you a male? Are

you a free man and not in the royal service? Are you free from debts? Have you the consent of your parents? Are you full twenty years old? Have you an alms-bowl and vestments? What is your name? What is your teacher's name?

If the answers were satisfactory the candidate was admitted. After admission no prayer was pronounced [such as in our Ordination Service: 'We beseech Thee, merciful Father, send on Thy servant Thy heavenly blessing that he may be clothed with righteousness']; but he was informed that he was to trust to only four Resources (nissaya), and to abstain from four chief forbidden acts (akaraṇīyāni). These four Resources and four Prohibitions were then communicated to him thus:—

First the four Resources as follow:—(1) Broken, morsels given in alms for food; (2) Rags from a dust-heap for clothes; (3) Roots of trees for an abode; (4) Liquid putrefying exercts of cows for medicine. Note, however, that, in practice, indulgences (atirekhalābha) were in all four cases allowed; such as, better food when it happened to be given, or when invited to dinner by rich laymen; linen, cotton, or woollen garments, if dyed yellow and in three pieces (but only one change was allowed); houses, huts, or caves to dwell in, when not itinerating; ghee, honey, or molasses when out of health (Mahā-v' I. 30. 4).

Next the four chief Prohibitions (compare the Ten Prohibitions, p. 78), viz. :—(1) Unchastity and sexual acts

¹ I give these quetations to show the unsuitableness of the term.
*Ordination opplied to Pablagia and Upassupada in the S. B. E.

of any kind; (2) Taking anything not given, even a blade of grass; (3) Killing any living thing, even an ant, or worm, or plant; (4) Falsely claiming the extraordinary powers of a perfected saint (uttarimanussadhamma. Mahā-v° I. 78, 2).

Clearly there were great temptations to gain celebrity by claiming such powers, or else this fourth prohibition would not have terminated the ceremony.

So soon as a man was admitted to full monkhood, he went through a five years' course of instruction in the entire doctrine and discipline, under the preceptor (Upādhyāya, Āćārya) who had been previously chosen and was required to be of at least ton years' standing,

This was a modification of the Brāhmunical rule that a student (Brahma-ćāri) should study under his preceptor for thirty-six years, or less, until he knew the Veda.

The full Buddhist monk had in theory to dwell under trees or in huts formed of leaves (pān-sālā = paṇṇa-sāla = paṇṇa-sālā); but practically he resided in collections of simple mud or brick tenements, in cells, or in rows of caves hewn out of rocky hills. At any rate, collections of monastic dwellings, called Vihāras , were his usual abode during Vassa (or the rainy season, see p. 82); and at such times he had fellow-monks (saddhivihārika) living in companies around him, or in the same monastery.

Strict discipline was supposed to be enforced, and yet

In Mahā-vagga I. 30, 4, five kinds of dwellings are named besidestrees, viz. Vilairas, Addhayogas (a kind of home shaped like Garada).
• (prhsāda), mausions (harmyn), and caves (gahā).

there was no central authority, no Chief Hierarch, no Archbishop whom he was bound 'reverently to obey,'

Offences against the four forbidden acts were called Pārājikā āpatti, 'offences meriting expulsion from the community of monks (Saŭglaa).'

Then there were thirteen Sanglandisesa apatti, as well as certain Dukkata or less serious offences, requiring only confession before the Sangha, and dealt with by a Sangha-kamma, or act of a conclave of monks imposing some penance. There were penances (Prāyaś-ćitta) for lying, prevarication, abusive language, destroying vegetable or animal life, etc. (see Pātinokkha, Pāćittiyā dhammā, and pp. 62, 84). The following practices were also incumbent on all monks:—

(1) The wearing vestments given by laymen (not purchased) and consisting of three lengths of yellowcoloured rags; or, if entire lengths of cotton cloths were given, the saleable value had to be destroyed by tearing them into at least three pieces, and then sewing them together; (2) The owning no possessions except the three cloths, a girdle, bowl, razor, needle, and waterstrainer to prevent the swallowing of animalcula; (3) The living only on food collected in a wooden bowl by daily going from house to house, but without ever asking for it; (4) The eating at mid-day the one meal so collected and at no other time; (5) The fasting on four prescribed days; (6) The abiding in one snot for three or four months during Vassa, 'the rains' (from middle of June to middle of October), when itineration would involve trampling on vegetable and insect life; (7) The refraining from a recumbent posts:

circumstances; (8) The visiting cremation-grounds for meditation on the corruption of the body.

In truth it might almost be said that in every movement and action, in waking and sleeping, in dressing and undressing, in standing and sitting, in going out and coming in, in fasting and eating, in speaking and not speaking, the Buddhist monk had to submit to the most stringent regulations.

It was a noteworthy feature in Buddhist monachism that monks were never allowed to appear in public in a state of even semi-nuclity. 'Properly clad,' says the Sekhiyā dhammā (4), 'must the monk itinerate,' 'Not nakedness,' says the Dhamma-pada (141), 'can purify a mortal who has not overcome desires,' The monk's three garments (tićivara = tri-civara) were an inner one (antara-vāsaka), another wound about the thighs (saṅghāṭi) and an upper robe (uttarāsaṅga) worn loosely and brought round over the left shoulder. This constituted an important distinction between the Buddhist monks and the Jaina and other naked ascetics whose want of decency the Buddha condemned.

The Buddhist monk's daily life probably began by meditation and by his reciting or intoning (Bhāna, Sarabhañna) portions of the Law, or by hearing it recited, followed perhaps by lessons in doctrine, or by discussions or by confessions. Next came itineration for food, followed by the one noon-day meal. Then came rest and further meditation and recitation, while possibly the senior monks preached to laymen. Such preaching took place especially during Vassa. In later times the skilly duties included offering flowers, etc., at sacred shrines,

and repeating so-called prayers, which were merely forms of words used as charms.

To illustrate the immensely meritorious efficacy of constant recitation of the Law, a story is told of five hundred bats that lived in a cave where two monks daily recited the Dharma. These bats gained such merit by simply hearing the sound that when they died they were all re-born as mon and ultimately as goals.

Doubtless quarrels and faults of omission and commission occurred among the monks, especially during their residence together in Vassa (miscalled the Buddhist Lent). We read of six monks named Chabbaggiya who were coustantly committing offences. Hence a day called Pavāraņā (Pravāraṇā), 'invitation,' was kept at the end of Vassa, when all were invited to assemble for confession and for felicitation, if harmony had been preserved.

An important part of every monk's duties was confession on Uposatha (Upavasatha) or fast-days (miscalled the Buddhist sabbaths)—which were kept at first on two days in each month, at full and new moon (corresponding to the Daria and Paurpamäsa days of Brāhmanism), and afterwards also at the intermediate days of quartermoon. On these four Uposatha days the Pātimokkha or general confession (p. 62) was recited. The confession was by monks to each other, not by laymen to monks, though the four days were also observed by laymen, and we know that Asoka enjoined periodical ceremonies, and expression of sorrow for sins on the part of all his subjects. Such confession did not cause remission of sin or absolution in our sense, but only release from evil consequences by penances (p. 62).

We have learnt, then, that Buddhist manks were not under irrevocable vows. They undertook to obey rules of discipline, but took no actual vows—not even of obedience to a superior. Buddhist monkhood was purely voluntary, so that all were free to come and go. It had nothing hereditary about it like the rank of a Brahman.

We have also learnt, that the term 'priest' is not suitably applied to Buddhist monks. For true Buddhism has no ecclesiastical hierarchy, no clergy, no priestly ordination; no divine revelation, no ceremonial rites, no prayer, no worship in the proper sense of these terms. Each man was a priest to bimself in so far as he depended on himself alone for internal sanctification.

Evidently, too, all Buddhist monks were integral parts of one organic whole. It is true that in the end they were collected in various mounsteries, each of which practically became an independent Sangha (each under one Head). But in theory all were parts of one and the same brotherhood, which was republican and communistic in its constitution. And this word Sangha cannot be correctly rendered by 'church,' if by that term is meant an ecclesiastical body with legislative functions, embracing clergy and laity united in a common faith and under one Head; for as founded by the Buddha, it was not this. It was simply a vast fraternity intended to embrace all monks of the four quarters (caturdisa) of the world, from the Buddha himself and the perfected Arhat (p. 133), to every monk of the lowest degree, but not a single layman. Indeed in its highest sense the Sangha comprised only true Nirvana-seeking monks who had entered the paths of true sanctification (p. 132).

And here observe that, notwithstanding the stigma attached to unmarried women in India, Gautama in the end permitted an Order of Nuns (Pāli Bhikkhunī) and female novices (Sāmaņerī, p. 47). The Ćulla-vagga (X. 1. 3) relates how women were indebted to the intercession of a monk, Gautama's cousin Ānanda, for permission to form an Order, and how Mahā-prajāpatī, the Buddha's nurse (p. 24), became the first nun; yet when Ānanda first asked: 'How are we monks to behave when we see women?' Gautama replied: 'Don't see them.' 'But if we should see them, what are we to do?' 'Don't speak to them.' 'But if they speak to us, what then?' 'Let your thoughts be fixed in deep meditation' (Sati upatthāpetabbā. Mahā-parin' V. 25).

Clearly the Buddha was originally a misogynist as well as a misogamist, and wished his followers to be misogynists also. Even when he had been induced to admit the justice of the plea for women's rights, he placed his nuns under the direction of monks. They could only be admitted by monks, and were subject to the male Order in all matters of discipline. They were under eight special obligations, one of which was to rise up in the presence of a monk, even if a novice.

The Buddha's exhortation to the first run is noteworthy:—'Whatsoever, O Gotami (Mahā-prajāpati), conduces to absence of passion, to absence of pride, to wishing for little and not for much, to seclusion and not to love of society, to earnest effort and not to indolence, to contentment and not to querulousness, verily that is the true doctrine' (Culla-v' X. 5).

It was certainly a great gain for a woman when she

was permitted to become a nun (or a Theri); for, as a nun, she could even attain Arhatship. This is clearly laid down in Culla-vagga X, 1, 3, 4. No woman, however, could attain to Buddhahood without being born as a man, so that it could scarcely be said that in Buddha there is 'neither male nor female.'

Such, then, was the monachism which constituted the very pith and marrow of Buddhism. All truly enlightened disciples of Buddha were monks or nuns.

Let us not forget, however, that in practice Buddhism admitted lay-brothers, lay-sisters, married householders and working-men, as necessary adjuncts.

Yet they were only appendages. Of course the Buddha knew very well that it was not possible to enforce celibacy on all his followers. He knew that having probibited his monks from making or taking money or holding property, they would have to depend on lay-associates and householders for food, clothing, and habitation, and that, if every layman were to become a monk, there would be no work done, no food produced, no children born, and in time no humanity—nay, no Buddhism—left.

Universal monkhood, in short, might have been a consummation to be aimed at in some Utopia; but was practically unattainable. In fact Gautama had to take the world as he found it, and the very idea of a world perpetuating itself—according to his own theory of a constant succession of hirth, decay, and reproduction—implied that a youth, on reaching manhood, married, had children, worked and earned a livelihood for their support. He could not impose this burden on others.

Besides, the generality of people were in Gautama's day what they are in India now-a-days—bent on early marriage, and resolute in working hard for a livelihood. Even Manu only enjoined celibacy on young religious students and on old men, though there were occasional cases of perpetual (naishthika) Brahma-ćarios.

Without doubt, cellbacy in instances of extraordinary sanctity has always commanded respect in India; but in no country of the world has married life been so universally honoured. It is not very likely, then, that the following sentiments, enunciated by the Buddha, could have met with general approval:—

'A wise man should avoid married life (abrahmaćariyam) as if it were a burning pit of live coals* (Dhammika-Sutta 21).

'Full of hindrances is married life, defiled by passion. How can one who dwells at home live the higher life in all its purity?' (Tevijja-Sutta 47).

And in reality Buddho's auti-matrimonial doctrines did excite opposition. The people nurmured and said, 'He is come to bring childlessness among us, and widow-hood, and destruction of family-life.' Indeed, the two facts—first, that the foundations of Buddhism were not laid (as those of Christianity notably are), on the hallowed hearth of home and on the sacred rock of family-life with its daily round of honest work; and—secondly, that the precept enjoining monkhood and abstinence from marriage was not combined with any organized ecclesiastical hierarchy under a central government, are sufficient to account for the circumstance that Buddhism never gained any real stability in India.

No doubt lay-brethren were always welcomed; but they were bound to Buddhism by very slender ties in regard to dogma, and were only expected to conform to the simplest possible code of morality.

Probably the only form of admission for a layman was the repetition of the 24 syllables of the three-refuge (tri-sarana) formula:—'I go for refuge to the Buddha, his Law and his Order' (p. 78). It was of course understood that he was to abstain from the five gross sins (p. 126), but he was already bound to do so by the rules of Hindū caste and family-religion. The chief test of his Buddhism was his readiness to serve the manks. It was for this reason, I think, that lay-adherents were not called, as might have been axpected, Śrāvakas, 'Hearers,' but simply Upāsakas, 'Servers,' and in the case of women Upāsikās. They could not be called disciples of Buddha in the truest sense, unless they entered his monastic Order.

Of course the majority of Buddhist householders never cared to do this. Their chief religion consisted in giving food and clothing, earned by daily toil, to the monks. If they failed in this, there was only one punishment. They were forbidden the privilege of giving at all, and so of accumulating a store of merit. No monk was allowed to ask them for a single thing. Of course, too, the majority of Buddhist householders

^{&#}x27;Comparing Western with Eastern Monachine, I may remark that the chief duty of the lay-brethren attached to the Cistorcian monastery at Fountain's Abbey was to wait upon the marks, procure food and cook it for them; and we learn from the Times of Describer 24, 1885, that the same duty devolved on the Carthusian lay-brothers.

were worldly-minded; they were no believers in ultrapessimistic views of life. They looked for a life in some heaven, not Nievana. Yet in theory all laymen might enter the paths of sanctification (p. 132), and thousands of carnest men are said to have done so '.

A layman's progress, however, towards Arhatship, except through monkhood and abandoning the world, was almost hopelessly barred. At page 264 of the Milindapaüha it is implied that an earnest layman might become an Arhat, even while still a layman, but he had either to enter monkhood or else to pass away in Pari-nirväna (p. 140) at the moment of becoming so.

The best proof of the truth of this view of the matter is, that after a layman had attached himself to the Buddha, the Law, and the Order, he was not required to undergo any initiatory ceremony, like baptism, or to receive any stamp of membership, or to assume a peculiar dress, or to give up all belief in his family religion, or caste-customs. In short, he did not as a lay-brother break entirely with Hindúism.

That universal tolerance was of the very essence of Buddhism is indicated by Asoka's twelfth edict;— 'The beloved of the gods bonours all forms of religious faith—there ought to be reverence for one's own faith and no reviling of that of others.' Compare p. 126.

Nor did Gautama himself ever set an example of intolerance. He never railed at the Brilmans. He treated them with respect, and taught others to do so:

The Chronicles of Ceylon state that 80,000 laymen entered the paths in Kashmir. Compare Divyavadāna, p. 166, line 12; p. 271, 12.

and even adopted the title Brāhmana for his own saints and Arhats (Dhamma-pada 383-423).

What he opposed was priesteraft and superstition, not Brahmanism; as indeed other reformers had done before him. Probably the great receptivity of Buddhism was one of the causes that led to its decay in India.

Yet Gautama's victory over one of the most inveterate propensities in human nature—the tendency to seek salvation through a mediatorial caste of priests—was a wonderful achievement. This is proved by the fact that his followers in other countries became re-entangled in a network of priesteraft, even more enslaving than that out of which he had resented them.

Koeppen, Rhys Davids, and other writers have well shown that the Buddhism of Tibet, with its Populike grand Lāmas—its cardinals and abbets, monks and mendicant friars, muss and novices, canonized saints and angelie bosts, temples and costly shrines, monasteries and nunneries, images and pictures, alters and relics, robes and mitres, rosaries and consecrated water, litanies and chants, processions and pilgrimages, confessions and penances, bell-ringing and incense—is in everything, except doctrine, almost a counterpart of the Romish system. How little could the Buddha have foreseen such a development of his brotherhood of monks, whose chief duties were meditation and itineration!

And what is to be said of the present condition of the Buddhist monkhood? Do we see anywhere evidences of that enlightenment of mind which Buddhism claims as its chief characteristic?

When I was travelling in Ceylon, I met a few learned

monks, but the majority seemed to me idle, ignorant, and indifferent.

In Burma the monks are called Pungis (Phongies), and are a little more active. Every youth in Burma is supposed for a time to inhabit a monastery.

In Tibet the monks are called Lamas (a lower title being Gelong) and constitute a large proportion of the population. They are slaves to gross superstitions. Some are more devibelarmers, a belief in the power of evil spirits being the chief religion of the people.

In China the monks are called Ho-slang (or Ho-sang). They constitute the only section of the population who have a right to be called Buddhists, though, after all, they are mere pseudo-Buddhists. Professor Legge informs me that he has known a few learned men among them, and learned works have been written by them. But the general testimony of Europeans in China is that the mass of the monks there are simply drones, or aimless dreamers, who go through their ropetitions by rote. Almost all are conspicuous for apathy, incrtuess, and a vacant idiotic expression of countenance.

Clearly we have in their condition an example of the fact that even moral restraint, if carried to the extreme of extinguishing all the natural affections and desires, must inevitably be followed by a Nemesis. Surely we have in these monkish fraternities an illustration of the truth that any transgression of the laws of nature, common-sense, and reason—any suppression of the primary instincts of humanity, must in the end incur the penalty attached to every violation of the eternal ordinances of God.

LECTURE V.

The Philosophical Doctrines of Buddhism.

ONE of the most noteworthy points in the early history of Buddhistic thought is that while Gautama Buddha denied the existence of Bridana as a personal Creator, and repuliated the Veda and all Vedic sacrifices and ceremonial observances, he at the same time made the philosophical teaching of the Brahmans the point of departure for his own penuliar philosophical teaching.

Another noteworthy point is that while Buddhism was undoubtedly a modification of philosophical Brahmanism, the latter was also modified by an interchange with Buddhistic ideas.

It may certainly be questioned whether Gautama himself, in the early stages of his career, ever caused much offence to the most orthodox Brāhmans by the free expression of his opinions. He did not spare either his criticism or sarcasm, but it is well known that the Brāhmans were not only tolerant of criticism; they were equally critical themselves, and delighted in controversial discussions, as they do to this day.

In the Tevijja-Sutta an account is given of a discussion in which, though Gautama expressed bimself strongly, he does not seem to have excited any wrathin his opponent—a Brābman named Vāsettlas. The argument attributed to the Buddha is so remarkable that a portion of it may be given here:—

'Then you say, Vasettha, that not one of the Brahmans, or of their teachers, or of their pupils, even up to the seventh generation, has ever seen Brahman (the God of the Brahmans) face to face. And that even the Rishis of old, the utterers of the ancient verses, which the Brahmans of to-day so carefully intone and recite precisely as they have been handed down—even they did not pretend to know or to have seen where or whence or whither Brahman is. So that the Brahmans versed in the three Vedas have forsooth said thus: "To a state of union with that which we know not and have not seen, we can show the way and can say: 'This is the straight path, this is the direct way which leads him who acts according to it, into a state of union with Brahman'."

'Now what think you, Vasettha? Does it not follow, this being so, that the talk of the Brāhmans, versed though they be in the three Vedas, is foolish talk?

'Verily, Väsettha, that Brähmans versed in the three Vedas should be able to show the way to a state of union with that which they do not know, neither have seen—such a condition of things has no existence,

'As when a string of blind men are clinging one to the other, neither can the foremost see, nor can the middle one see, nor can the hindmost see, just so is the talk of the Brāhmans versed in the three Vedas'.'

These no doubt were trenchant words, but it might easily be shown that the Brähmans themselves did not

¹ See Tevijja-Sutra, S. B. E. 5 14, 15.

scruple to use almost as strong language against their own revelation. For instance, the Chandogya Upanishad (p. 473) speaks of the Veda as 'mere name' (nama eva). The Bribadāranyaka Upanishad declares that when a man is in a condition of knowledge, 'the gods are no gods to him, and the Veda no Veda; and the Mundaka describes the sacrificial Veda as inferior to Brahma-vidyā.

And in truth every Hindu was allowed to choose one of three ways of securing his own salvation.

The first was 'the way of works' (Karma-marga), that is to say, of sacrifices (Ynjha), of ceremonia) rites, of lustral washings, penances and pilgrimages, as enjoined in the Mantra and Brahmuna portion of the Veda, in Manu, the Law-books and parts of the Puranas.

The second was 'the way of faith' (blakti), meaning by that term devotion to one or other of certain commonly worshipped personal deities, -a way leading in later times to the worship of Siva and Vishnu (unfolded in the Puranas), and involving merely heartdevotion, without sacrificial or ceremonial acts.

The third was 'the way of knowledge' (Jňána), as set forth in the Upanishads.

The mediaval Brāhman Kumārila—a really historical teacher-advocated the first way; another teacher of less note, Sandilya, advocated the second; another celebrated historical teacher, Sankara, advocated the third.

Even in Gautama's time any one of these ways or all three together might be chosen, so long as the authority of the Brahmans was not impugned.

This, at least, is the general teaching of the Bhagavad-

gita-an eclectic work which is the most popular exponent of the Hindu creed .

Yet even the Author of the Bhagavad-gitā had a preference for the way of knowledge. In one passage (II. 42) he describes the Veda as 'mere flowery doctrine' (pushpitā vāć), and is careful to point out that works must be performed as acts of devotion leading to absorption into the Supreme (Brahma-nirvāṇam).

Indeed there can be no doubt that it was generally held by the Brahmans of Buddha's time that the way of knowledge was the highest way. But this way was not open to all. It was reserved for the privileged few—for the more intellectual and philosophicallyminded Brahmans. The generality of men had to content themselves with the first and second ways.

What the Buddha then did was this:—First he' stretched out the right hand of brotherhood to all mankind by inviting all without exception to join his fraternity of celibate manks, which he wished to be co-extensive with the world itself. Then he abolished the first and second ways of salvation (p. 95), that is, Yajña, 'sacrifices,' and Bhakti, 'devotion to personal gods,' and substituted for these meditation and moral conduct as the only road to true knowledge and emancipation. And then, lastly, he threw open this highest way

The venerable Svānu Srī Sačridāmanda Sarasvatī, in sending me a copy of the Bhagavad-gitā with a metrical commentary, says, 'It is the best of all books on the Hindū religion, and contains the essence of all kinda of religious philosophy.' I find in the Madras Times for October 29, 1886, the following: 'At a meeting of the "Society for the Propagation of True Religion," at 6 page to-day, the Bhagavadgitā will be read and explained.'

of true knowledge to all who wished to enter it, of whatever rank or caste or mental calibre they might be, not excepting the most degraded.

Without doubt the distinguishing feature in the Buddha's gospel was that no living being, not even the lowest, was to be shut out from true enlightenment.

And here it will be necessary to inquire more closely into the nature of that knowledge which the Buddha thus made accessible to every creature in the universe.

Was it some deep mystery? Some occult doctrine of physical or metaphysical science? Some startling revelation of a law of nature never before imparted to the world? Was the Buddha's open way very different from the old, well-fenced-off Brahmanical way?

Of one point we may be certain. He was too sensible to cast aside all ancient traditions. Nor was he a mere enthusiast claiming to be the sole possessor of a new secret for regenerating society.

Unhappily, however, we are here met by a difficulty. The Buddha never, like Muhammad, wrote a book, or, so far as we know, a line. He was the Socrates of India, and we are obliged to trust to the record of his sayings (see p. 38). Still we have no reason to doubt the genuineness of what was for some time handed down orally in regard to the doctrines he taught, and we are struck with the fact that Gautama called his own knowledge Bodhi (from budh, 'to understand'), and not Veda (from vid, 'to know'). Probably by doing so he wished to imply that his own knowledge was attainable by all through their own intuitions, inner consciousness, and self-enlightening intellect, and was

to be distinguished from Veda or knowledge obtainable through the Brahmans alone, and by them through supernatural revelation only. Hence, too, he gave to every being destined to become a Buddha the title Bodhi-sattva (Bodhi-satta), 'one having knowledge derived from self-enlightening intellect for his essence.'

But it should be noted, that even in the choice of a name derived from the Sanskrit root built, the Buddlar only adopted the phraseology of the Sankhya philosophy and of the Brahmanas. The Sankhya system made Buddhi, 'intellect,' its great principle (Mahat), and the Satapatha-brahmana called a man who had attained to perfect knowledge of Self prati-buddha. It may be pointed out, too, that Manu (IV. 204) uses the same root when he calls his wise man Budha.

Moreover, the doctrines which grew out of his own special knowledge Gautama still called *Dharma* (Dhamma), 'law,' using the very same term employed by the Brahmans—a term expressive of law in its most comprehensive sense, as comprising under it the physical laws of the Universe, as well as moral and social duties.

In what, then, did the Buddha's Dharma differ from that of the Brahmans? One great distinction certainly was that it contained no esoteric (rahasya) and metaphysical doctrines in regard to matter and spirit, reserved for the privileged few; yet some of its rootideas were after all mere modifications of the Sankhya, Yoga, and Vedanta systems of philosophy. His way of knowledge, though it developed into many paths, had-

NIV. 7. 2. 17. This was first pointed out by Professor A. Weber.

the same point of departure. It was a knowledge of the truth, that all life was merely one link in a series of successive existences, and inseparably bound up with misery. Moreover as there were two causes of that misery—lust and ignorance—so there were two cures.

The first cure was the suppression of lust and desire, especially of all desire for continuity of existence.

The second cure was the removal of ignorance, Indeed Ignorance was, according to Gautama, the first factor in the misery of life, and stands first in his chain of causation (p. 102). Not, however, the Vedantist's ignorance—not ignorance of the fact that man and the universe are identical with God, but ignorance of the four truths of Buddhism (p. 43):—ignorance that all life is misery, and that the misery of life is caused by indulging lusts, and will cease by suppressing them.

It would be easy to show how all Indian philosophy was a mere scheme for getting rid of the bugbear of metempsychosis, and how common was the doctrine that everything is for the worst in the worst of all possible worlds. This was taught by the Brahmans five centuries B.C., and continued to be a thoroughly Hindu idea long after the disappearance of Buddhism. Witness the following from the Maitrayani Upanishad:—

In this weak body, ever liable
To wrath, ambition, avarice, illusion,
To fear, grief, envy, hatred, separation
From those we hold most dear, association
With those we hate; continually exposed
To hunger, thirst, disease, decreptude,
Emeciation, growth, decline and death,
What relish can there be for true enjoyment?

100 THE PHILOSOPHICAL DOCTRINES OF BUDDHISM.

Also the following, from Mann (VI. 77):-

This body, like a house composed of the (five) elements, with bones for its rafters, temlons for its connecting links, flesh and blood for its mortar, skin for its covering; this house filled with impurities, infested by sorrow and old age, the seat of disease, full of pain and possion, and not lasting—a man eaght certainly to abundan.

Also Bhartri-hari (Vairāgya-šataka III. 32. 50):—

Enjoyments are alloyed by fear of sickness. High rank may have a full, abundant wealth is subject to exactions, dignity Encounters risk of insult, strength is ever in danger of enfectblement by focs, A handsome form is josparded by women. Scripture is open to assaults of critics, Merit incurs the spite of wicked men, The body lives in constant dread of death—One course alone is proof against alarms, Renounce the world, and enfety may be won.

One hundred years is the appointed span Of human life, one half of this goes by In sleep and night; one half the other half In childhool and old age; the rest is passed to sickness, separation, pain, and service— How can a human being find delight In such a life, vain as a watery bubble?

No doubt this kind of pessimism has always found advocates in all ages, and among all nations in Europe as well as in Asia. It was a favourite idea with the Stoics, and it has found favour with Schopenhauer, Von Hartmann, and other modern philosophers; and Shakespeare makes Hamlet give expression to it.

^{*} Centenarians (Satāyus, Sata-varsha) seem to have been rather common in India in ancient times, if we may judge by the allusions to them in Manu and other works. See Manu III. 186; IL 135: 137.

Happily the general tone of European philosophical thought is in another key, and the admirers of Aristotle still constitute a majority in Europe. The great Stagirite described God as 'Energy,' and in dealing with Solon's dictum that 'no man can be called happy while be lives,' gave expression to a different belief. A good man's virtuous energies, he asserted, are in this present life a genuine source of happiness to him; misfortunes cannot shake his well-balanced character; he surmounts the worst sufferings by generous magnanimity',

Even in the East a greater than Aristotle and no less an Authority than the true 'Light of the world'—bade men rejoice and loop for joy under the most trying circumstances of life, and prize His gift of Eternal Life atheir highest good.

In India, on the contrary, the Upanishads and systems of philosophy which followed on them, all harped on the same string. They all dwelt on the same minor keynote. Their real object was not to investigate truth, but to devise a scheme for removing the misery believed to result from repeated bodily existence and from all action, good or bad, in the present, previous, and future births.

The Sankhya (I. 1) defines the chief aim of man to be deliverance from the pain incident to bodily life and energy; or according to the Nyaya (I. 2), from the pain resulting from birth, actions, and false knowledge

I here merely give the substance of what may be found only stated in Aristotle's Ethics, I. t and IV. 3.

while the Vedanta considers that ignorance alone fetters the soul of man to a body, and the Yoga defines the divine Purusha (= the perfect man of Buddhism) as a being unaffected by pain (klesa), acts, consequences of acts, and impressions derived from acts done in previous births (āsaya = sanskāra).

Gautama's sympathy with these ideas is shown by the twelve-linked chain of causation, put forth by him as an accompaniment to his four fundamental truths (p. 43), and thus expressed (Mahā-vagga I, 1, 2):—

From Ignorance comes the combination of formations or tendencies (instincts derived from former births); from such formations comes consciousness (vijñāna); from consciousness, individual being (nāma-rūpa, name and form); from individual being, the six organs of sense (including mind); from the six organs, contact (with objects of sense); from contact, sensation (vedanā); from sensation, desire (lust, thirst, tanhā = trishnā); from desire, clinging to life (upādāna); from continuity of becoming (bhava); from continuity of becoming, birth; from birth, decay and death; from decay and death, suffering.

It is difficult to discover a strictly logical sequence in this curious twelve-linked chain. The first link is a

That is, Samkhārā = Sanskrit Sanskrāh pl. (see p. 109), 'qualities forming character.' In the Vaiseshika system Sanskāra is one of the twenty-four qualities, the self-reproductive quality. In the Yoga system Sanskāra = Āsaya, 'impressions derived from actions done, in previous births.' According to Childers, Sanphāro is practically = Karms, 'act.' It may also stand for 'matter,' and for a quality, or mode of being; e.g. not only for a plant but for its greenness.

cause, the ten following are both causes and effects, while the last is an effect only. The second (saṃkhārā) is presented to us afterwards as one of the Skandlas (p. 109), and we have the whole inverted in a kind of circular chain in the form of question and answer, thus:—

What is the cause of misery and suffering? Answer—Old age and death. What is the cause of old age and death? Answer—Birth. Of birth? Answer—Continuity of becoming. Of continuity of becoming? Answer—Clinging to life, Of clinging to life? Answer—Desire, Of desire? Answer—Sensation or perception. Of sensation? Answer—Contact with the objects of sense. Of contact with objects? Answer—The organs of sense. Of the organs? Answer—Name and form, or individual being. Of individual being! Answer—Consciousness? Answer—Combination of formations or tendencies (or those material and mental predispositions derived from previous births which tend to form character, compare p. 109). Of such formations? Answer—Iguorance.

In making Ignorance (Avidyā) the first cause of the misery of life, Gautama agreed with the Vedānta (though he explained Ignorance differently, see p. 99), while in the remaining chain of causes (Nidāna) we detect his sympathy with the Sāńkhya theory of a chain of producers and products.

His own scheme of causation (often called Paticcasamuppado) occupies an important place in Buddhistic philosophy, as supplementary to, and complementary of, the four traths (p. 43). It was thought out before them (see p. 39) and is equally revered. It is on this account that the following celebrated formula is constantly repeated like a short creed, and is found carved on numerous Buddhist monuments:—

'Conditions (or laws) of existence which proceed from a cause, the cause of these hath the Buddha explained, as also the cessation (or destruction) of these. Of such truths is the Great Sramona the teacher ...

This was the formula repeated by Assaji to Săriputta and Moggallāna (p. 47), when they wished to join the Buddha and asked for a summary of the spirit (artha), not the letter (vyaŭjana), of his doctrine (Mahā-v° I. 23. 5). Certainly the sorites-like form of statement in the scheme of causation had charms for Oriental thinkers.

Moreover the Buddha's method of clothing old truths in a new dress, or—to adopt another metaphor—his plan of putting new wine into the latest plan in something very attractive to all Indian minds.

Of what kind, then, was the new dress in which Gautama clothed the great central dectrine of Indian philosophy—the dectrine of metempsychosis, involving the perpetuation of the misery of life?

The Buddha, like all Indians, was by nature a meta-

The Pali in Mahd-v° L 23. 5. is:—Ye dhamma hetuppublava tesam hetum Tathagato also tesam én yo nirodho evamvadi Mahasamono. The form Tathagato is also common in Sanskyit versions. The metrical form of the sentence has become broken.

Professor Cowell informs me that the Sanskrit given in an eld MS, at Cambridge is:—'Ye dharmā betu-prabhava hetum teshām Tathāgataḥ | Hy avadat teshām ća yo nirodha evam-vidi Makk-Bramanah.' Burnouf gives a slightly different version, thus:—Ye dharmā betu-prabhavās teshām hetum Tathāgata uvāća teshām ća etc. Sometimes both ovadat and urāća are omitted.

physician. He had great sympathy with the philosophy of the Upanishads. How was it that he disbelieved in the existence of Spirit as distinct from bodily organism? A little consideration will perhaps make clear how he was brought to his own peculiar agnostic view.

Probably before his so-called enlightenment and attainment of true knowledge, he was as firm a believer in the real existence of one Universal Spirit as the most orthodox Brāhman. He had become imbued with Brāhmanical philosophy while sitting at the feet of his two teachers Alara and Uddaka (p. 29). At that time there were no definite or formulated philosophical systems, separated from each other by sharp lines. But the Sankhya, Yoga, and Vedanta systems were use suming shape, and the doctrines they embadded had been foreshadowed in the Upanishads, and were orally current.

In short, it had been repeatedly stated in the Upanishads, that nothing really existed but the one universally present impersonal Spirit, and that the whole visible world was really to be identified with that Spirit,

Then it followed as an article of faith that man's spirit, deluded into a temporary false idea of separate independent personal existence by the illusion of ignorance, was also identical with that One Spirit, and ultimately to be re-absorbed into it.

Further, it followed that man's spirit, while so deluded and so separated for a time from the One Spirit, was compelled to migrate through innumerable bodily forms, and that such migration entailed misery, from which there was no escape except by a process of disillusionment, that is, by dissipating the illusion of separate individuality, through the acquisition of perfect knowledge leading to re-union with the One Spirit, as the river blends with the ocean. And such knowledge was best gained by suppression of the passions, abandonment of all worldly connexions, and abstinence from all action. Finally, it was held, with apparent inconsistency, that the storing up of merit by good works assisted in effecting this object by raising a man, not yet fit for union with the supreme Spirit, to forms of existence in which such union might be accomplished.

Now it is obvious that to believe in the ultimate merging of man's personal spirit in One impersonal Spirit, is virtually to deny the ultimate existence of any human spirit at all. Nay more—it is virtually to deny the existence of a supreme universal Spirit also.

For how can a merely abstract universal Spirit, which is unconscious of personality, be regarded as possessing any real existence worth being called true life?

To assert that such a Spirit is pure abstract Entity or (according to Vedanta phrocodogy) pure Existence (without anything to exist for), pure Thought or even pure Consciousness (without anything to think about, or be conscious about), pure Joy (without anything to rejoice about), is practically to reduce it to pure non-entity.

All that Gautama did, therefore, was to jurge Brahmanism of a dogma which appeared to him to be a mere sham (Brahma-jula I. 26).

He simply eliminated as incapable of proof the doctrine of a purely abstract, incorporcal spirit or self,

whether human or divine. The assertion that any soul or self or Ego really existed (Atta-vado) was an error. It formed one of the constituents of Upadana (p. 109), and was the first of the ten fetters (Sakkaya-ditthi, p. 127).

And with the rejection of this dogma, as incapable of demonstration, he found himself compelled to reject also, as beyond the range of man's cognizance, the doctrine of any Supreme Being higher than the perfectly enlightened man. Like Kapila in the Sankhya aphorisms (I. 92, V. 10) he felt bound to admit: 'It is not proved that there is a God.'

This, indeed, is the chief foundation on which rests the assertion that Buddhism is a more system of atheistic negations. And there can be no doubt that from one point of view its statements are steeped in negations, or rather perhaps in evasions. Its morality has been described as more negative than positive; but this is scarcely correct, and it would be fairer to say that it delights in telling men to abstain from doing evil, rather than in urging them to active exertions for the good of others. It has many positive precepts.

But if there was no probability of a soul existing separately from a body after death, how could there be any soul-transmigration? How could there be any agreement between the teaching of the Buddha and that of the Brühmans, in regard to this important central dogma? The real fact was that the divergence of the Buddhist doctrine from the Brühmanical, as stated in the Upanishads, was not greater than

was to be expected from the difference of belief between the two systems in regard to the existence of soul,

Plato, we know, held that souls found their prisons in the same natures' at death, so that an effeminate man might be re-born as a woman, a tyrannical man as a wolf, and so on. In Manu's Law-book is set forth a triple order of soul-transmigration through lower, middle, and higher planes of existence, resulting from good, middling, and bad acts, words, and thoughts, Thus-to instance only the lower-the soul of a man who spoke ill of his teacher was destined to pass into an ass or a dog (II. 201), the soul of a thief might occupy a mouse (XII. 62), the soul of one who neglected his caste-duties might pass into a demon (XII. 71, 72); and greater crimes might lead to the soul's being condemned to occupy plants, stones, and minerals. Then there was also an intermediate condition of the soul. According to one idea it went to the moon; according to another it became a hungry ghost which required food to be offered to it at the Sraddha ceremonics.

This theory of transmigration, according to the Hindus, explained the origin of evil. Evil must proceed from antecedent evil, and the resulting penalty must be torne by the evil-doer in succeeding existences. This was the terrible incubus which it was the great object of Indian philosophers to remove. It was equally Gautama's object, but how could be accept soul-transmigration, denying as he did the existence of any spirit, as distinct from material organization 4. He therefore put forth a view of his own, thus;—
Every being is composed of five constituent elements

called Skandhas (Páli Khandha), which have their source in Upadana (p. 103) and are continually combining, dissolving, and recombining, viz. 1. Form (rapa), i.e. the organized body. 2. Sensation (vedanā) of pain or pleasure, or of neither, arising from contact of eye, ear, nose, tongue, skin, and mind with external objects. 3. Perception (sanna = sanjaa) of ideas through the same sixfold contact. 4. Aggregate of formations (samkhāra = sanskāra, i.e. combination of properties or faculties or mental tendencies, fifty-two in number, forming individual character and derived from previous existences; compare the similar samklara pl. at p. 102). Consciousness (rinnana = vijnana) or thought. This fifth is the most important. It is the only soul recognized by Buddhists. Theoretically it perishes with the other Skandhas, but practically is continued, since its exact counterpart is reproduced in a new body.

For although, when a man dies, all the five constituents of existence are dissolved, yet by the force resulting from his actions (karma), combined with Upādāna, 'clinging to existence' (one form of the fetters at p. 127), a new set of five, of which consciousness is still the dominant faculty, starts into being. The process of the new creation is so instantaneous that it is equivalent to the continuance of the same personality, pervaded by the same consciousness; though each personality is only really connected with the previous by the force of acts done and character

¹ Sometimes a human being is said to be made up of the five elements—ether, air, fire, water, earth—with a sixth called Vijnana.

formed in each—such force operating through Upadana. In short, to speak of transmigration of souls in Buddhism gives a wrong idea. Metenpsychosis with Buddhists resolves itself into continuous metamorphosis or Palingenesis. For no true Buddhist believes in the passing of a soul from one body to another, but rather in the passing on of what may be called act-force, or of the merit and demerit resulting from a man's acts, so as to cause a continuous succession of transformationsa succession which may be compared to the rolling on of a wheel through different scenes and over every variety of ground; or to the burning on, through day and night, of a flame which is not the same flame at the beginning of the day and end of the night, and yet is not different. It is this act-force (Karma), combined with Upadana, 'clinging to existence' (- abhi-nivesa hr the Yoga II. o), which is the connecting link between each man's past, present, and future bodies.

In its subtle and irresistible operation it may be compared to stored-up chemical or electric energy. It is a force which continually creates and re-creates the whole man, and perpetuates his personal identity through separate forms, whether it compels him to ascend or descend in the scale of being,

Yet to say that personality is transmitted, when there is no consciousness of any continuity of identity, amounts, after all, to denial of continuous existence.

Be it observed, too, that the scale of existence is limited in Buddhism to six classes of beings—gods, men, demons, animals, ghosts, and dwellers in hell (p. 121). Transmigration is not extended, as in the

Brühmanical system, to plants, stocks, and stones; though a man could be born as a tree-god (p. 112).

Gautama Buddha himself was merely the last link in a long chain of corporeal forms, and he had been preceded by twenty-four Buddhas, who were to previous ages of the world what he was to the present. Every one of these Buddhas was gifted with the faculty of recollecting his previous personalities, and Gautama often gave an account of his own former existences. The stories of about five hundred and fifty of his births (Jātakas) are even now daily repeated to eager listeners in every Buddhist country, and are believed to convey important lessons, though full of puccilities.

The interchange of ideas between Brahmanism and Buddhism is well exemplified not only by the twentyfive Buddhas, who correspond to the fourteen Manus, or representative men, in each world-period (Antara), but also by the birth-stories, many of which are mere modifications of old fables long current in India, while others have been imported from Buddhism into Sanskrit literature. They constantly remind one of similar stories in the Panca-tantra, Hitopadesa, Rāmāyana, and Mahā-bhārata. The noteworthy point about the repeated births of Gautama Buddha is, that there appears to have been no Darwinian rise from lower to higher forms; but a mere jumble of metamorphoses. Thus we find him born four times as Maha-brahma, twenty times as Indra, once as a hare, eighty-three times as an ascetic, fifty-eight as a king, twenty-four as a Brahman, once as a gamester, eighteen times as a monkey, six as an elephant, eleven as a deer, once as a dog, four times as a scrpent, six as a snipe, once as a frog, twice as a fish, forty-three times as a tree-god, twice as a pig, ten times as a lion, four as a cock, twice as a thief, once as a devil-dancer, and so on. He was never born as a woman, nor as an insect, nor as a Preta, nor an inhabitant of hell (p. 119), and in all his births he was a Bodhi-sattva (pp. 98, 135). And in all he suffered and sacrificed himself for the good of the world.

Here is the substance of an account of Gautama's birth as a hare, given by himself (Cariyā-Piṭaka I. 10, translated by Dr. Oldenberg):—

'In one of my lives I was a hare living in a forest. I ate grass and did no one any harm. An ape, a jackal, and an otter dwelt with me. I used to teach them their duties and tell them to abstain from evil and give alms on the four fast-days in every month. They did as I told them, and gave beans, corn, and rice. Then I said to myself :- Suppose a worthy object of charity passes by, what can I give him! I live on grass only; I cannot offer a starving man grass; I must give him myself. Thereupon the god Sakra, wishing to test my sincerity, came in a Bralman's form and asked me for food, When I saw him I said joyfully :- "A noble gift will I give thee, O Brahman; thou observest the precepts; thou painest no creature; thou wilt not kill me for food. But go, collect wood, place it in a heap, and kindle a fire. Then I will roast myself, and thou may'st eat me."

'He said :- "So be it," and went and gathered wood and kindled a fire.

'When the wood began to send forth flame, I leaped into the midst of the blazing fire.

'As water quenches heat, so the flames quelled all the sufferings of life. Cuticle and skin, flesh and sinews, bones, ligaments, and heart—my whole body with all its limbs—I gave to the Brahman.'

Perhaps the best and most often recited Jātaka is the last birth but one, in which he was born as prince Vessantara (Vaišyāntara). This is called the Mahājātaka, 'great birth.' It may be summarized thus:—

'Vessantara (afterwards Buddha) was so liberal that he gave to every one who asked. Among his possessions was a white elephant, which had the power of bringing down rain whenever it was needed. At last he gave away this also to a neighbouring country suffering from drought. This so incensed his own people that they persuaded the king his father to banish him with his wife and two children to the forest. They set out in a chariot drawn by horses. First he gave away the horses and next the chariot to Brahmans who begged for them. Then when another Brahman asked for the children, Vessantara gave them up too, saying: "May I for this act become a Buddha!" In short his sufferings and theirs in banishment, and his generosity to every one, led to his recall with great rejoicings. When he died he was born again in the Tushita heaven, whence he descended as a white elephant into the womb of Maya, and was born as Gautama' (p. 23).

Another wise man of the East, who lived long before Gautama, spoke of 'the path of the just shining more and more unto the perfect day.' Of this kind of pro-

gressive advance towards higher planes of perfection, the Indian sage knew nothing. Nor to the Buddha, of course, would the Christian idea of 'original sin,' or of imputed Perfection have conveyed any meaning whatever. With Gautama, righteousness and unrightcourness, holiness and sin, were the product of a man's own acts. They were produced by no one but himself, and they were merely troublesome forces (see p. 124) causing, in the one case, a man's re-birth either in one of the heavens or in higher earthly corporeal forms, and, in the other, his re-birth in one of the hells or in lower corporeal forms. 'Not in the heavens,' says the Dhamma-pada (127), 'not in the midst of the sea, not if thou hidest thyself in the clefts of the mountains, wilt thou find a place where thou canst escape the force resulting from thy evil actions."

Here also is the substance of a passage in the Devaduta-sutta (translated by Dr. Oldenberg) ;—

'Do not relatives and friends welcome a man who has been long travelling, when he returns safely to his home? Even so, a righteous man, when he passes from this world to another, is welcomed by his good works, as by friends.

'Through the six states of transmigration does the power of our actions lead us. A life in the heavens awaits the good. The wantens of hell drag the wicked before the king of hell, Yama, who says to them:—
"Did you not, when on earth, see the five divine messengers, sent to warn you—the child, the old man, the sick, the criminal suffering punishment, and the dead corpse?"

'And the wicked man answers :- "I did see them."

'And didst thou not think within thyself:—"I also am subject to birth, old age, death. Let me be careful to do good works?"

'And the wicked man answers :- "I did not, sire ; neglected in my folly to think of these things."

'Then king Yama pronounces his doom:—"These thy evil deeds are not the work of thy mother, father, relations, friends, advisers. Thou alone hast done them all; thou alone must gather the fruit." And the warders of hell drag him to the place of torment, rivet him to red-hot iron, plunge him in glowing seas of blood, torture him on heaps of burning coal; and he dies not, till the last residue of his guilt has been expiated."

And this Buddhist theory of every man's destiny being dependent on his own acts is quite in keeping with Brähmanical ideas. 'In that (new body) he is united with the knowledge gained in the former body, and then again goes on working for perfection; for even against his will he is forced on (from one body to another) by his former works' (Bhagavad-gitā VI. 43, 44). And again:—'The act committed in a former birth (pūrva-janma-kritam karma), that is called one's destiny;' and again, 'As from a lump of clay a workman makes what he pleases, even so a man obtains whatever destiny he has wrought out for himself' (Hitopadesa, Introduction). In Brähmanism the influence of Karma or 'act' in determining every being's form at the time of his own re-birth is universal.

Thus also the Nyaya of Gautama (III. 132) affirms

that the new body (after death) is produced through the irresistible force of actions done in the previous body (pūrva-krita-phalānubaudhāt tul-utpattih). The cosmogony of the same philosophy (Vaiseshika branch), taught that the concurrence of eternal atoms to form the world was the result of Adrishta or the 'unsee force' derived from the acts of a previous world.

We are reminded, too, of our poet's own sentiment 'Our deeds still travel with us from afar, And what we have been makes us what we are;' and of Dou Quixote's saying, 'Every man is the son of his own works;' and of Wordsworth's, 'The child is father of the man;' and of Longfellow's, 'Lives of great men all remind us, we can make ourselves sublime.'

In short, we are the outcome of ourselves. Nor can ceremonies avail aught, nor can devotion to personal gods avail aught, nor can anything whatever possess the slightest efficacy to save a man from his own acts.

It is said that Buddhism leaves the will unfettered; but surely fatalism is taught when the force of one's own deeds in previous births is hold to be irresistible.

The only creator, then, recognized by true Buddhists is Act-force. 'My action is the womb that bears me,' says the Augustum Nikaya. It is this Act-force that creates worlds. It is this Act-force, in conjunction with Upadama (p. 100), that creates all beings in any of the six classes into which they are divided—gods, men, demons, animals, ghosts, and the dwellers in hell. We often talk of the force of a dead man's acts—of his being dead and yet speaking. It is this force which in Buddhism resists death; for no force can ever be lost.

And what does the modern Positivist philosopher assert? He maintains that both body and mind are resolved into their elements at death. The only immortal part of us consists in the good deeds, words, thoughts, and influences we leave behind us, to be made use of by our descendants and improved on for the elevation of humanity. And the aggregate of these, combined with the force of will, constitute, according to the Buddhist, a power strong enough to re-create not only human beings but the whole material world.

It was thus that the force of Gautama's own acts had constantly re-created him through a long chain of successive personalities, terminating in the perfect Buddha, who has no further births to undergo.

Turn we now to that division of the Buddhist system which concerns itself with the external universe, and seeks to explain its constitution, form, and the various divisions of which it consists.

And here we must be careful to note ' reculiar views of Buddhism, notwithstanding the admixture of Brühmanical ideas.

For Buddhism has no cosmogony like the San! Vedanta, and Vaiseshika. Nor does it explain the creation of the universe, in our rense. It only concerns itself with cosmology, and it dissents from Brahmanical cosmology in declining to admit the eternity of anything whatever, except change or revolution or a succession of revolutions. Buddhism has no Creator, no creation, no original germ of all things, no soul of the world, no personal, no impersonal, no supramundanc, no antemundanc principle.

It might indeed have been supposed that since Gautama denied the eternal existence of either a personal God or of Spirit, he would at least have given eternal existence to matter.

But no; the only eternal things are the Causality of Act-force and the succession of cause and effect—the eternity of 'Becoming,' not of 'Being.'

The Universe around us, with all its visible phenomena, must be recognized as an existing entity, for we see before our eyes evidence of its actual existence. But it is an entity produced out of nonentity, and destined to lapse again into nonentity when its time is fulfilled.

For out of nothingness it came, and into nothingness must it return—to re-appear again, it is true, but as a new Universe brought into being by the accumulated force of its predecessor's acts, and not evolved out of any eternally existing spiritual or material germ of any kind

> Worlds on worlds are rolling ever From creation to decay; Like the hubbles on a river, Sparkling, bursting, borne away. (HELLAS.)

Or like lotuses, for ever unfolding and then decaying, each decay containing the germ of a new plant; or like an interminable succession of wheels for ever coming into view, for ever rolling onwards, disappearing and reappearing; for ever passing from being to non-being, and again from non-being to being. It was this cesseless rotation that led to the wheel being adopted as the favourite symbol in Buddhism (p. 122).

Christianity recognizes in a very different way this 'law of circularity' in the physical world, as the

Rev. Hugh Macmillan has ably pointed out.

As to the question from whom? or whence? or how? came the original force or impetus that started the first movement, the Buddha hazarded to opinion. He held this to be an inexplicable mystery—an insoluble riddle. He confessed himself to be a thorough Agnostic. He saw nothing but countless eyeles of causes and effects, and never undertook to explain the first cause which set the first wheel in motion. It was not, then, without a deep significance that Gautama placed Ignorance first in his chain of Causation (p. 102. Note, however, the explanation given at p. 99).

After all, these Buddhistic speculations amount to little else than Brähmanism stripped of some of its transcendental mysticism. We know, for example, that the true Vedänta philosophy makes the Universe proceed out of an eternal Illusion, or Ignorance associated with the impersonal Spirit Brahman, into which it is

again absorbed.

Can it be affirmed, then, a Buddhist might say, that either this pure impersonal Spirit (or Ignorance) is virtually very different from pure nothingness!

120 THE PHILOSOPHICAL DOCTRINES OF BUDDHISM.

What says the author of Rig-veda X. 120 ?-

In the beginning there was neither mought nor aught.

Then there was neither sky nor atmosphere above.

Then first came darkness hid in darkness, gloom in gloom;

Next all was water, all a class indiscreet,

In which the One lay void, shrouded in nothingness.

Then as to the vast periods called Kalpas or ages, during which (as in Brāhmanism) constant Universes are supposed to appear, disappear, and re-appear:—

Let it be supposed, say Buddhist writers, that a solid rock forming a vast cube sixteen miles high, and the same in length and breadth, were lightly rubbed once in a hundred years with a piece of the finest cloth, and by this slight friction reduced in countless ages to the size of a mange-seed; that would still give you no idea of the immense duration of a Buddhist Kalpa.

And what, in conclusion, is the existing Universe? Buddhist writers make it consist of an infinite number of Ćakkavalas (Ćakra-valas) or vast circular planes, which for convenience may be called spheres. Each sphere has thirty-one Satta-lokas (Sattva-lokas) or dwelling-places of six classes of living beings, rising one above the other and distributed under three world-systems, built up in successive tiers through infinite space, below, upon, and above Mount Meru (or Sumeru)—the ideal central point of the whole. This gigantic mythical mountain forms the mighty base or pivot of the sphere.

First comes Hell with 136 divisions, to receive 136 varieties of offenders, all in tiers one above the other, and lying deep under the earth in the lower regions of the Cakra-vala. To be re-born in Hell (Naraka) is the worst of all the six kinds of existence, reserved for the worst evil-doers, and although the punishment is not eternal, its shortest duration is for five hundred years of Hell, each day equalling fifty years of Earth. In Brahmanism there are twenty-one hells (Manu IV. 88-90). Buddhism originally had only eight. The most terrific (Avići) is for revilers of Buddha and his Law.

Above the subdivisions of Hell come the other sensuous worlds (Kāma-lokas), thus:—(2) the world of animals; (3) that of Pretas or ghosts; (4) that of Asuras or demons; (5) the earth, or world of men, with concentric circles of seven seas.

Having distributed all possible places of habitation for migrating beings under the three heads of Hell, four lower worlds, and twenty-six heavens (described at p. 206), Buddhism holds that there are only six forms or ways (gati) of existence through which living beings can pass, and under which every thing that has life must be classed, and of these the first two ways are good, the last four bad, thus:—1. Gods; 2. Men; 3. Asuras, or demons, inhabiting spaces under the earth; 4. Animals; 5. Pretas, or ghosts, recently inhabitants of earth, and ever consumed with hunger and thirst; 6. Beings undergoing torment in the hells.

As to the gods, bear in mind that Buddhism recognized most of the deities of Hinduism. See p. 206.

Such gods existed in subtle corporeal forms, and, though not omnipotent, were capable of working benefit or harm. They were subject to the universal law of dissolution, and after death were succeeded by others, so that there was not one Brahmā or one Šakra, but many successive deities so named, and many classes of deities under them. They had no power of effecting any person's salvation. On the contrary, they had to see to their own, and were inferior to the perfected man.

Moreover, to be born in the world of the gods seems not to have implied any vast accumulation of merit, for we read of a certain frog that from simply listening to the Buddha's voice, while reciting the Law, was born as a god in the Trayastripsa heaven (Hardy, p. 392).

In short, the constant revolving of the wheel of life in one eternal circle, according to fixed and immutable laws, is perhaps after all the sum and substance of the philosophy of Buddhism. And this eternal wheel or circle has, so to speak, six spokes representing six forms of existence,

When any one of the six classes of beings dies, he must be born again in some one of these same six classes, for there are no other possible ways (gati) of life, and he cannot pass into plants, stones, and inorganic matter, as in the Brahmanical system (see p. 108). If he be born again in one of the hells he is not thereby debarred from seeking salvation, and even if he be born in heaven as a god, he must at some time or other leave it and seek after a higher state still—that of the perfect man who has gained Nirvāṇa and is soon to achieve the one consummation worth living for, the one crown worth striving for—extinction of personal existence in Pari-nirvāṇa (see pp. 138-142).

LECTURE VI.

The Morality of Buddhism and its chief aim— Arhatship or Nirvāņa.

The first questions suggested by the subject of this lecture will probably be :-

How could a life of morality be inculcated by one who made all life proceed from ignorance, and even virtuous conduct in one sense a mistake, as leading to continuity of life, and therefore of suffering! How could the Buddha's first commandment be, 'Destroy not,' when his ideal of perfection was destruction? How could be say, 'be active,' when his theory of Karma (pp. 110, 114) made action conduce to misery?

The inconsistency is evident, but it is no less true that, notwithstanding the doctrine that all existence entails misery, and that all action, good or bad, leads to future births. Gantama taught that the life of a man in higher bodily forms, or in one of the heavens, was better than a life in lower forms, or in one of the hells, and that neither a higher form of life nor the great aim of Nirvāna could be attained without righteous action, meditation, and true knowledge.

Buddhism, indeed, as we have seen, could not hold forth as an incentive to good behaviour any belief in a Creator rewarding and punishing his creatures according to their works, or pardoning their sins. It could not inculcate piety; for in true Buddhism piety was impossible; yet like Manu (H. 6) it made morality (sila) the basis of Law (Dharma); it stimulated good conduct by its doctrine of repeated births, and by pictures of its numerous heavens, and it deterred men from unrighteous acts by its terrible places of torment.

Let it then be made clear from the first that Buddhism, in inculcating morality, used no word expressive of morality, as founded on the love and fear of God, or of sin as an offence against God.

In Buddhism the words klesa (kileso), 'pain,' and akusala, 'demerit,' take the place of 'sin,' and its perfect saint is said to be 'free from pain' (nishklesa) and from demerit, not from sin in our sense. By an unrighteous act it meant an act producing suffering and demerit of some kind (p. 113), and it hade every man act righteously in order to escape suffering and to accumulate merit (kusala), and thus work out his own perfection—that is to say, his own self-extinction.

Doubtless Buddhism deserves credit for laying stress on right belief, right words, right work, instead of on ceremonial rites; and on the worship of Hindū gods; but it had its own idea of right. It urged householders to abandon the world, or else to be diligent in serving its monks for the working out of their own salvation; and while making morality, meditation, and enlightenment its indispensable factors in securing perfection, it made perfection consist in freedom from the delusion that 'I am;' and in deliverance from an individual existence inseparably bound up with misery.

Mark, too, another contradiction. It inculcated entire

self-dependence in working out this kind of perfection, and yet it set before its disciples three guides; namely, the Buddha's own example, the Law (Dharma), and the example of the whole body of monks and perfected saints (Sangha).

We now turn to its fuller moral system, keeping this distinct from its philosophy and metaphysics, and freely admitting that there are in Buddhist morality many things, true, honourable, just, pure, lovely, and of good report.

It is fair to point out at the outset that Buddhist morality was not a purely external matter. It divided men into the outwardly correct and internally sincere. The mere outwardly correct Buddhists might include monks as well as laymen, though a higher standard of profession was expected of monks. The internally sincere were the really earnest seekers after perfection (monks and laymen), and were divided into four classes, representing four conditions of the inner life, lower, higher, still higher, and highest, culminating in perfect Saintship, Arhatship, and Nirvāṇa (p. 132).

At the same time there was not much hope of saintship except through celibacy and monkhood; for in true Buddhism the notion of holy family-life was almost a contradiction in terms.

Of course the Buddhist moral code soon passed beyond the eightfold path propounded by Gautama in his first sermon (see p. 44), and Dr. Oldenberg has shown that in the absence of a systematically arranged code, we may still trace out amid a confusion of precepts the three leading duties of external moral conduct (šīla), of internal mental concentration (samādhi), and of acquiring true wisdom (pañūā = prajūā). Compare Dr. Wenzel's 'Friendly Epistle,' 53.

The five fundamental rules of moral conduct (sila), or rather, probibitions, were promulgated very early:—

Commit not adultery. 4. Lie not. 5. Drink not strong drink. These five, having reference chiefly to one's neighbour, were called the fivefold law for all classes, including laymen. They were taken from Brühmanism, but in the vows of the Sannyāsī the fifth was not included. It was Buddhism probably that first interdicted strong drink. It prohibited too what the Brühmans allowed—killing for sacrificial purposes.

Five others of a more trivial character for monks (often given in a different order, p. 78) were added:

6. Eat no food, except at stated times. 7. Use no wreaths, ornaments, or performes. 8. Use no high or broad bed, but only a mat on the ground. 9. Abstain from dancing, singing, music, and worldly spectacles, 10. Own no gold, or silver of any kind, and accept none (Mahā-vagga I. 56). [This Buddhist Decalogue may be contrasted with the Mosaic Decalogue.]

All ten were binding on monks only, and for the third was then substituted 'be absolutely chaste.'

Sometimes not only the first five but the first eight were held to be binding on laymen.

Another was added in later times:—Never think or say that your own religion is the best. Never denounce the religion of others (see p. 90).

Then, although only the first half of the eightfold

path (p. 44) was said to be necessary for lay-brethren, the whole was for monks, who also had to observe the special practices already described (p. 76).

All gambling and games of chance were prohibited (Tevijja-Sutta II). Compare Manu IX. 221-228.

Sometimes five renunciations are named:—of wife, of children, of money, of life, of craving for existence in future births.

Then sometimes three (sometimes four) corrupting influences (āsava = āsrava) are enumerated — of lust (kāma), of life, of ignorance, (of delusion.)

Most important to be got rid of are the ten fetters (samyojana, p. 45) binding a man to existence:—

1. Belief in the existence of a personal self or Ego (sakkāya-ditthi); 2. Doubt (vičikitsā); 3. Ceremonial practices (silabbata = sila-vrata); 4. Lust or sensuality (kāma); 5. Anger (paṭigha); 6. Craving for life in a material form (rūpa-rāga) either on earth or in heaven; 7. Longing for immaterial life (arūpa-rāga) in the higher heavens; 8. Pride (māna); 9. Self-exaltation (auddhatya); 10. Ignorance. Of these, 1, 3, and 4, with diṭṭhi, 'wrong belief,' are the four constituents of Upādāna, 'clinging to existence' (p. 109).

The seven jewels of the law (p. 49) are—1, the five contemplations or reflections; 2, the four right exertions (p. 50); 3, the four paths to supernatural power (p. 50); 4, the five moral forces (p. 50); 5, the right use of the five organs of sense; 6, the seven limbs of knowledge (p. 50); 7, the eightfold path (p. 44).

The five above-named reflections are -1. on the thirty-two impurities of the body; 2, on the duty of

displaying love (Maitri) towards all beings; 3. on compassion for all who suffer; 4. on rejoicing with all who rejoice; 5. on absolute indifference (upekshā) to joy or sorrow. These contemplations (bhāvanā) in Buddhism take the place of prayer. The last is the highest. The first is also a Sati-patthāna (p. 49). They must not be confused with the meditations (Dhyānas, p. 209).

Then come six (or ten) transcendent virtues called Pāramitās, 'leading to the further shore,' for Arlasts. These, too, every Bodhi-sattva had to practise before he could attain Buddhahood. They were:—1. Generosity or giving (Dāna) to all who ask, even the sacrificing of limbs or life for others; this is most important;
2. Virtue or moral conduct (Sīla); 3. Patience or tolerance (Kshānti); 4. Fortitude or energy (Vīrya); 5. Suppression of desire (Nekkhamma = naishkāmya), or, according to some, profound contemplation; 6. Transcendental wisdom (Pañña = Prajñā). To which are added — 7. Truth (Satya); 8. Steadfast resolution (Adhishthāna); 9. Good-will or kindness (Maitra); 10. Absolute indifference or imperturbability or apathy (Upekshā), resulting in a kind of ecstatic quietude.

This kind of memorial tabulation in lists of 4, 5, 7, 8, 10, etc., is of course a product of later Buddhism.

I now give examples from the Dharma-pada:-

'By oneself is evil done; by oneself is one injured; by oneself is evil left undone; by oneself is one purified; no one purifies another.' (Compare Manu IV. 240.)

'Better than dominion over the earth, better than going to Heaven, or having sovereignty over the worlds, is the attainment of the first step in sanctification.' 'Not to commit evil, to accumulate merit by good deeds (kusalassa upasampadā), to purify the heart, this is the doctrine of the Enlightened' (165, 178, 183).

'As a frontier town is guarded within and without, so guard thyself.' (Dh. 315.)

'He who holds back rising anger like a rolling chariot, him I call a real driver; any other merely holds the reins.' (Dh. 222. Compare Manu II. 88.)

'Let a man overcome anger by gentleness, let him overcome the evil by good; the parsimonious by liberality, the liar by truth.' (Dh. 223, Manu VI. 47, 48.)

'The fully enlightened finds no satisfaction even in heavenly pleasures; but only in suppression of desires.'

'One by one, little by little, moment by moment, a wise man frees himself from personal impurities as a refiner blows away the dross of silver.' (Dh. 187, 239.)

'There is a treasure laid up in the heart, a treasure of charity, purity, temperance, soberness. A treasure, secure, impregnable, that no thief can steal; a treasure that follows after death. (Compare Manu IV. 241.) Universal science, all the perfections, supernatural knowledge, supreme Buddhaship itself this treasure can procure.' (Childers' Nidhi-kāṇḍa.)

The following are some of the blessed states described in the Mahāmangala-sutta. They prove that Gautama required married men to discharge their duties faithfully.

'The succouring of mother and father, the cherishing of child and wife, and the following of a peaceful calling, this is the greatest blessing '(mangalam uttamam).

¹ The body is often compared to a city with nine gates or uportures, which have to be guarded (viz. two eyes, care, matrils, etc.).

• The giving alms, a religious life, aid rendered to relations, blameless acts, this is the greatest blessing.

'Reverence and lumility, contentment and gratefulness, the hearing of the Law at the right time, this is the greatest blessing.'

 Patience and lowly speech, association with religious men, recitation of the Law at the right time, this

is the greatest blessing."

'Self-mortification and chastity, discernment of the noble truths, perception of Nirvāṇa, this is the greatest blessing.'

In the Anguttara (H. iv. 2) it is said that no adequate return can be made by children to parents 'even by menial service.' With Gautama, to honour father and mother was better than to worship the gods of heaven.

Many other examples might be given. Not only was a man forbidden to kill, he was never to injure.

Then in the Rajovada Jataka we have the story of the one king 'who overcomes the strong by strength, the soft by softness, the good by goodness, and the wicked by wickedness; and of the other king 'who conquers anger by calmness, the wicked by goodness, the stingy by gifts, the liar (alika-vadinam) by truth.'

Other precepts require a man to exercise charity and respect towards all aged persons, teachers, servants, and animals. He was to set an example of self-sacrifice.

It is recorded of Gautana Buddha that on one occasion he plucked out his own eyes, and that on another he cut off his own head, and that on a third he cut his own body to pieces to redeem a dove from a hawk.

Yet we repeat that with all this apparently sublime

morality no true idea of sin, as displeasing to a Holy God, was connected with the infraction of the moral code. Nor did a Buddhist always avoid harming others from any true reverence for life. He was to cherish the life of others, but his chief motive was the fear that by not doing so he would entail the misery of continuous life on himself; and his chief motive for avoiding anger was that it was incompatible with that equanimity, which ought to characterize every wise man who aimed at the extinction of his own personality.

The ease with which charitable acts might be performed is amusingly illustrated by a story told in Huc's travels in Tibet. A certain zealous fellow-traveller (who considered that it was quite possible to be at the same time a good Buddhist and a good Christian) invited the French missionaries to co-operate with him in performing charitable acts to commemorate the termination of a fatiguing journey, especially by providing worn-out travellers, like themselves, with horses. The mission-aries pleaded their own poverty, but to their surprise were told that they were only required to draw horses on paper, which were taken to the edge of a precipice, thrown up into the air, and, certain formularies being recited, were carried away by the wind and changed into real horses by the power of Buddha.

Let us by no means, however, shot our eyes to the praiseworthy feature of the Buddhist system mentioned at page 125—its recognition of the need of inner purity and sanctification—an inner Buddhism of the heart, without which even a monk was no true Buddhist. Of course the Law could be observed superficially without any real heart-belief or heart-purity.

When the inner heart-condition of a Buddhist is described, he is said to be walking on one of four paths (cattaro Maggā), and is then called Ariyo (= Ārya), 'worthy of reverence' (distinguished from Prithag-jana, 'an ordinary professing Buddhist'). To avoid confounding these paths with the eightfold path (p. 44) it would be better to speak of them as four stages of inner sanctification. Dhyāna, 'meditation,' of four kinds, is the chief means of entering and passing through these stages (p. 32), which once entered can never be abandoned.

The first stage is that of the man—be he mouk or layman—who is just converted, by an inner awakening to true heart-Buddhism. This man has freed himself from the first three fetters—namely, delusion of self, doubts about the Buddha's doctrine, and dependence on external rites (p. 127). He is called Sotāpanno, one who has entered the stream' (Srota-āpanna), inevitably carrying him onwards—though not necessarily in the same body—to the calm ocean of Nirvāṇa, and his state is called Sotāpatti. He can only be re-born as a god or man, but not in the four lower births (p. 121).

Mark that the doctrine of 'perseverance' is a remarkable feature in this phase of the Buddhist system.

The second stage is that of the man who has nearly freed himself from the first five fetters, but has a sufficient number left to cause one more birth on the earth. He is called Sakad-āgāmī (Sakrid-āg').

The third stage is that of the man who is quite free from the first five fetters. Such a man can only be re-born in a Brahmā heaven, from which he reaches Nirvāņa. He is therefore called An-āgāmī, one who will not come back to earth.'

The fourth stage is that of the completely freed man who attains Arhatship (Arabattam) in this life, and will at death experience no re-birth. There is, of course, a difference between one who has only just entered each stage of the journey and one who has reached the terminus. And this Arhatship is open to all (even to women), though only likely to be attained by true monks or true nuns. The name Arhat (Pāli Arahā, in Ceylon Rahat), 'most deserving' (root arh), is significant of the highest merit; for the Arbat is perfect, freed from all pain (nishklesa), from all the ten fetters, from all attachment to existence (upadana) whether on earth or in heaven, and from all re-creative Act-force, He has already entered Nirvana, and while still living he is dead to the world. He is the Jivan-mukta, 'emancipated living man, of the Yoga. By the force of the fourth Dhyana, he has gained the Abhijnas (Abhinna), or 'transcendent faculties of knowledge,' the inner eye, inner ear, knowledge of all thoughts, and recollection of previous existences, and the extraordinary powers over matter called Iddhi (= Riddhi). In short he is Asekha, one who has nothing to learn.

Although, theoretically, a layman and even beings existing in other spheres, might enter the stream leading to Arhatship (see p. 90) without becoming monks, yet it is evident that as a rule it was only likely to be entered by persons who renounced the world and led a celibate monastic life.

But of Arhats there are three grades :-

First, the simple Arhat (described above), who has attained perfection through his own efforts and the doctrine and example of a supreme Buddha, but is not himself such a Buddha, and cannot teach others how to attain Arhatship, though he associates with others.

Secondly, and second in rank, but far above the simple Arhat, the Pratyeka-Buddha or Solitary Saint, who has attained perfection for himself and by himself alone, and not as a member of any monastic Order, nor through the teaching of any supreme Buddha (except in some former birth). This solitary hermit-like Arhat—a kind of concentration of isolated or selfish sanctity—is symbolized by a rhinoceros. He does not appear on earth at the same time with a supreme Buddha, and has not the same epithets (p. 23) applied to him.

Thirdly, the supreme Buddha or Buddha par excellence (once a Bodhi-sattva), who, having by his own self-enlightening insight attained perfect knowledge (sambodhi), and having, by the practice of the transcendent virtues (p. 128) and through extinction of the passions and of all desire for life, become entitled to that complete extinction of bodily existence (pari-nirvana), in which the perfection of all Arbatship must end, has yet delayed this consummation that he may become the Saviour of a suffering world—not in the same manner as the God-sent Saviour of Christianity, but by teaching men how to save themselves. This is the supreme Buddha, the founder of the whole monastic Order, immeasurably superior both to Pratycka-Buddhas and to all mere Arbats.

He said of himself (Maha-vagga I, 6, 8),- 'I am the

all-subduer (sabbābhībhū); the all-wise; I have no stains; through myself I possess knowledge; I have no rival (paṭipuggalo); I am the chief Arhat—the highest teacher; I alone am the absolutely wise (Sambuddha): I am the Conqueror (Jina); all the fires of desire are quenched (sītibhūto) in me; I have Nirvāṇa (nibbuto). See p. 42 of this volume.

This seems a marvellous assumption on the part of one who never claimed to be other than a man; yet he had taken the idea from Brahmanism, which held that its saints could surpass all gods (Brahma only excepted).

Such supreme Buddhas, who are perfect knowers, and also perfect teachers of the truth, are only manifested on the earth at long intervals of time.

Gautama is the fourth Buddha of the present age (Bhadra-Kalpa). He was a Kshatriya; his three mythical predecessors—Kraku-cchanda, Kanaka-muni, and Kūsyapa—having been sons of Brāhmans. He is to be followed by the fifth Buddha, Maitreya (a name meaning 'full of love towards all beings'), but not until the doctrine of Gautama has passed out of men's memory after five thousand years (p. 181). In their previous existences Gautama and his predecessors were, (see pp. 98, 112,) Bodhi-sattvas¹, 'beings who have knowledge (derived from intellect) for their essence,' a name borne by all destined to become supreme Buddhas as well as by the first of Gautama's successors, Maitreya.

This coming Buddha is, as we shall see hereafter,

In fact Gautama remained a Bodhi-sattva until he was thirty-lists or thirty-five, when he attained perfect enlightenment and Buddlinbook.

an object of universal reverence among later Buddhists of all seets as a kind of expected Messiah or Saviour. Often, indeed, he is more becomed than Gautama himself, because he is interested in the present order of things, as well as in the future, while Gautama Buddha and all his predecessors have passed away into non-being.

Twenty-four mythical Buddhas (the first being Dipamkara, 'Light-causer') are held to have appeared before Gautama in preceding cycles of time. Many particulars about them are given, including their birth-places, the length of their lives and their statures. Gautama himself is said to have met some of them during his transmigrations. Even the trees under which they achieved supreme wisdom are enumerated.

Sometimes the last six of the twenty-four are reckened with Gautama Buddha as constituting seven principal Buddhas 2, who seem to have been grouped together to correspond with the Brāhmanical seven Manus of the present Kalpa. Usually, however, Gautama is held to be the last of twenty-five Buddhas.

Clearly, then, the principal lines of Buddhist moral teaching all converge to one focus—to the perfected

³ Their names are Dipanskara, Kamplinya, Mangala, Sumanas, Raivata, Sobhita, Anavama-daršin, Padma, Nārada, Padmottara, Sumadhaz, Sajāta, Priya-daršin, Artha-daršin, Dharma-daršin, Siddartha, Tishya, Pushya, Vipaiyin, Sikhin, Viava-bhū, Krakućanda, Kanaka-muni (or Konāgamana), Kāšyapa.

² Beginning with Vipasyin. These are the only Buddhas mentioned in the Digha-mknya. If the coming Buddha Maitreya is reckoned, then Vipasyin must be omitted.

Arhat or rather to a still brighter point of light in the perfect Buddha waiting for his reward—the nectar of the eternal state of complete Nirvāṇa.

And this compels us to attempt some explanation of Nirvāṇa. In the first place forty-six synonyms of it are given in the Abhidhānappadīpikā, e.g. Mokkha or Mutti, 'deliverance,' Nirodha, 'cessation,' Tanhakkhaya (trishṇā-kshaya), 'destruction of lust,' Arūpa, Khema, Kevala, Apavagga, 'emancipation,' Nibbuti (= nirvriti), 'quietude,' Amata (Amrita), 'deathless nectar.'

The following is from Rhys Davids' Jātaka (p. 4):
'One day the wise Sumedhā fell a-thinking, thus:—
"Grievous is re-birth in a new existence, and the dissolution of the body in each successive place where we are re-born. I am subject to birth, to decay, to disease, to death. It is right, being such, that I should strive to attain the great deathless Nirvāņa, which is tranquil, and free from birth, decay, sickness, grief, and joy.

"For as in this world there is pleasure—the opposite of pain—so where there is existence there must be its opposite, the cessation of existence; and as where there is heat there is also cold which neutralizes it, so there must be a Nirvāṇa that extinguishes (the fires of) lust and the other passions; and as in opposition to a bad and evil condition there is a good and blameless one, so where there is evil Birth there must also be Nirvāṇa, called the Birthless, because it puts an end to all re-birth.

"Just as a man who has fallen into a heap of filth, if he beholds afar off a great pend covered with lotuses of five colours, ought to seek that pend, saying, "By what way shall I arrive there?" but if he does not seek it, the fault is not that of the pond; even so where there is the lake of the great deathless Nirvana."

What, then, is the proper definition of Nirvāņa (Pāli Nibbāna)? In venturing on an explanation of so controverted a term, I feel rather like a foolbardy person walking barefoot over thorny ground. Nevertheless I may fearlessly assert two things about it.

The first is, that the term Nirvana was not originated by Gantama. It was an expression common to both Brahmanism and Buddhism, and most of its synonyms such as moksha, apavarga, and nirvriti are still common to both. It was current in Gautama's time, and certainly occurs in the Mahā-bhārata, parts of which are of great antiquity.

In the celebrated episode of that poem called Bhagavad-gits, V. 24, we find the following:—

'That Yogi who is internally happy, internally satisfied and internally illumined, attains extinction in the Supreme Being, and becomes that Being' (Yo'ntahsukho 'ntarārāmas tathāntarjyotir eva yah, | Sa Yogi Brahmanirvaṇam' Brahma-bhūto 'dhigaééhati).

The second point is that it would be about as unreasonable to expect that Nirvana should always be explained in one way as to restrict Brāhmanism and Buddhism—two most elastic, comprehensive, and Protean systems, which have constantly changed their front to suit changing circumstances and varying na-

The expression Brahma-nirvāņa is repeated several times afterwards. Mark, too, that one of the god Siva's names in the Mahabhārata is Nirvāṇam.

tional peculiarities at different epochs and in different countries—to one hard and fast outline.

It is certainly singular that although the term Nibbāna (Sanskrit Nirvāṇa)—like some of the crucial theological terms of Christianity—has led to endless discussions, it does not occur often in the Pāli texts. The word Arahattam, 'Arhatship,' is more common.

Nirvana, of course, originally means 'the state of a blown-out flame.' Hence its first meaning is properly restricted to the complete extinction of the three chief fires' of lust, ill-will, and delusion, and a total cessation of all evil passions and desires; especially of the desire for individual existence (name and form).

Following on this is the state of release from all pain and from all ignorance, accompanied by a sense of profound rest—a state achieved by all Arhats while still living in the world, and notably by the Buddha at the moment when he attained Buddhahood, forty-five years before his final Pari-nirvana. Nirvana then is not necessarily the annihilation of all existence, It is the absence of klesa (p. 124), as in the Yoga system, and corresponds very much to the Brahmanical Apavarga, described in the Nyāya, and defined by a commentator, Vātsyāyana, to be Sarva-duhkha-cheda ('the cutting off of all pain'). In short, it is Arhatship.

Rago, dvesha, moha. Eleven fires are sometimes enumerated.

^{*} Dr. Hhys Davids holds that the Buddha only advocated the suppression of good desires; Fausbill says 'desire in all its forms.' I agree with the latter.

When I was on the confines of Tibet, this was described to me by a Tibetan scholar as the unchangeable state of conscious beatitude.

But besides Nirvāņa we lave the expression Parinirvāṇa. This is not merely the blowing out of the fires of the passions but also the entire cessation of rebirths, with extinction of all the elements or seeds of bodily existence. This took place when the Buddha died or 'passed away' after innumerable previous deaths. Practically, however, in Buddhism the death of every ordinary being amounts to this kind of Nirvāṇa; for, if there is no recollection of any former state of existence in the new being created by Karma, what is every death but utter personal extinction?

Now with regard to the Nirvana of Arhatship, no one can have come in contact with the natives of India in their own country, without observing that for a genuine aristocratic Brahman to allow others to see him give way to any passion, to exhibit any emotion or enthusiasm, is regarded as a proof of weakness.

We can easily understand, therefore, that when the Buddha exhorted his followers to strive after a wholly impassive condition, he addressed a sympathetic audience.

Long before his exhortations were heard in India, his fellow-countrymen held persons in the highest respect who claimed to have entirely suppressed their passions. The only peculiarity in Gautama's teaching was that he made this object incumbent on all true Buddhists alike, without exception. And this state of absolute importurbability is well indicated to the eye by the usual attitude of the images which, after Gautama's death, were carved to represent him—an attitude of passionless composure, and dignified calm.

In the interesting Pāli work Milinda-prašna (Milinda-pañho), containing a conversation on the subject of Nirvāņa between King Milinda (Menander) and the monk Nāgasena (supposed to have lived about 140 B.C.), the latter compares it to the pure water which quenches fire, and to the fathomless Ocean freed from trouble and impurities, which no river, however wast, can fill to overflowing; and to the Air, which cannot be seen or explained, though it enters our bodies and fills us with life; and to Space, which is eternal and infinite, and beyond the power of man to conceive.

I trust I shall not shock my Indian friends if I illustrate this condition by a comparison of my own drawn from the animal creation. In crossing the Indian Ocean, when unruffled by the slightest breeze, I have cometimes observed a jelly-fish floating on the surface of the transparent water, apparently lifeless. The creature is evidently neither asleep nor awake. It certainly is not thinking about anything, and its consciousness is doubtful. All that can be affirmed about it is that it seems to be drinking in the warm fluid in a state of lazy blissful repose.

No Buddhist, at least, could look at such a sight without being reminded of this idea of Nirvāṇa—the idea
of, so to speak, floating in perfect repose and peace and
cessation from all pain, and all work, and even all
thought, on a kind of ocean of half conscious, half unconscious beatitude. It is not consciousness, neither is it
unconsciousness. It is symbolized by a full-blown, perfectly formed lotus—a frequent emblem of perfection—
reposing on a calm mirror-like lake.

With regard to Pari-nirvana. —the complete termination of migrations and passing away of all the elements of bodily existence—if this is to be distinguished from the Brahmanical idea of absorption into an impersonal spirit—whereby the Ego of personal identity is destroyed—it is a distinction without much difference.

Strictly, however, in Buddhism the dissolution of the body leaves no surviving personality or individuality, and consequently Pari-nirvana is not properly described either as absorption into a void (sunya) or as annihilation. It is simply the absolute termination of a series of conscious bodily organizations. The Buddha himself evaded dogmatic definitions, and would probably have said:—it is not life, neither is it non-life; it may be compared to infinite space (sunya) which is not to be comprehended or explained.

We should also bear in mind that although Nirvāṇa and Pari-nirvāṇa constitute the ultimate goal to which all the morality of a true Buddhist tends, they have no place either in the airas or thoughts of the ordinary adherents of Buddhism at the present day.

The apex of all the desires, the culminating point of all the ambition of the most religiously-minded Buddhists of modern times, points to a life in one of the heavens, while the great mass of the people aim only at escaping one of the hells, and elevating themselves to a higher condition of bodily existence in their next birth on this earth, and perhaps on that very part of this earth which is the scene of their present toils, joys, and sorrows.

Or Assipatitiesha, that is, Nirvana without remains or remnants of the elements of existence. See Childers' Pali Dictionary, s.v.

It only remains for me to caution those who may be impressed with the beauty of some of the precepts of the moral code and its theory of perfection, as ending in Pari-nirvana, against deducing therefrom too optimistic an estimate of the Buddhist system. Buddhist morality is like a showy edifice built on the sand. It is a thoroughly fair-weather structure, incapable of standing against flood, storm, and tempest.

It may be summed up in a few words as a scheme for the establishing of a paradox—for the perfecting of one's self by accumulating merit with the ultimate view of annihilating all consciousness of self—a system which teaches the greatest respect for the life of others, with the ultimate view of extinguishing one's own.

It must, in short, be clearly understood that if any comparison be instituted between Buddhism and Christianity in regard to the self-abnegation, or self-sacrifice which each claims to inculeate, the self to be got rid of in Buddhism is not the self-shness condemned by Christianity, but rather the self of individuality—the self of individual life, and personal identity.

To be righteous in a Christian sense a man must be God-like, and to be righteous in a Buddhistic sense a man must be Buddha-like; but the righteousness of the Buddhist is not the perfection of boliness by the extinction of sin committed against God, but the perfection of merit-making, with the view of earning happiness for himself in a higher state hereafter.

For every Buddhist is like a trader who keeps a ledger, with a regular debtor and creditor account, and a daily entry of profit and loss. He must not take, make, or heard money. He is forbidden to store up a money-balance in a worldly bank, but he is urged to be constantly accumulating a meritbalance in the bank of Karma.

In conclusion, let the Buddha coforce his own moral teaching in his own way, by allegory and illustration drawn from real life:—When asked by a Brahman why he did not plough and sow and earn his own bread? he replied to the following effect: 'I do plough and sow and cat immortal fruit (Amata = Amrita); my plough is wisdom (paṇṇā); my shaft is modesty; my draught-ox, exertion; my good, earnest meditation (sati); my mind, the rein. Faith (saddbā) in the doctrine is the seed I sow; cleaving to life is the weed I root up; truth is the destroyer of the weed; Nirvāṇa and deliverance from misery are my harvest.' (Kasi-bhāradvāja-sutta of the Sutta-nipāta.)

This may be compared with St. Lake viii. 11-15; but have we not here a contrast rather than a comparison?

Perhaps some may think that the contrast is not unfavourable to Buddhism. Nay, possibly some may complain that I have not enlarged sufficiently on the remarkable resemblance between certain moral precepts in the Buddhist code and in the Christian. I admit this resemblance—I admit that both tell us:—not to love the world; not to love money; not to show enmity towards our enemies; not to do unrighteous or impure acts—to overcome evil by good, and to do to others as we would be done by.

Nay, I admit even more:—I allow that some Buddhist precepts go beyond the corresponding Christian injunctions. For Buddhism prohibits all killing—even of animals and noxious insects. It demands total abstinence from stimulating drinks—disallowing even moderation in their use. It excludes all who aim at perfect sanctity from the holy estate of matrimony. It bids a man, if he strives after perfection, abandon the world and lead a life of monkhood. In fine, its morality is essentially a monkhood-morality. It enjoins total abstinence, because it dares not trust human beings to be temperate. How indeed could it trust them when it promises them no help, no divine grace, no restraining power!

The glory of Christianity is that having freely given that grace and that power to man, it trusts him to make use of the gift. It seems to speak to him thus:—
Thy Creator wills to trust thee and to b trusted by thee; He has endowed thee with freedom of choice, and therefore respects thy liberty of action. He imposes no rule of total abstinence in regard to natural desires; He simply bids thee keep them within bounds, so that thy moderation may be known unto all men; He places thee in the world amid trials and temptations and says to thee, 'My grace is sufficient for thee' and by its aid thou mayest overcome them all.

Yes, the grand difference between the morality of Buddhism and the morality of Christianity is not in the letter of the precepts, but in the principle and motive power brought to bear on their application.

Buddhism says:—Be righteous by yourselves, and through yourselves, and for the getting rid of all life in yourselves. Christianity says:—Be righteous through the power of God's gift of eternal life in His Son. In a word, Buddhism founds its morality on self. Christianity founds its morality on Christ.

The Buddha said to his followers:—Take nothing from me, trust to no one but to yourselves.

Christ said, and says to us still:—Take all from me; take this free gift. Put on this spotless robe. Eat this Bread of Life. Drink this Living Water.

Think you that any one who receives a priceless gift, is likely willingly to insult the Giver of it? Think you that any one who accepts a snow-white robe is likely willingly to soil it by impure acts? Think you that any one who tastes life-giving Bread is likely to relish husks? or that any one who draws deep draughts at a living Well is likely to prefer the polluted water of a stagnant pool?

Beware, then, of judging by the mere letter; or, should you insist on so judging, bear in mind that everywhere the Buddha's Law is a dead letter, because the Buddha is dead; just as the Sermon on the Mount would be a dead letter, if Christ were dead.

Finally, let me say to the admirers of Buddhism :-

If you insist on placing its moral code on the same level with that of Christianity, ask yourselves one plain question—Who would be the more likely to lead a godly, righteous, and sober life, a life of moderation and temperance, a life of holiness and happiness—the man who has learnt his morality from the dead, the extinct Buddha, or the man who draws his morality and his holiness from the living, the eternal, the life-giving Christ?

LECTURE VII.

Changes in Buddhism and its disappearance from India.

In the preceding Lectures I have confined myself chiefly to the consideration of what may be called true Buddhism as taught by its Founder and developed by his immediate followers and disciples during the first two or three centuries of its existence in the land of its birth, India.

To attempt an explanation of all the subsequent phases of Buddhism would, as I have before stated, require the command of unlimited time. All I can beto accomplish in the concluding Lectures is a very general idea of the nature of the changes Buddhism underwent before it died out in India, and of its corruptions in some of the countries bordering on India and in North-eastern Asia.

And I may add that those who desire correct views on this subject, ought not to trust to mere inferences and theories founded on a critical perusal of the so-called Sacred Books of the Buddhists. For it is certain that without any practical experience of what Buddhism has become in modern times—I mean such an experience as can only be gained by residing or travelling in countries where Buddhism now prevails—the more study of its ancient scriptures is likely to be misleading.

At the same time book-knowledge is indispensable, and it is essential to bring to the study of later Buddhism a scholarlike acquaintance with Sanskrit and Pali. Even a knowledge of Tibetan ought to be added. Nor ought the inquirer to be ignorant of the science of comparative religion, seeing that the principles of that science may throw light on many difficult questions.

For example, a student of comparative religion will be prepared to expect that all religious systems will diverge more or less from their original type in the bands of enthusiastic disciples, who are ever inclined to amplify their master's teaching and to explain it differently according to each man's peculiar temperament and mental bias, until in the end the original deposit of simple doctrine becomes overlaid with layer upon layer of adventitious matter.

Nor will be be surprised to find that the tendency religious movement is towards deterioration and disintegration. Nor will it appear strange to him that the chief conservative force is antagonism. As time goes on disagreements among the followers of any great leader seem to be inevitable, and always lead to sectarian divisions and subdivisions. Yet it is this opposition of religious parties that usually operates to mitigate the worst extremes of corruption, and tends to bring about re-forming movements.

Even the progress of Christianity—as history shows too well—furnishes illustrations of the law of deterioration, disintegration, and re-formation. At all events, it is certain that no study of the New Testament is likely to give a true idea of the varying condition of the Christian religion as exhibited at the present day in different parts of the world.

But here it is important to caution the student of religions against forcing a comparison between two systems of doctrine like Christianity and Buddhism, which are radically and essentially opposed to each other.

The unchristianlike incrustations and divisions which have marred the original teaching of the Head of our religion exist in spite of Christianity. They are not the result of any development of its first principles; whereas, on the contrary, the corruptions and schisms of Buddhism are the natural and inevitable outcome of its own root-ideas and fundamental doctrines.

In proof of this let us revert for a moment to the insight we have gained into the origin of Buddhism.

It will be seen that the most remarkable feature of the Buddha's teaching, so far as it has been stated in the preceding Lectures, was that he altogether ignored the existence in human nature of any spiritual aspirations, affections, or instincts higher than or distinct from the natural aspirations, affections, and instincts of humanity; and of any force outside of human nature capable of aiding a man's own efforts in his struggle for salvation. Not that he reviled, or poured contempt on the religion prevalent among his fellow-countrymen, but that he found no place in his system for an external Ruler and Controller of the Universe, and would have stultified his own teaching had he acknowledged a Supreme Creator, guiding and upholding all things by His will, and always at hand to co-operate with His creatures and listen to their supplications.

If it were possible, in short, to condense into a categorical statement the scattered otterances of a man whose teaching was mrely dogmatic, we might affirm that it was to the effect that for any man to depend on a Being higher than himself, or to centre the noblest affections of his nature on a merciful, just, and holy God, whose presence he yearned for, whose aid he prayed for, and to whose image he longed to be assimilatedwas a mere delusion, though perhaps a harmless one. He therefore set aside every supposed supernatural revelation as useless and incapable of proof. He prescribed no prayer, he enjoined no form of worship, he established no real church, and instead of a priesthood or clergy, ordained to aid men in their progress heavenwards or to console them in the trials of life, he founded an Order of Monks pledged to denounce human life asnot worth living, and bound to abstain from all participation in human affairs.

It is true that he deserves commendation for having substituted moral conduct for useless superstitious rites, but his moral code had no other aim than the suppression of lusts and desires (p. 139, note 2), and his peculiar stoical philosophy had no other object than the removal of the ignorance which obstructed the path to true knowledge—the knowledge that all life is fraught with pain and misery, and not worth perpetuating.

It is admitted, too, that its moral precepts were of a high order; but it promised man no divine aid in observing them, it supplied him with no motive power except the selfish hope of benefiting himself in future states of corporeal existence, and it provided no remedy in case his attempts to obey its injunctions ended in failure. How, indeed, could it do any of these things when its only idea of sin was not the infraction of God's law, but the commission of an act fraught with evil consequences to the doer?

Furthermore, it was guilty of the inconsistency of bidding a man cherish a fellow-feeling for others and diligently engage in all good works, while it made his true salvation depend on his giving up all love for wife and children, and setting before himself, as his final goal, a condition of absolute indifference and inactivity.

What, therefore, I am at present concerned to point out is that, if the essential doctrines of primitive Buddhism were of the character thus summarized, a rebound from one extreme to another became inevitable, and that such a reaction was due to the very nature of the original teaching of its Founder. In point of fact it was not a development that took place, but a recoil—like the recoil of a spring held down for a time by a powerful hand and then released. And this resulted from the simple working of the eternal instincts of humanity, which insisted on making themselves felt notwithstanding the unnatural restraint to which the Buddha had subjected them; so that every doctrine he taught developed by a kind of irony of fate into a complete contradiction of itself.

Let us take a few examples :-

Buddhism, we know, started with the doctrine that all idea of marriage, or of happy home-life, was to be abandoned by wise men—by all who aimed at becoming true Buddhists (in direct contradistinction, we may note, to the primary Christian truth that it is not good for created man to be alone, and that therefore his Creator created a help meet for him—a truth confirmed in a remarkable manner by the Founder of the Christian Church when He gave the first sign of His divine commission at a marriage ceremony).

What, then, followed on the Buddha's original unnatural teaching in regard to marriage?

Of course an immediate result was that, although according to the Buddha's ordinance any one who aimed at perfect sanctity was bound to lead a celibate life, the rule against marriage was admitted to be inapplicable to the majority of human beings living in the world. The mass of the people, in short, were necessarily offenders against the primary law of Buddhism, Though called lay-Buddhists, they were not 'wise men' in the Buddhist sense of the term (pp. 86, 88). There is even evidence that among certain monkish communities in Northern countries the law against marriage was soon relaxed. It is well known that at the present day Lamaseries in Sikkim and Tibet swarm with the children of monks, though called their nephews and nieces1. And far worse than this, Buddhism ultimately allied itself with Tantrism or the worship of the female principle (sakti), and under its sanction encouraged the grossest violations of decency and the worst forms of profligacy.

It was the same in regard to the unnatural vow of

¹ This was remarked by Hooker when travelling in Sikkim. Sir Richard Temple in his Journals (II, 216) asserts that he often found married monks in Sikkim, and they make no secret of it. They are free to resign the mountain character when they choose.

poverty. Monasteries and Lamaseries now possess immense revenues, and monks are often wealthy men.

Then again, what resulted from the Buddha's ignoring the existence of a God, and telling his disciples to abstain from depending on any Being higher than what man himself could become ! Of course this was opposed to every man's innermost sense of his own needs and of his own nature. For man is so constituted that he cannot be happy without loving and trusting a Being higher than himself-a Being who takes the initiative in loving His creatures and is the proper object of their loftiest affections. Nor can man in his secret heart regard either bluself or any one of his fellow-men as a being worthy of his highest adoration, Nor can be set his affections ou a blank or an abstraction. And so, in spite of the Buddha's teaching, his followers would act on their own convictions. They would believe in beings higher than themselves, and in a personal Creator knowable and lovable by themselves, and knowing and loving His creatures. Nay, they ultimately converted the Buddha himself into the very God he denied, calling him 'The chief god of all the gods' (Devătideva).

Again, what was the effect of the Buddha's leading men to believe that all supernatural revelation was unneeded—that all enlightenment came from within, and that every man was competent to think out true knowledge for himself by the exercise of his own reasoning powers, in the way that the Buddha himself had done?

Of course the result was that the generality of men who shrank from the effort of thinking out truth for themselves, and were wholly destitute of any faculty for doing so, insisted on believing in a revelation from an external power, and ended in attributing infallibility to the Buddha's own teaching, and worshipping the Law of Buddhism—as a visible embodiment of their deceased teacher—with all the ardour of enthusiastic bibliolatrists.

Furthermore, what followed on the Buddha's denying that any prayer, however earnest, could have any power to modify the operation of natural laws?

Of course men longed for some form of supplication to a higher power, and so the Buddha's disciples not only composed prayer-formularies, but invested the mere letters and syllables of such forms with an efficacy which no other body of religionists has ever thought of attributing to prayer of any kind.

They not only repeated mystical sentences, which were called prayers, though really mere charms, believing that an occult virtue was inherent in the words, but invented a method of manufacturing such sentences (Dhāraṇi) like marketable commodities.

They fabricated prayers, in fact, by machinery, inscribing them on wheels or on rolls inserted in cylinders, which in the present day are made to revolve by hand or by the force of water and wind, and will possibly, with the spread of science, be impelled by steampower, so that each revolution may count for an infinite number of repetitions, and be set down to the credit of the owner or manager of the mechanism.

Yet again, what was the inevitable consequence of the Buddha's rejection of the doctrine that any benefit could accrue to human beings from religious services conducted by regularly ordained priests, and of his instituting in their stead an Order of Monks, who were little better than a community of drones, contributing nothing to the wealth of the world, doing nothing of any utility to any one, and taught to regard inaction as the path of true wisdom?

Naturally, men craved for spiritual helpers, guides, and intercessors, and so by degrees these very monks conducted elaborate religious services, and a complicated hierarchy was organized in Tibet, even more intricate and far-reaching in its ramifications than that of the modern Romish Church.

And once more, what resulted from the Buddha's objection to provide visible images and material objects of worship, with a view to stimulate devotion or aid meditation?

Of course concrete and objective Buddhism of some kind became a necessity. It became essential to make concessions to the weakness and infirmity of human nature, which required external aids, and declined to be devoted to an ideal void, or to meditate on a pure abstraction. Even the Founder of Buddhism himself seems to have felt, as we shall see, that his hold on the memory of his followers would depend on their venerating certain objects and symbols after his death. Unhappily for the purity of Buddhism, but quite in conformity with the inveterate tendencies of humanity, the Buddha's disciples pushed veneration of external objects to an extreme. They were not contental with mere reverence shown to the relics of the Buddha's

burnt body and the shrines containing them. They worshipped the tree under which he attained Buddha-hood, the seat on which he sat, the prints of his feet, his shadow supposed to be impressed on rocks, the utensils he used, the books containing the Law, the wheel which symbolized both the propagation and the character of his doctrine, and finally howed down before curved representations of his body and images of all kinds. It is remarkable that in Buddhist countries idols are far more numerous than among any other idolatrous people in the world.

Lastly, what resulted from the Buddha's teaching that the ultimate end to which men's efforts ought to be directed was Nirvana—that is, the total extinction of all individual existence and personal identity?

Of course men instinctively recoiled from atter selfannihilation, and so the Buddha's followers ended in changing the true idea of Nirvāna and converting it from a condition of non-existence into a state of bazy beatitude in celestial regions, while they encouraged all men—whether monks or laymen—to make a sense of dreamy bliss in heaven, and not total extinction of life, the end of all their efforts.

But it was not only this natural and inevitable recoil to the opposite extreme that ultimately brought about an entire change in primitive Buddhism. Another cause must also be taken into account.

We have already explained the nature of the tie which bound Buddhism to Brahmanism, from the first day on which Gautama sat as a disciple at the feet of the Brahman philosophers Udraka and Alara (p. 29). Now, although this tie was soon loosened, and although the Buddha struck out a line of his own, and a separation took place, yet the two systems stood on so much common ground that they were always ready to draw together again,

At all events, it is probable that one system never expelled the other, and that the constant attrition and contact which took place between Brāhmanism and Buddhism, led to a considerable splitting up of the original fabric of Buddhism, involving, of course, many divisions and subdivisions of Buddhistic thought, some of which were closely affied to the later developments of Brāhmanical philosophy.

In the Sarva-darsum-sangraha four principal sects of Buddhism are enumerated, which must have taken root early on Indian soil.

These four were the Vaibhāshika, Sautrāntika, Mā-dhyamika, and Yogāćāra. Of these the first two with their subdivisions, were realistic, and were established—though not perhaps thoroughly formulated and systematized—in very early times, long before the council of Kanishka; while the two later schools are described as idealistic, the Mādhyamika being a Buddhistic form of the Vedānta philosophy, and the Yogāčāra agreeing generally with the Yogā system.

Indeed there is good evidence that Buddhism developed in India a greater number of schools and phases

¹ The Vaibhāshika was divided into Sarvāstivāda (assertion of the real existence of all things), Mahāsanghika, Sammatīya (said to have been founded by Upāli), and Sthavira; the Sautrāntika had also its own subdivisions.

of thought than Brähmanism itself. Some authorities enumerate eighteen divisions (corresponding perhaps to the eighteen original disciples, pp. 47-73) which existed in king Kanishka's time—that is, in the first century of our era, while others specify thirty-two; and in the fourth century we find the Chinese traveller Fä-hien (p. 160) making allusion to as many as ninety-six (Dr. Legge's translation, p. 62).

We cannot wonder then that the author of the Sarva-darsana-sangraha expressed himself in rather strong language to the following effect:—

'Though the venerated Buddha be the only one teacher, his disciples are manifold; just as when the sun has set, the thief and other evil doers, the theological student and others understand that it is time to set about their occupations, according to their several inclinations.'

Yet, after all, it was chiefly in the North, and in consequence of the council held by Kanishka, India's greatest Buddhist king after Asoka' (see p. 69), that the original features of Buddhism underwent the greatest change and became overlaid with coating after coating of extraneous matter. It was there, in Northern regions, in the valley of the Indus, that the Protean system called Maha-yana arose, and grew, by the operation of the usual laws of accretion, conglomeration,

Another great king was the celebrated Harsha-vardhana or Siladitya of Kananj, who flourished about A.D. 610-650, and who is said to have founded an ora formerly much used in Northern India. He ruled from the India to the Ganges, and his doings are described by Hionen Theory (Beal's Records, I. 210-221.)

disintegration, and reintegration, into a congeries of heterogeneous doctrines, including the worship of Bodhi-sattvas, deified saints, and personal gods.

Naturally the adherents of this wider method spoke disparagingly of the simpler system prevalent in the South, whose sacred books were the Tri-piṭaka of Ceylon written in the ancient vernacular (Pali). That system they designated Hina-yana, 'the defective method,' not denying however that their own enlarged system grew out of and included the simpler one.

There arose, too, a third method, or 'vehicle' of salvation, called 'the middle method' (Madhyama-yāna). This, however, is not so well known, and, being a compromise between the other two, never gained many adherents, though it is still recognized in Tibet—the Tibetans often speaking of Tri-yāna, or 'the three vehicles.'

At all events, it is only necessary for practical purposes to recognize the distinction of the Great and Little Vehicle—the Mahā-yāna and the Hīna-yāna. And it may be stated generally that the inhabitants of Nepāl, Tībet, China, Manchuria, Mongolia, and Japan have always shown a preference for the Mahā-yāna, or 'Great Vehicle.' while the people of Ceylon, Burma, and Siam have always proferred the 'Little Vehicle.'

At the same time, it is important to note that while the Buddhists of Northern countries are supposed to be disciples of the Mahā-yāna or Great Way of

The Maha-yana is said to be connected with the Madhyanoku and Yogacura Schools, and the Hina-yana with the Vaihhashiku and Sautrantika.

Salvation, the Buddhism of each Northern country differs greatly from that of the other, and that the countries nearest to India have still further complicated the Maha-yana system by adopting mystical doctrines, and introducing magic and other practices supposed to aid in the acquisition of supernatural powers.

It must also be borne in mind that, although the Maha-yana or Great Method originated on the Indus, and the Hina-yana or Little Method, on the Ganges, the two streams of teaching were not always confined to these two areas, even on Indian soil.

In point of fact they were often intermixed, and the changes thus brought about in Buddhism will become more evident by referring to the narratives of three well-known Buddhist travellers from China.

Buddhism was introduced into China between 58 and, 75 of our era', but it was not till much later that Chinese pilgrims visited India—the boly land of Buddhism.

The first traveller of whom we have any record was a certain Chinese Buddhist mank named Fa-hien, who set out on a pilgrimage to India about the year 399 of our era, with the definite object of searching for and carrying back to China complete copies of the Vinaya or Rules of discipline for the Order. He wrote a very simple and straightforward account of his travels—which lasted for fourteen years—and of his visits to all the spots in India held most sacred by Buddhists. He

Professor Lagge's Travels of Fa-hien, p. 28.

Translated from the Chinese by the Rev. S. Beal and more recently by Professor Legge.

was followed by a Chinese traveller of less mark, named Sang Yun, who started about 518 A.D., and seems to have ended his journey at Peshawar, or at least not to have penetrated much further South. Peshawar, we know, was a great Buddhist centre, and there was a fine Stupa there, containing the alms-bowl of Buddha. Then after another interval a much more celebrated Chinese pilgrim named Hiouen Thsong1 started for India (A.D. 629-644). The narrative of his travels for about fifteen years is perhaps the best known and most commonly quoted of the three. In Chang Yuch's preface to these travels Hionen Thrang is described as 'a Doctor of the three Pitakas, and is said to have translated 657 works from the original Sanskrit. In all the districts through which he journeyed he learnt the dialects and investigated the deep secrets of religion."

All three travellers give information in regard to the prevalence of Buddhism in India up to the seventh century of our era, and the narratives of two—Fā-hien and Hiouen Thsang—are invaluable for the light they throw on the changes which Buddhism underwent in the interval of their travels. Here and there the pilgrims exaggerate, especially when they venture on numerical statistics or write from hearsay; but on the whole their accounts may be accepted, and we learn that Hiouen Thsang found some monasteries in ruins which were flourishing in Fā-hien's time, and that the Mabā-

According to Dr. Legge's orthography this name should be written Heien Chwang.

See Beal's 'Records of the Western World,' which gives a translation of these travels in two volumes.

yana had supplanted the earlier form of Buddhism, or rather co-existed with it in immy parts of the South as well as of the North, and was to be found even in Ceylon.

And this brings us face to face with the greatest change of all—the total dying out of Buddhism in the place of its origin. How is it to be accounted for that no adherents of either the greater or lesser Buddhist systems—of either the Mahā-yāna or Hīna-yāna—are to be found in India at the present moment?

The problem is difficult of solution, and I can only offer a few suggestions for its elucidation.

In the first place, I think it may be confidently asserted that the disappearance of Buddhism from India was a very gradual process, and unattended by any serious or violent religious revolution.

We have already alluded to the tolerant, liberal, and eclectic spirit which has characterized Buddhism ever since the period of its first promulgation at Benares.

Such teleration of the doctrines and ideas of co-existing systems had its advantages, especially in the early stages of the Buddhistic movement. It certainly had a prophylactic effect in warding off violent attacks, and helped to promote the diffusion of Buddhism throughout the numerous countries to which it ultimately spread. In India itself, as we have already seen, Buddhism was never aggressive or combative. Its motto

¹ Hiouen Thomas describes the Sthavira form of the Maha-yana na existing as for south as Coylon. He found many monks studying both the Great and Little Vehicles in Central India. Beal's Records, ii. 247, 254, 257.

everywhere was persuasion and conciliation. Composure, tranquillity, and absence of acrimony were stamped on all its features. The very foundation on which it was reared—the very establishment of a celibate monastic Order, by means of which true knowledge was to be propagated—had in it something altogether agreeable to the spirit and usages of Brahmanism.

We have seen, too, that the Buddha took care to show his respect for Brāhmanical traditions, even while promulgating a philosophical theory and preaching doctrines opposed to all sacerdotalism, priestly privileges, supernatural revelation, and Vedic ceremonial.

It does not, of course, follow that the great teacher, to whom the majority of Asiatic races have for centuries looked as their chosen example, had not the courage of his opinions, and was not competent to fill the rôle of a religious reformer.

The real fact was that he was too wise to enter upon any open crusade against inveterate customs and ideas. The peculiar calm of an Indian atmosphere, though occasionally disturbed by political storms sweeping from distant regions, has rarely been stirred by violent religious antagonisms. The various currents of Hindû religious life have flowed peacefully side by side, and reformers have generally done their work quietly. As for Gautama, there can be little doubt that his whole career was stamped with the impress of his early surroundings, and that he imbibed his tolerant ideas from the Brāhmanism in which he had been trained.

It has been usual to blame the Brahmans for their arrogant exclusiveness, but their arrogance has been rather shown in magnifying their own caste-privileges and carrying them to an extravagant pitch, than in preventing any discussion of their own dogmas, or in resenting any discussion them.

The very essence of Brāhmanism was tolerance, Every form of opinion was admissible under a system which made every person and every object in existence manifestations of the one Being, Brahmä.

The only delicate ground, on which it was dangerous for any reformer to tread, was caste. The only unpardonable sin was infringement of caste-rules. Nor was any one tempted to adopt the rôle of a violent agitator, when all were free to express any opinion they liked without hindrance, provided they took care to abstain from any act of interference with caste-privileges.

It does not appear, in short, that the preachers of either Buddhism, or Vaishnavism, or Saivism, or Saktism, or of any form of these sectorian systems, ever incurred the special animosity of the Brahmans or of each other, or ever indulged in very violent denunciations of each other's religious doctrines.

In real truth, these systems of doctrine were all evolved out of Brāhmanism. They were, therefore, not only tolerated by Brāhmanism, but accepted as the inevitable outcome of its own pantheistic ereed.

No doubt each received at first a strong stamp of individuality from its founder, marking it off from other systems, but with the lapse of years the deeper shades of difference grew fainter. Then it became a question which should become merged in the other. In such a competition between rival systems Buddhism had less chance of holding its own than either Vaishnavism or Saivism; for its root-ideas—as we have seen—were not rooted in the eternal instincts of human nature.

Buddhism, in fact, could never have maintained itself in India till the twelfth or thirteenth century of our era, had it not gradually, and to a great extent through interaction with Vaishnavism and Saivism, dropped its unnatural pessimistic theory of life and its unpopular atheistic character, and accommodated itself to those systems,

But Buddhism in parting with its ultra-pessimism and its atheistic and agnostic ideas, lost its chief elements of individuality and its chief independent stand-point.

Vaishnavism, on the other hand, was quite alive to its own interests, and had an eye to the spread of its own doctrines. It took care to adopt all the popular features of Buddhism. It vied with Buddhism in inculcating universal love, toleration, liberality, benevolence, and abstinence from injury. It preached equality, fraternity, and even in some cases the abolition of easte distinctions. It taught a succession of incarnations or rather descents (Avatāra 1) of divine beings upon earth (as Buddhism taught a succession of Buddhas), and it even adopted the Buddha himself as one of the incarnations of Vishnu.

This, indeed, is the best explanation of what has happened at Puri in Orissa, where a temple once

⁴ As I have shown in Brahmanism and Hinduism,' the term incarnation is not strictly expressive of the Hindu idea of Avadora, which means 'a descent' of a god (or a portion of his essence) in various forms upon earth.

dedicated to Gautama Buddha, and supposed to contain a relic of his burnt body, was afterwards dedicated to the Jagannath form of Krishna and supposed to enshrine one of his bones, and where low-caste and highcaste both eat together the food cooked in the house of that popular god.

The same may be said of the interaction which took place between Buddhism and Saivism; for Saivism, of course, was quite as bent on the propagation of its own creed as other systems were. It vied with Buddhism in encouraging abstract meditation, and although it had less sympathy than Vaishnavism had with that system, it approached in some respects so closely to its rival, that when Buddhism disappeared from India, images of Gautama were converted into representations of Siva seated in profound contemplation.

Ultimately, the interaction between the three systems proceeded to such a point that each was influenced and modified by the other; each learnt something, or adopted some practice from the other.

It was thus, too, that Saktism, i.e. the worship of energy or force (Sakti), identified with Siva's consort, was imported into Buddhism; its doctrine of the self-evolution of all things from Prakriti having much that harmonized with the Buddhist theory of the origin of the Universe. Thus, too, even Tantrism in its worst forms became intermixed with Buddhistic practice.

Enough, then, has been said to justify the assertion that Buddhism was not forcibly expelled from India by the Brāhmans. It simply in the end—possibly as late as the thirteenth century of our era—became blended with the systems which surrounded it, though the process of blending was gradual.

It would certainly be easy to prove from the records of the three Chinese travellers, that Buddhism and Brahmanism existed together in Northern and Central India as quite distinct systems till at least the seventh century of our era, if not always quite amicably, yet without any violent internecine conflict. Bitter controversies between the two rival creeds are without doubt clearly alluded to, and Fa-hien in one passage states that 'the Brahmans with their contrary doctrine became full of hatred and envy in their hearts'.' Yet, on the other hand, we find that at a Council held by the great Buddhist king Siladitya (Harsha-yardhana), whose meritorious acts are fully described by Hiouen Thsang (ch. v), and who had his capital at Kanouj, in the year 614 of our era", controversial points relating to both Buddhism and Brähmanism were discussed in a tolerant spirit, though it is said that in discussing questions between the Northern and Southern Buddhists, the 'Little Vehicle' was condemned.

Again, the Buddhist drama called Nāgānanda, 'joy of the snake world',' throws great light on the amicable

Professor Legge's translation, p. 56.

There are four great Buddhist kings of India who may be called historical, the dates of whose reigns may be fixed with fair certainty:—
1. Candra-gupta, who was at any rate a sympathiser with Buddhism, s.c. 315-291. 2. Ažoka, a decided Buddhist, s.c. 259-222. 3. Kanishka (see p. 69). 4. Silāditya, above. Some consider Kanishka to have founded the Saka era, dating from A. D. 78.

^{*} Translated in 4872 by Mr. Palmer Boyd, and published with an interesting introduction by Professor Cowell.

relations existing between the various sectarians and religionists in the days of king Silāditya. It is the only Sanskrit play in which the Nandī or opening prayer invokes the power of Buddha, thus:—

"On whom dost thou meditate, putting on a pretence of religious abstraction, yet opening thine eyes? See, saviour that thou art, thou dost not pity us sick with the shafts of Love. Falsely art thou compassionate. Who is more cruel than thou?" May Buddha, the conqueror, who was thus jealously addressed by the Apsarasas (daughters) of Māra (p. 34), protect you!

Professor E. B. Cowell has shown in his valuable Preface that both this play and the sister Hindu play called Ratnavali were probably put forth or at least patronised by Harsha-vardhana (Siladitya), and that both were probably acted at the same period, the king being as much a Hindu as a Buddhist, Hiouen Thsang praises Harsha-vardhana for his support of Buddhism, but in his description of the two Convocations held by that king, states that both Buddhists and Brahmans were equally honoured by him, and intimates that half his subjects held one doctrine and half the other. In the second Convocation which took place at Prayaga (now Allahabad) eighteen kings were present and 500,000 monks and laymen. On the first day the statue of Buddha was installed; on the second day that of the Sun, and on the third that of Siva. Alms were distributed to Brahmans and Buddhists alike, and even to the Nirgranthas or Jaina naked heretics.

Again the well-known play called Mālatī-Mādhava (by Bhava-bhūti, who lived at Kanauj in the beginning of the eighth century) has an opening prayer addressed to Siva, and yet a female Buddhist ascetic and her attendant constitute two of the principal dramatis personæ, proving that an intermixture of the two creeds prevailed everywhere,

It was also during the reign of Siladitya that the immense monastery at Nālanda near Rāja-griha formed a seat of learning, which might suggest a comparison with the learned monkish communities and even with the universities of mediæval Europe 1. In that monastery might be seen several thousand novices and monks of the eighteen Buddhist schools-all of them supported by royal grants, and thus enabled both to perform their religious duties, and to proscente the study of philosophy, law, and science in literary case. It is probable that if disputes and disagreements upon burning questions occurred, they rarely led to serious conflicts, and were not general throughout India, but confined to particular localities; and I think it may be safely affirmed that if Buddhism was ever anywhere persecuted, it never anywhere persecuted in return.

I myself was much struck in a visit I paid to Ellora in the Nizām's territory by the evidence I there saw of the friendly tolerance which must have prevailed between Brahmans, Buddhists, and Jains. manical, Buddhist, and Jaina caves are there seen side by side, and their inmates no doubt lived on terms of fairly friendly tolerance, much as the members

See Beal's Records, ii, 167-172; a long account of this mountainty. visited by Hiogen Thrang is there given,

of the Anglican, Roman Catholic, and Wesleyan communions live in Europe at the present day.

Even at Benares, the stronghold of Brähmanism, I witnessed similar proofs of amicable mutual intercourse, and at Nāsik—the Benares of Western India—the proximity of the Buddhist caves and ruined monasteries which I visited, made it abundantly clear that Brāhmans and Buddhists agreed to differ and to avoid serious quarrels.

It must nevertheless be admitted, that in the extreme South of India, and perhaps eventually at Benares and a few other strongholds of Brāhmanism, the difference between the systems became so accentuated as to lead to grievous conflicts. Whether blood was shed it is impossible to prove; but it is alleged, with some degree of probability, that violent crusades against Buddhism were instituted by Kumārila and Śańkara—two wellknown Southern Brāhmans noted for their bigotry—in the seventh and eighth centuries of our era. It does not appear, however, that they were very successful either in the conversion or extermination of Buddhists.

It may, I think, be confidently affirmed that what ultimately happened in most parts of India was, that Vaishpavas and Saivas crept up softly to their rival and drew the vitality out of its body by close and friendly embraces, and that instead of the Buddhists being expelled from India, Buddhism gradually and quietly lost itself in Vaishpavism and Saivism. In fact, by the beginning of the thirteenth century very little Buddhism remained on Indian soil. In a philosophical drama, called the Rise of the Moon of Know-

ledge' (Prabodha-ćandrodaya), written probably about the twelfth century, the approaching triumph of Brāhmanism over Buddhism is clearly indicated; for the Buddhist and other heretical sects are represented as belonging to the losing side.

Yet, after all, it is scarcely correct to say that Buddhism ever wholly died away in India. Its name indeed perished there, but its spirit survived, and its sacred places remain to this day. Its ruined temples, monasteries, monuments, and idols are scattered everywhere, while some of these have been perpetuated and adopted by those later phases of Hindūism which its own toleration helped to bring into existence.

At all events it may be safely affirmed that the passing away of the Buddhistic system in India was on the whole like the peaceful passing away of a moribund man surrounded by his relatives, and was at least unattended with any agonizing pangs.

[&]quot;No doubt there are places in the South of India where there is evidence of some violent persecution. I may instance among the places I visited Tanjore and Madura. When I concluded the reading of a paper on this subject at the meeting of the Royal Asiatic Society on February 15, 1886, the then President, Colonel Yule, justly remarked that the members of two religious communions who hold very similar doctrines, often on that account hate and oppose each other all the more; but my point was that the ultra-tolerance which was of the very essence of both Brähmanism and Buddhism must have prevented actual persecution, except under special circumstances. Brähmanism was much more likely to have adopted Buddhism as part of its system, than to have persecuted and expelled it. In point of fact, the Brähmans, as is well known are ready to regard any great teacher as one of Vishmu's incarnations, and in this way are even willing to pay homage to the Head of Christianity.

LECTURE VIII.

Rise of Theistic and Polytheistic Buddhism.

In the preceding Lecture we have endeavoured to show generally how Buddhism was evolved out of Brāhmanism, how it flourished side by side with Brāhmanism, and how after a chequered career and protracted senility in the land of its birth—lasting for at least fifteen centuries—it ultimately merged its individuality in Vaishpavism and Saivism, or, in other words, disappeared and became lost in a composite system called Hinduism.

We have now to trace more closely the gradual sliding of a simple agnostic and atheistic creed, into a variety of theistic and polytheistic conceptions.

We have already seen how the expansion of the Hinayana into the Maha-yana became an inevitable result of the Buddha's own teaching—in other words, how a rebound from atheism to theism was as unavoidable as the return swing of a heavy pendulum. We need only repeat here that it could not have been otherwise, when a teacher, who never claimed to be more than a man, attempted to indoctrinate his human followers with

Buddhism began to less ground in India about the fourth or fifth century after Christ, but it maintained a chequered career for several succeeding centuries even after Hionen Thuang's time. See p. 161.

principles opposed to the inextinguishable instincts and eternal intuitions of humanity.

In fact the teachers of the Mahá-yāna school were not slow to perceive that, if Buddhism was to gain any hold over the masses, it was essential that it should adapt itself to their human needs. It became imperatively necessary, as a simple preservative measure, to convert a cold philosophical creed, based on an ultra-pessimistic theory of existence, into some sort of belief in the value of human life as worth living. And if life was not to be an invariable current of misery it followed that there must also be some sort of faith in a superintending God controlling that life, and interesting Himself in Man's welfare.

Unfortunately, having once advanced beyond definite limits, the more progressive teachers found it impossible to draw the line at any given point.

No doubt the theistic movement began by simple saint-worship—that is, by veneration for the extinct Buddha as for a perfect saint. This was accompanied by homage offered to his relics and to various memorials of his person.

Then mere veneration and homage led to actual worship, and the Buddha, who from first to last made his own perfect humanity an essential principle of his teaching, became elevated to a pinnacle far above humanity and converted into a veritable god.

Next, it is easy to see that a further development of the theistic movement became inevitable.

For indeed it was only natural that in process of time some of the more eminent of the Buddha's followers should become almost equally revered with himself. It was not, however, till some time after their death that they received any homage resembling that accorded to their Master.

It was then that, instead of being thought of as extinct, according to the orthodox Buddhist doctrine, they were continually elevated in the imagination of their admirers to heavenly regions of beatitude.

Of course this constant increase of saint-worship tended to land men by degrees in a mass of theistic and polytheistic conceptions.

And polytheism could not prevail in Eastern countries without its usual reverse side—polydemonism; and polydemonism could not prevail without its usual adjuncts of mysticism and magic. And all of these again entailed idolatry, relie-worship, fetish-worship, and various other gross superstitions.

Such was the natural termination of the process of degeneration, Let us now trace it more in detail.

And in the first place it must not be forgotten that Gautama himself seems to have foreseen this result.

He seems to have been quite aware of the ineradicable tendency inherent in the nature of human beings, impelling them to clevate their saints and heroes to the position of gods. He therefore took pains to make his beloved disciple and cousin Ananda understand that the truth embodied in the Dharma or Law which he had taught, was all that ought to take his place and represent him when he was gone.

Accordingly we learn from ancient inscriptions that for many years afterwards the only allowable object of veneration among primitive Buddhists was the Law—
that is, the precepts, rules, and ordinances propounded
by Gautama himself—many of which may have been
committed to writing in early times, though oral transmission was at first the usual rule, as it was among
Brāhmans.

In time, however, the interconnexion between Brahmanism and Buddhism, and the tendency to group sacred objects in triads, which showed itself very early in Hindū religious thought and mythology, seems to have led to the idea of a corresponding triple arrangement of venerated objects among Buddhists. Hence three precious things—sometimes called the three jewels (tri-ratua), or the 'three Holies'—came first to be held in honour and then actually worshipped; a kind of personality being accorded to all three, very similar to that supposed to belong to the three chief gods of the Hindū Pantheon.

This triad of personalities consisted of (t) the Buddha himself, that is to say, Gautama Buddha, or the Buddha of the present age of the world; (2) his Dharma or Law, that is, the word and dectrine of the Buddha personified, or so to speak incarnated and manifested in a visible form after his Pari-nirvana; and (3) his Sangha or Order of monks, also in a manner

⁴ First, the Vedic triad of gods, Agni, 'Fire,' Indra, 'wielder of the thunderbolt,' and Sürya, 'the Sun,' followed by the Tri-marti or Brohmā, Siva, and Vislanu. Then the three Gunas or constituents of the material Universe, Sattya, Rajas, and Tamas, and lastly the triple name of Brahmā, Suc-cal-ānanda.

² Sarat Chanden Line, in his interesting Teleton journal, described them as the 'three Holies.'

personified—that is, embodied in a kind of ideal impersonation or collective unity of his true disciples.

This last word, Sangha, which means in Sanskrit
'a collection' or 'assemblage,' is sometimes, as we have
already seen (p. 85), very unsuitably rendered by the
expression 'Buddhist Church.' It simply denotes 'the
collective body of Buddhist monks;' that is to say, the
entire monastic fraternity, comprising in its widest sense
the whole assemblage of monks, Arhats, Pratyeka-Buddhas, Bodhi-sattvas, perfected Buddhas and not yet
perfected saints of all classes, whether on the earth or in
any other division of the Universe; but not including
—be it carefully borne in mind—the still vaster community of living persons constituting the whole body
of the Buddhist laity.

These three, then,—the Buddha, his Law, and his Order of Monks,—passed into the first three divine personifications of early theistic Buddhism, commonly known as the first Buddhist Triad.

Hence we find that the Khuddaka-pāṭha or 'lesser readings' of the fifteen divisions of the Khuddakanikāya (p. 63) begins thus:—

'I put my trust in the Buddha, in the Law, in the Order' (repeated three times).

'Ye beings (Bhūtāni) here assembled of earth and air, let us bow, let us bow before the Buddha, revered by gods and men. May there be prosperity!

'Ye beings of earth and air, let us bow before the Law.

¹ Edited by Childers. See Journal R. A. S., N. S. iv. 318, and Kern's Buddhismus, ii. 156.

'Ye beings of earth and air, let us bow before the Order of Monks.'

When Fā-hien was on his return home and in great peril at sea, he committed his life to the protection of the Sangha, saying:—'I have travelled far in search of the Law, let me, by your dread and supernatural power, return from my wanderings and reach my resting-place.'

And again, on ending his travels, he gratefully acknowledged that he had been guarded in his perils by the dread power of the 'three honoured ones' or 'three precious ones' or 'three Holies'—thus acknowledging the personality of the Law as well as of the Buddha himself and of the Sangha or collective body of Monks'.

But it must be borne in mind that this did not necessarily imply any worship of images. It is certain that for a long time even Buddha himself was not represented visibly. This is proved by the sculptures on the Bharhut Stūpa. Even in the present day the simple expression of trust in the three revered ones constitutes the only formula of worship current in Ceylon. It is true that images of the Buddha are now common in that country, and while travelling there I saw numbers of persons offering homage and flowers to these images. But no prayer was addressed to them, and I noticed no visible representations of the personified Law or Sangha⁸.

¹ Legge's Fa-kien, pp. 112-116,

² Capt. Temple states that the Sangha is personified in Sikkim under the form of a man holding a lotus in his left hand, the right hand being on the right knee.

Nor, when I was at the Buddhist monastery near Darjiling, did I see any image of the Law side by side with that of Gautama, though every book examined by me in the temple-library began with the words:—Namo Buddhāya, 'reverence to the Buddha;' namo Dharmāya, 'reverence to the Law;' namo Sanghāya, 'reverence to the Orden.' The only visible symbol of the three so-called 'Holies' was a long staff with three prongs, like the Indian Tri-sūla,

It seems clear, therefore, that while, in process of time, images of Gautama Buddha were multiplied everywhere—and, as we shall see, in various attitudes and shapes—images of the personified Law and Sangha were never common, and indeed rarely found, except among Northern Buddhists. Those images of the Law which I have examined are in the form of a man with four arms and hands, two of which are folded in worship, while one holds a book (or sometimes a lotus) and the other a rosary.

Sometimes, however, the representation of a book alone is held to be a sufficient symbol of the Law.

The Sangla, on the other hand, is generally symbolized by the image of a man with two arms and hands, one of which, as in the images of Buddha, rests an the knees and the other holds a lotus.

And it may be observed here that of the three mages of the Buddha, the Law, and the Order, some-

According to Capt. Temple, Dharms, 'the law,' is personified in Sikkim as a white woman with four arms, two raised in prayer, the third holding a garland (or resary), the fourth a lotus.

times one occupies the central position and sometimes the other. This circumstance has led scholars to speak of what it is the fashion to term a Buddhist triuity; but in real fact neither Buddhism nor Brāhmanism has any trinity in the true meaning of the term, for although Buddhists claim a kind of tri-unity for their triad, and say that the first contains the second, and that the third proceeds from the first two and contains them, yet the first is clearly never regarded as either the Father or Creator of the world, in the Christian sense.

It appears, in fact, that the earliest Buddhist worship was exactly what might have been expected to follow on the death of a religious Reformer and author of a new system. It was merely the natural expression of deep reverence for the founder of Buddhism, his doctrine, and the collective body of his disciples.

So simple a form of worship, however, did not long satisfy the devotional aspirations of the Buddha's followers, even in the sacred land of pure Buddhism.

The mere offering of homage, either to a system of Law, or to a community of living monks or to departed human saints—even though their memory was kept alive by visible representations, and stimulated by meditation and repetition of prayer-formularies—had in it nothing calculated to support or comfort men in seasons of sickness, bereavement, or calamity. This kind of simple Buddhism might have satisfied the needs of men in times of peace and prosperity. Under other conditions it broke down. It could offer no shelter and give no help amid the storms and tempests of life. Hence the development of the later phases of

the Mahā-yana system, the chief feature of which was a marked change in the meaning attached to the term *Bodhi-sattva.'

This change will be better understood if we go back to what has already been mentioned (at p. 98). We have before explained that, according to the original theory of Buddhism, a Bodhi-sattva is one who has knowledge (derived from self-enlightening intellect) for his essence; that is, he is a being who through all his bodily existences is destined in some final existence to become a Buddha, or self-enlightened man. Until his final birth, however, a Bodhi-sattva is a being in whom true knowledge is rather latent and undeveloped than perfected. Gautama had been a Bodhi-sattva of this character (see p. 134), the merit of whose actions (Karma) in each of his countless previous existences (see p. 109) had been transmitted to succeeding corporeal forms, till in the state immediately preceding his last birth on earth he existed as a Bodhi-sattva in the Tushita heaven (see p. 120). There he continued until the time came for him to be born on earth as the Buddha of the present age, when he entered the right side of his mother in the form of a white elephant (10, 23) 1.

One legend says:—'Thus, O monks, Buddha was born, and the right side of his mother was not pierced, was not wounded. It remained as before,' Foucaux, p. 97. Hissen Theory relates that there is a Vihūra at Kapila easta indicating the spot 'where the Bolhi-sattva descended spiritually into the worsh of his mother,' and that there is a representation of this scene drawn in the Vihūra. I have myself seen many representations of it in Buddhist sculptures.

And it may be repeated here that the white elephant, as something rare and beautiful of its kind, was simply symbolical of the perfect Arhatship which he was destined to achieve in the ensuing birth.

Born, then, at last as the child Gautama, son of Suddhodana, and purified by a long observance of the six transcendent virtues (p. 128), he ultimately attained to perfect knowledge and Arhatship under the Bodhi-tree, and in so attaining passed from the condition of a Bodhi-sattva to that of the highest of all Arhats—a supreme Buddha. Then, after about forty-tive years of diligent discharge of his self-imposed task as a teacher of the right way of salvation, he ultimately passed away in Pari-nirvana, or absolute non-existence.

It is important, however, to remember, that at the moment of his attaining Buddhahood he had transferred the Bodhi-sattvaship to Maitreya, 'the loving and compassionate one,' who became the Buddha-elect, dwelling and presiding as his predecessor had done in the heaven of contented beings (Tushita; see p. 120). There he watches over and promotes the interests of the Buddhist faith, while awaiting the time when he is to appear on earth as Maitreya, or the fifth Buddha of the present age. His advent will not take place till the lapse of five thousand years after the Nirvāṇa of Gautama, when the world will have become so corrupt that the Buddhist Law will be no more obeyed, nor even remembered.

No wonder then that this Maitreya—whose very name implies love and tenderness towards mankind, and who was destined to become, like Gautana, a

Saviour of the world by teaching its inhabitants how to save themselves—became a favourite object of personal worship after Gantama Buddha's death. Even when the worship of other Bodhi-sattvas was introduced, Maitreya retained the distinction of being the only Bodhi-sattva worshipped by all Buddhist countries, whether in the South or in the North. Not that Gautama's memory was neglected. He was, of course, held to be superior to Maitreya, who was still a mere Bodhi-sattva or Buddha-designate. But the feeling towards Gantama Buddha, after his Nirvana and death, became different, and the object of bringing flowers and offerings to his shrines was simply to honour the memory of a departed, not an existing saint. It was a mere mechanical act, fraught with beneficial consequences, but not supplying any real religious need. On the other hand actual prayers were addressed to Maitreya, as to a living merciful being, whose favour it was all-important to secure, and whose heaven was believed to be a region of perfect love and contentment. to which all his worshippers were admitted.

In Himen Thing's Travels a heavenly Rishi is represented as saying:—'No words can describe the personal beauty of Maitreya. He declares a law not different from ours. His exquisite voice is soft and pure. Those who hear it can never tire; those who listen are never satiated!

In fact, the aspirations of few pious Buddhists in early times ever led them to soar higher than the

Beal's Records, i. 228.

happiness of living with Maitreya and listening to his voice in his own Tushita heaven.

It is true that afterwards when the worship of the Dhyāni-Buddha Amitābha came into vogue in Northern countries this Buddha's heaven, called Sukhāvatī, fabled to be somewhere in the Western sky, seems to have taken the place of the heaven of Maitreya. But this belongs to a later phase of Buddhism, to be explained when we speak of the Dhyāni-Buddhas (p. 203).

It was for Maitreya's Tushita heaven that Hiouen Thsang, and other devout men of his day, prayed on their death-beds, and the one Chinese inscription found at Buddha-Gayā is full of expressions indicative of the same longing.

If then, we are able to enter into the feelings of Buddhists everywhere in depending on the living, loving, and energizing Maitreya, rather than on the extinct Buddha who existed only in their memories, we shall find it less difficult to understand how it came to pass that the idea of, so to speak, canonizing every great saint or popular head of a monastic community, and elevating him at death to the position of a Bodhisattva like Maitreya, living in permanent regions of bliss, and able to help his votaries to the same position, came into vogue.

It may make the course of development of Theistic Buddhism clearer if we here revert to the early constitution of the Buddhist monastic brotherhood, and endeavour to show how the homage paid to eminent

¹ Besl's Records, i. 134, note.

and saint-like men led, first to the multiplication of Bodhi-sattvas, and then to polytheism and every form of polytheistic superstition.

A full explanation of the early monastic system is given in the learned work of Koeppen !. It is clear that as long as Gautama was alive he was the sole Head of the brotherhood of monks. After his death the Headship (as in the Christian brotherhood after the death of Christ) was not assigned to any one leader. The Buddha himself forbade this. The term Sangha at that time merely denoted a republican fraternity of monks, bound by no irrevocable yows and subject to no hierarchical Superior, but all intent on following the example, and propagating the doctrines of their departed leader. Soon, however, the formation of separate centres of union and teaching became inevitable, and the term Sangha was then applied to each separate society, and sometimes even to a separate Conclave of each society, as well as to the whole body. It seems at least certain that each monastic association had the right to admit monks, to hear confession, and to excommunicate, Naturally, too, in course of time it became necessary for each society to have some sort of governing body and choose a kind of president, and this presiding officer was originally the senior monk, and accordingly had the simple title of Sthavira (Thera), 'Elder.'

This work, 'Die Religion des Buddha,' by Carl Friederich Koeppen, has been long out of print, and has unfortunately never been translated into English. The German is often difficult, but I have endeavoured to give a correct litea of Koeppen's statements in the instances in which I have made use of them. It is now somewhat out of date.

title appears to have been introduced immediately after Gautama's death.

It is believed that ever since the time of the great Asoka, Sthaviras or Elders who became actual superintendents of monasteries, exercised administrative powers, like those of Abbots; each over his own monastic community. This was the first kind of Headship recognized. It was simply a superiority of age.

As to any still higher form of authority corresponding to that of Pope, Archbishop, or Bishop, and extending over several monasteries, this did not belong to early Buddhism or to its earliest developments. Lists of uninterrupted series of pretended Buddhist Hierarchs exist, but are more fanciful fabrications. Nevertheless, it is certainly a historical fact that along with the superiority of mere age, seniority, and experience, there rapidly grew up pari passu a superiority of knowledge, learning, and sanctity, which were generally, though not invariably, combined in the person of the presiding Elder.

Any one, in fact, who was distinguished for the practice of the highest degree of meditation, for complete acquaintance with the Law, for special purity of conduct, and perfect fulfilment of the precepts, was naturally elevated above the class of ordinary Bhikshus. Such a monk was from the earliest times dignified by the title Arhat, 'very reverend,' i.e. more worthy of honour than the generality. Arhat, in short, was from the first a name for the higher grade of saint-like Bhikshu. Such a man, too, before long, was raised to a still higher level in the estimation of his fellow-monks.

He was believed to have delivered himself from all the consequences of acts, whether had or good—from all the fetters (see p. 127) of life, and therefore from all re-hirth. He was even elevated to a still loftier pinnacle. He was believed by his superstitious admirers to possess unlimited dominion over nature, space, time, and matter; to be all-seeing, all-powerful, and capable of working every kind of miracle. Then, of course, at death he passed away in Pari-nirvāṇa and was, so to speak, canonized. Be it noted, however, that such canonization was never accorded to an Arhat till after his departure from the world.

Probably the immediate disciples of Gautama Bud-dha—that is, his so-called 'great pupils' (see p. 47), were all considered perfect Arhats. And these perfect Arhats were probably the only saints of the earliest period of Buddhism. Yet there was one who surpassed them all by an immeasurable interval, and that one was Gautama Buddha himself. It was the distinguishing mark of a supreme Buddha that he was infinitely greater than all other Arhats, because he had not only gained perfect knowledge himself, but had become the Saviour of the whole world by importing to men the knowledge of how they were to save themselves.

It seems, therefore, only natural that the followers of Buddha, and probably the Buddha himself, before his decease, should have thought it desirable to establish a more systematic gradation of saintship by filling up the immense gap between ordinary Arhats and the supreme Buddha. It was this that led to the idea of Pratyeka-Buddhas, that is, self-dependent solitary Buddhas 1 (see p. 134), as well as to the notion of a still higher being called a Bodhi-sattva, who, as the Buddhadesignate and future successor of Gautama, occupied a still more exalted intermediate position than a Pratyeka-Buddha.

Of course it became difficult to fix on any living man, or any recently deceased saint worthy of the highest stage of Bodhi, to which a being about to become a perfect Buddha was supposed to attain.

The first to be so elevated (though apparently not by Gautama himself) was, as frequently mentioned before, the mythical individual Maitreya. He was, we repeat, for a long time the only Bodhi-sattva recognized by all Buddhists alike, whether adherents of the Hima-yana or Maha-yana. But he was not a historical personage, like Gautama or his immediate disciples. He was a mere mythological personification of that spirit of love—of that kindly and friendly disposition towards all living beings by force of which Buddhism hoped one day to conquer the world, and win it over to itself.

And in conformity with his mythical character, and probably to prevent the rivalry of pretenders among future ambitious heads of monasteries, he was not to appear for five thousand years, till the teaching of Gautama had lost its power.

Indeed, it was only to be expected that this rank should at first have been accorded to one person alone

It is obvious to remark that in the same way those who are intellectually self-dependent and self-raised among ourselves generally rise to a higher level of popular esteem than those taught by other men.

-just as in worldly affairs there could be only one Heir-apparent to the throne.

Such was the more simple doctrine of early Buddleism in regard to the relative position of the members of the Buddleist community.

How then did the teachers of the Maha-yana proceed to amplify this doctrine!

They taught that there were two methods of sulvation or, so to speak, two ways or two vehicles—the Great and the Little (Maha-yana and Hina-yana)—and indeed two Bodhis or forms of true knowledge which these vehicles had to convey 1. The former was for ordinary persons, the latter for beings of larger talents and higher spiritual powers. The 'Little Way' was the simple doctrine, which had many Arhats but only one Bodhi-sattvathe 'Great Way,' on the other hand, was the wider and broader, which had many Bodhi-sattvas as well as many Arbuts. He who satisfied the usual requirements of Saintship received the rank of an Arhat in both systems. But in the wider system every one who aimed at unusual sanctity on the one band, and knowledge (Bodhi) on the other, might walk on the Great road leading to Bodbi-sattvaship, and receive the title Bodhi-sattva.

We have seen (p. 136) that the Hims-yana, or 'Little system,' taught that there were only twenty-four Buddhas who had preceded Gantama. Three of these (viz. Kraku-échanda, Kanaka-muni, and Kasyapa), with Gantama as a fourth, had appeared in the present age, and only one Bodhi-sattva (Maitreya) was to come.

¹ There was also a 1 middle way, see p. 159.

But according to the 'Great System,' it was a mistake to limit the acquisition of the highest Saintship in this manner. It maintained that there would be numberless supreme Buddhas (and, in addition to them, self-taught, solitary Buddhas, called Pratyeka-Buddhas), as well as numberless Bodhi-sattvas, even in the present age of the world. In other words, it propounded the doctrine that the practice of the six (or ten) transcendent virtues (p. 128), and especially the acquisition of transcendent wisdom (prajūā pāramitā), might qualify many saints for the attainment of Bodhi-sattvaship and Buddhaship. According to one theory, there were to be at least a thousand Buddhas, while, according to others, Buddhas and Buddhas, according to others, Buddhas, and Buddhas, according to other according to others, Buddhas, and Buddhas, according to other according to

But this theory of numberless Bodhi-sattvas involved an entirely new view of their nature and of the meaning of the term.

In fact, the Bodhi-sattvas of the more developed Mahā-yāna school were not Bodhi-sattvas at all, according to the strict sense of the term. It is true they resembled the genuine Bodhi-sattva in having gone through a long series of existences-leading them at last to perfect saintship and to a heaven of their own, but they were under no obligation to give up their Bodhi-sattvaship, quit their celestial abodes, or descend ultimately as human Buddhas upon earth.

Furthermore, they never appeared to aim at Pari-nirvāṇa like their earthly counterparts. Their most obvious raison d'être seems to have been to supply the need of personal objects of worship, and though in Tibet they were believed to have their own secondary corporeal emanations—sometimes called their 'incarnations,' but more properly described as descents (avatāra) of portions of their essence in a constant succession of human saints,—they never really left their own permanent stations in the heavenly regions. Indeed, it is probable that the chief cause of their popularity, as personal objects of adoration, was that they were able to help their worshippers to attain to the same permanent and unchangeable regions of bliss.

It was thus that the 'Great Vehicle' took up an attitude which raised it not only above the simple effort to suppress the passions and desires, but also above the hopeless Nihilism of early Buddhism; for it soon became the fashion for the most devoted and pious of Buddhist, monks to aspire to the title and actual blessedness of Bodhi-sattvaship rather than to the doubtful blessedness of utter personal annihilation involved in Buddhahood. At any rate the numerous Bodhi-sattvas of the 'Great Method' appear to have remained quite contented with their condition, so long as it involved perpetual residence in the heavens, and quite willing to put off all desire for Buddhahood and Pari-nirvaga.

Without doubt, this more amplified system was the result of a reaction of Brahmanism on Buddhism. It was at first a mere plan for creating a close Hierarchy like that of the Brahman caste—that is to say, a privileged class of men possessed of higher knowledge and sanctity and superior to the majority of Bhikshus of the common stamp. Then it soon developed into a scheme for satisfying the craving of the masses for divinities of

some kind to whom they might appeal for help in time of need.

In all probability the first to receive the title of Bodhi-sattva, next to Maitreya, were the most celebrated Arhats before mentioned, who were immediate disciples of Gautama, not however till death had separated them from their human frames, when, as a matter of course, they received a kind of worship like that accorded to all leaders of men, just as the carliest saints, heroes, and teachers of Brāhmanism did.

To specify all the Arbats who were elevated to the rank of Bodhi-sattva and became objects of veneration in later times would be a difficult and unprofitable task.

We may also dismiss, as unworthy of note, statements such as that in the Lalita-vistara, in which it is declared that 32,000 Bodhi-sattvas joined the Buddha's assembly in the Jetavana garden. But we may notice the quasideification of a few historical personages mentioned by the two Chinese travellers, whose account of the state of Buddhism in India from the fourth to the seventh centuries has been so often quoted.

First of all came the immediate followers and socalled 'great pupils' (see p. 47) of Gautama, namely, his two chief disciples, Sāri-puttra and Moggallāna (Maudgalyāyana = Modgala-puttra)', both of whom are believed to have died before him. Then came the three great leaders at the first Council: 1. Kāsyapa (pp. 46, 55); 2. Gautama's cousin and beloved pupil Ānanda; 3. Upāli (note, p. 56).

¹ See pp. 47, 104. Keeppen compares them to St. Peter and St. Paul.

Next to these perhaps the most celebrated teacher elevated to Bodhi-sattvaship was Nagarjuna '-noticed before as the alleged founder of the Maha-yana system. and its introducer into Tibet. According to one account he was the son of a Brahman of Vidarbha, and taught Buddhism in the south of India. He had a celebrated disciple named Deva (or Arya-deva) 2. Nāgārjuna was at any rate a great teacher and developer of the Mahayana. A legend relates that he was skilled in magic. and was able thereby to prolong his own and a Southern Indian king's life indefinitely. This caused great grief to the mother of the Heir-apparent, who instigated her son to ask Nāgārjuna for his own head. Nāgārjuna complied with the request, and cut his own head off with a blade of Kusa grass, nothing else having the power to injure him. He is said by Hiouen Thsang to have lived in Southern Kosala about 400 years after the death of Gautama, and is worshipped under different epithets in Tibet, China, Mongolia, and even Coylon. Probably he lived in the first or second century—Beal places him between A.D. 166 and 200. Wassiljew considers him a wholly mythical personage. The additions he made to Buddhist doctrines were undoubtedly great. When he died Stupas were erected to his memory, and in some places he was even worshipped as Buddha,

The Rev. S. Beal (Ind. Antiquary for Dec., 1886) shows that Nagarjuna and Nagasena are two different persons. Sir A. Canningham is of the same opinion. It may be noted that Padma-sambhava is credited with introducing the more corrupt form of Buddhism along with magic into Tibet at a later date, probably in the eighth century.

For the account of Nagarjuna's disciple Deva, mentioned by Hioten Theory, see Beal's Records, ii. 97.

Among other deified, or partially deified Bodhisattvas, whose images and Stūpas (p. 161) the Chinese
pilgrims found scattered in various parts of India, may
be mentioned, those of the mythical Buddhas who
preceded Gautama, especially Kāṣyapa¹. Then we have
Rāhula (son of Gautama), the patron of all novices, and
founder of the realistic school called Vaibhāshika¹;
Dharma-pāla, Vasu-mitra (or Vasu-bandhu), Aṣvaghosha, Guṇamati, Sthiramati, and others. In this
practice of deifying their saints, Buddhists merely
followed the example of the adherents of Hindūism.
And we may add that this tendency is constantly repeating itself in the religious history of all nations.

There is even a tendency to press the saints of other countries into the service. This is remarkably exemplified in the history of Barlaam and Josaphat, current in Europe in the Middle Ages. The zealous Roman Catholics of those days thought that they could not exclude so noble a monk as Buddha from the catalogue of their own saints, and so they registered bim in their list as St. Josaphat (Josaphat being a corruption of Bodhisat). Colonel Yule, in his Marco Polo, states that a church in Palermo is dedicated to this saint.

And here mention may be made of a modern deified Hindu teacher or sage, named Gorakh-nāth, who is said to have gone from India into Nepāl, and is worshipped

Of course not to be confounded with Gautama's disciple of the same name, who is generally called Maha-Kaiyapa.

^{*} According to Eitel he is still revered as the patron-saint of all novices, and is to be re-born as the eldest son of every future Euddha; see Legge's Fa-hien, p. 46.

there as well as at Gorakh-pur and throughout the Panjäb. Very little is known about him, and he belongs more to Hindhism than to Buddhism. Some say that he was a cotemporary of Kabīr (1488–1512), and, according to a Janamsākhī, he once had an interview with Nānak, the founder of the Sikh sect. Such legendary accounts as are current are wrapped in much mystery. One legend describes him as born from a lotus,

Others describe him as the third or fourth in a series of Saiva teachers, and the founder of the Kanphāţā sect of Yogis. The remarkable thing about him is that he succeeded in achieving an extraordinary degree of popularity among Northern Hindus and among some adherents of Buddhism in Nepāl. His tomb is in the Panjāb, and he is to this day adored as a kind of god by immense numbers of the inhabitants of North Western India under the hills.

But the canonization of such historical teachers in India and their elevation to semi-divine rank did not satisfy the craving of the uneducated masses, either among Buddhists or Hindus, for personal deities, possessed of powers over human affairs far greater than any departed human beings, however eminent. In Buddhism the supposed existence of the more god-like Bodhi-sattva Maitreya—venerated by both the Mahā-yāna and the Hina-yāna schools—was not sufficient to satisfy this craving.

Hence the 'Great Vehicle' soon began to teach the existence of numerous mythological Bodhi-sattvas, other than Maitreya, to whom no historical character belonged, but whose functions were more divine.

LECTURE IX.

Theistic and Polytheistic Buddhism.

In the preceding Lecture I have endeavoured to sketch the rise of theistic and polytheistic Buddhism.

We have now to turn our attention to its development, especially in regard to the worship of mythical Bodhi-sattvas, and of the Hind@ gods and other mythological beings.

Some of the Bodhi-sattvas of the Maha-yana or Great System were merely quasi-deifications of eminent saints and teachers. Others were impersonations of certain qualities or forces; and just as in early Buddhism we have the simple triad of the Enddha, his Law, and his Order, so in Northern Buddhism the worship of mythical Bodhi-sattvas—other than Maitreya—was originally confined to a triad, namely (1) Manju-sri, he of beautiful glory;' (2) Avalokitesvara, 'the looking-down lord, often called Padma-pani, the lotushanded;' (3) Vajra-pāņi or Vajra-dhara, 'the thunderbolt-handed."

These three mythical Bodhi-sattvas were not known to early Buddhists, nor to the Buddhists of Ceylon. They are not even found in the oldest books of the Northern School (such as the Lalita-vistara), though they occur conspicuously in the Saddharma-pundarika.

All we can say with certainty is, that when Fa-hien visited Mathura on the Jumna 400 years after Christ, their cult certainly existed there at that time.

We shall not be far wrong if we assert that it was adopted in about the third contary of our era.

As already indicated (see p. 175), the idea of the first Buddhist triad—the Buddha, the Law, and the Monastic Order—accepted by the adherents of both Vehicles was probably derived from the excliest Brahmanical triad. (See also Brahmanism and Hinduism, pp. 9, 44, 74.)

In the same way the second Buddhist triad introduced by the advanced teachers of the Great Vehicle, viz. Mañju-śri, Avalokitesvara (= Padma-paṇi), and Vajra-paṇi, corresponded to the later Hindū triad (tri-mūrti) of deities, Brahmā, Vishṇu, and Siya.

I have explained in 'Brahmanism and Hinduism' (pp. 54, 73) how the gods Vishnu and Siva gradually usurped the position of the god Brahma, whom they dispossessed of his co-equality with themselves, and how the whole mythology of the Hindus, which was originally complicated by a large admixture of pre-Aryan and Vedic elements, ultimately became more simplified by arranging itself under the two heads of Vaishnavism and Saivism, all other mythological personages being regarded as forms of either Vishnu or Siva.

In contradistinction to this, we find that each member of the two Buddhist triads holds its own, and we are led on to a system which bewilders us by ever increasing complications—a system which preserves the individuality of its own triads and deified saints, and yet recognizes almost all the gods, demigods, demons, and supernatural beings of Hindüism.

I propose now to offer some account of the develop-

ment of the Buddhist Pantheon, beginning with the mythical conceptions peculiar to Buddhism, and passing on to those held in common with Hindhism.

And first as to the second Buddhist triad abovenamed, it may be noted, as a proof of the very gradual growth of Buddhistic mythology, that in the earlier developments of Buddhism the three Bodhi-sattvas constituting that triad have very restricted functions.

When I visited the Buddhist caves at Ellora, I noticed that in the ancient sculptures there, Padmapani and Vajra-pani (but not Manju-śrī) are represented as attendants of the human Buddha.

Of course it is easy to understand that the duty of guarding the Buddha ultimately expanded into that of watching over and protecting the whole Buddhist world, though it is difficult to determine which of the three mythical Bodhi-sattvas became first celebrated for the effective discharge of this duty, or to which of the three chronological precedence ought to be assigned.

Without taking the order already given, we may begin with Padma-pāṇi as the most popular, and may note that he has a name, Avalokitesvara, composed of the two Sanskrit words avalokita, 'looking down',' and Isvara, 'lord,' the latter being the Brāhmanical name for the Supreme God—a name wholly unrecognized by early Buddhism, but assigned by the Hindus to the three personal gods, Brahma, Vishau, and Siva, especially to the latter.

⁴ The use of the passive participle in an active sense is not uncommon in Sanskrit, but is generally confined to verbs involving some idea of motion.

198

In the duty of watching over and protecting the whole Buddhist world, Avadokitesvana (= Padma-pāṇi), that is, 'the lord who looks down with pity on all men,' certainly takes the lead, and his name was in keeping with the reputation for answering prayer which he soon achieved.

In the Limism of Tibet, he is, as we shall see hereafter, a kind of divine Pope, existing eternally in the
heavens as Vicar of one of the Buddhas of the present
age, but delegating his functions to a succession of
earthly Popes in whom he is perpetually incarnated
and re-incarnated, while at the same time preserving
his own personality in his own heaven.

Indeed, the popularity of his worship is one of the chief characteristics of the Mahā-yāna system, and is not confined to Tibet, though he is believed to be the special patron of that country. It is he who during the continuance of the present age of the world presides over the whole cycle of soul-migration. In a word, the temporal welfare of all living beings, and of all who have to wander through the worlds of the gods, men, demons, ghosts, animals, and livers in hell, is especially assigned to him.

People, therefore, pray to him more frequently than
to any other Bedhi-settva, and not only for release
from the misery of future re-births, but in all cases of
present bodily danger and domestic affliction. Hence
he has numerous other names or epithets, such as 'God
of mercy,' 'Ocean of pity' (Karuṇarṇava), 'Deliverer
from fear' (Abhayaṇ-da), 'Lord of the world' (Lokesvara), 'World-protector' (Loka-pāla), 'Protector of the

Āryas' (Ārya-pāla); and the Chinese traveller Fā-hien says of himself, that he prayed in his heart for the aid of Avalokitesvara when in great peril during a storm at sea.

That his worship was very prevalent among Buddhists of the Mahā-yāna School all over India, as well as in Tibet, from the fourth to the seventh century, is attested also by Hiouen Thsang. Both travellers tell us that they frequently met with his images, which were often placed on the tops of mountains. Possibly this fact may account for the name he acquired of the 'Looking-down lord.' Or, on the other hand, it is possible that his name may have led to the selection of high situations for his temples and images.

And it may be observed here that although Avalokitesvara bears a close resemblance in character to Vishnu, yet his images often conform to the Brahmā type, and sometimes to that of Siva!. He has generally several faces—sometimes even eleven or twelve—and usually four or eight arms. These faces are placed one above the other in the form of a pyramid, in three tiers, and probably indicate that he looks down on all three worlds, namely, the worlds of desire, of true form, and of no form (pp. 213, 214), from all points of the horizon.

Note, however, that two of his hands are generally folded, as if adoring the Buddha, while his two other hands hold such emblems as the lotus and wheel (especially the lotus). This distinguishes the images

¹ See Beal's Records, i. 114, note 107.

of the mere Bodhi-sattva Avalokitesvara from those of the god Vishnu, who, although he has four arms, is never represented in an attitude of adoration. Note, too, that the many-headed images of Avalokitesvara probably belong to the later phase of the Mahā-yāha, when he was regarded as an emanation or spiritual son of the Dhyāni-Buddha Amitābha, whose head forms the eleventh above his own ten. There are descriptions of earlier idols, which make it probable that Avalokitesvara was originally represented in ordinary human shape.

When his worship was introduced into China the name he received was Kwan-she-yin or Kwan-yin (in Japan Kwan-non)—a name denoting (according to Professor Legge) one who looks down on the sounds of the world, and listens to the voices of men.

We know that each of the chief Hindu gods had his female counterpart or Sakti, who is often more worshipped than the male. Similarly the female counterpart of the male Avalokitesvarn is the form of the god chiefly worshipped in China and Japan'. In those countries he is only known in the feminine character of 'goddess of mercy,' and in this form is represented with two arms, but oftener with four or more, and even with a thousand eyes.

The connexion of Avalokitesvara with Siva, as well as with Vishou, is proved by the fact that in some characteristics Kwan-yin corresponds to the Durgā

^{&#}x27; Professor Legge tells us that an intelligent Chinese once asked him whether 'the worship of Mary in Europe was not similar?'

form of Siva's wife, and in others to the form called Pārvatī, who, as dwelling on mountains, may be supposed to look down with compassion on the world.

As to Vajra-pāṇi (or Vajra-dhara), 'the thunderbolt-handed,' this Bodhi-sattva corresponds in some respects to Indra. He is the fiercest and most awe inspiring of all the Bodhi-sattvas, and was, in time, converted into a kind of Buddhistic form of Siva, resembling that god in his character of controller of the demon-host and destroyer of evil spirits. Hiouen Thsang describes how eight Vajra-pāṇis surrounded the Buddha as an escort, when he journeyed to visit his father Suddhodana. Vajra-pāṇi is of course a popular object of veneration in all Northern Buddhist countries, where a dread of malignant spirits is so prevalent that the waving to and fro of an implement symbolizing a thunderbolt (Vajra, or in Tibetan Dorje) is practised as a method of keeping them at bay and averting their malice.

Nevertheless, Vajra-pāņi is not so popular as the third Bodhi-sattva, Mañju-śri, 'he of glorious beauty,' also called Mañju-ghosha, 'having a beautiful voice,' and Vāgišvara, 'lord of speech.' This Bodhi-sattva, as 'wisdom personified,' and as 'lord of harmony,' may be regarded as a counterpart of the Brāhmanical Brahmā or Višva-Karman, the supposed creator of the universe. Brahmā, however, in his character of chief god, needed no Buddhistic substitute, having been incorporated by name into Buddhism. Mañju-śrī, as 'lord of speech,' seems also to be a counterpart of Brahmā's consort Sarasvatī.

According to some, a learned and eloquent Brahman teacher, named Mañju-śri, introduced Buddhism from India into Nepāl about 250 years after the Nirvāņa of Buddha, and the mythical Mañju-srī may have been a development of the historical personage. His worship is mentioned by both Fā-hien and Hiouen Thsang 1, and seems to have been very popular.

A personification of Prajňa paramita, transcendent wisdom, is also named. And indeed it seems natural that so soon as the Buddhists began to personify qualities and invest them with divine attributes, learning should have been among the first selected for deification, as it was by the Hindus in early times.

Mark, however, that the popular Manju-sri has no place assigned to him in the Dhyani-Buddha theory.

This mystical theory was a later development. It may be explained thus:—The term Dhyāna (Jhāna) is a general expression for the four gradations of mystic meditation which have ethereal spaces or worlds corresponding to them (p. 200), and a Dhyāni-Buddha is a Buddha who is supposed to exist as a kind of spiritual essence in these higher regions of abstract thought.

That is to say, every Buddha who appears on earth in a temporary buman body—with the object of teaching men how to gain Nirvāņa—exists also in an ideal counterpart, or ethereal representation of himself, in the formiess worlds of meditation (p. 213). These ideal Buddhas are as numerous as the Buddhas, but as there are only five chief human Buddhas in the present age—Kraku-échanda, Kanaka-muni, Kāśyapa, Gautama, and

Legge's Translation, p. 46. Bed, i. 180, ii. 220. According to Schlagintweit, a historical teacher named Manju-ari taught in the eighth or ninth century a. p.

the future Buddha Maitreya—so there are only five corresponding Dhyani-Buddhas:—Vairoćana, Akshobhya, Ratna-sambhava, Amitābha, and Amogha-siddha (sometimes represented in images as possessing a third eye). But this is not all; each of these produces by a process of evolution a kind of emanation from bimself called a Dhyani-Bodhi-sattva, to act as the practical head and guardian of the Buddhist community between the interval of the death of each human Buddha and the advent of his successor. Hence there are five Bodhi-sattvas—Samanta-bhadra, Vajra-pāṇi, Ratna-pāṇi, Padma-pāṇi (= Avalokitesvara), and Visva-pāṇi—corresponding to the five Dhyani-Buddhas and to the five earthly Buddhas respectively. In Nepāl five corresponding female Saktis or Tārā-devis are named (see p. 216).

It is remarkable that the Chinese pilgrims from the fifth to the seventh centuries, while often mentioning the Bodhi-sattvas, make no allusion to any of the Dhyāni-Buddhas—whence we may gather that Audtābha, though adopted into Indian Buddhism, was not actually worshipped in India at least as a personal god.

In point of fact, it was only the Buddhism of the North which was not satisfied with the original triad of the Buddha, the Law, and the Monkhood. It, therefore, invented in addition five triads, each consisting of a Dhyani-Buddha, a Dhyani-Bodhi-sattva, and an earthly Buddha, though of these triads only one was of importance, namely, that consisting of Amitabha, Avalokitesvara, and the human Buddha, Gautama. But the Lalita-vistara does not mention this theory.

It should be observed, too, that an important addi-

tion to the Maha-yana doctrine was made in certain Northern countries about the tenth century of our era,

A particular sect of Buddhists in Nepāl, calling themselves Alšvarikas, propounded a theory of a Supreme Being (Isvara), to whom they gave the name of a 'primordial Buddha' (Ādi-Buddha), and who was declared to be the source and originator of all things, and the original Evolver of the Dhyani-Buddhas, or Buddhas of contemplation, while they again were supposed to evolve their corresponding Dhyani-Bodhi-sattvas.

It is clear, of course, that this addition was a mere adaptation of Buddhism to Brahmanism, and that the Ādi-Buddha was invented to serve as a counterpart of the One Universal Spirit Brahma—the one eternally existing spiritual Essence, from which all existing things are mere emanations.

Sometimes, however, this Adi-Buddha is said to have produced all things through union with Prajña (mentioned before, p. 202), in which case he is rather to be identified with the personal Creator Brahma.

Observe, moreover, that even in early times one of the Dhyani-Buddhas—the one called Amitablia, 'diffusing infinite light,'—lost his purely abstract character, and was worshipped by Northern Buddhists as a personal God. He is in the present day held by them to be an eternal Being, the ideal of all that is beautiful and good, who receives his worshippers into a heaven called Sukhavati, 'paradise of pleasures' (see p. 183).

But it must also be noted that neither Adi-Buddha nor Amitābha, when regarded as personal gods, were held to be Creators of the World in the Christian sense. They were merely Supreme rulers outside and above it; for Northern Buddhists agree with Southern in thinking that the world exists of itself, and that its only Creator is the force of its own acts.

We pass on now to consider how far and with what modifications the mythology of Brāhmanism and Hindūism was incorporated into Buddhism.

I have already pointed out that although the Buddha changed the character of much of the existing mythology, he never prohibited his lay-followers from continuing their old forms of worship, or bowing down before the deities honoured by their fathers and grandfathers.

Apart indeed from the shrewd policy of not assuming an attitude of hostility to popular creeds and usages, the tolerant tendency and universality of the Buddha's teaching obliged him, in common consistency, to recognize, and as far as possible appropriate, the various religious elements existing around him, and to subordinate them to his own purposes.

In fact, according to the theory of true Buddhism, as has been well pointed out by other writers, there was only one system of doctrine and only one Law—that Law (Dharma) which Gautama Buddha came to renovate for the benefit of the world in the present age.

Hence all the apparently conflicting creeds, degmas, forms, ceremonies, and usages of all nations, tribes, and races, were in reality mere outcomes, or dim recollections, or corruptions, of that one and the same universal Dharma which countless Buddhas had preached to mankind, in countless ages before the time of Gautama, and would continue to preach in ages to come.

Hinduism, therefore, like all other creeds, was contained in the Dharma of Buddhism, and the great object of Gautama's advent was not to uproot the old religion, but to purify it from error and restore it.

It was on this account that he regarded the Hindu gods as occupying a place in his own system, though not without some modification of the nature of their supposed position, offices, and functions.

And here it will be necessary to give an account of the later Buddhist theory of twenty-six successive tiers of heavens, one rising above the other (p. 120).

In the centre of the world-system stands, as we have seen, the vast mass of the mythical mountain Meru. On the upper portion of this stupendous axis of the universe and above the eight chief hells and the worlds of animals, ghosts, demons, and men, is situated the lowest heaven of the gods, where abide the four Mabā-rājas, 'great champions,' or guardians of the earth and the heavens against the demons, who are ever engaged in assailing them from their world below. These four are represented in full armour, with drawn swords; one quarter of the heavens being assigned to the guardianship of each; viz. the East to Dhrita-rashtra, king of the Gandharvas; the South to Virudlaka, king of the Kumbhandas; the West to Virupaksha, king of the Nagas; the North to Kuvera (Vaisravana), king of the Yakshas. The inhabitants of this heaven are called Catur-mahārāja-kāyikas, or simply Mahārājikadevah. Above this lowest heaven, and on the highest summit of the world's axis, Meru, is enthroned the god Sakra (Indra), known in the Veda as god of the atmosphere. He is lord of a heaven of his own, and no god is more popular among Buddhists or oftener named in their legends; yet he is inferior to Mahabrahmā and to Māra (p. 208). Buddha himself was Indra in some of his births (p. 111). To this heaven he ascended to preach the Law to his mother.

Hence we may infer that in the early days of Buddhism, Indra, who was perhaps the chief god of the Rig-veda, was still the favourite god of the people.

His heaven forms the second tier, reckoning from the lowest upwards (see p. 120), and is called Trayastrinsa (Tāvatinsa), that of the thirty-three divinities—as recognized in the Vedic hymns—consisting of the three groups of eleven Rudras, eight Vasus, and twelve Adityas, together with personifications of Heaven and Earth.

The remaining heavens of the gods, which rise in succession above the lowest and above Indra's and therefore in the sky above Mount Meru, are the third, fourth, fifth, and sixth. These are not illuminated by the sun and moon, since the gods who live in them give out a sufficient light from their own persons. The first of them, or third of the heavens, is inhabited by beings called Yamas. They were known to the Brahmans and probably presided over the periods of the day. They are called 'strifeless,' because they have not to take part in the war constantly being waged by the gods of the two lower heavens against the demons (Asuras), who are unable to advance into the regions above Meru.

The fourth heaven is that of the Tushitas or 'perfectly contented beings.' It is a peculiarly sacred region, as it is the home of all the Bodhi-sattvas destined to become Buddhas. Gautama Buddha once dwelt there, and Maitreya now presides in it.

The fifth beaven is inhabited by the Nirmanarati-deväli, that is, beings who constantly enjoy pleasures provided by themselves.'

The sixth heaven, and the highest of the Deva-lokas, is the abode of the Para-nirmita-vasa-varti-devah, beings who constantly enjoy pleasures provided for them by others.' These beings are also called Maras, and are lords of sensuous desires. When the theory of mees of gods was invented, it led to the figurent of millions of Maras ruled over by a chief Mara, who tempts men to indulge their passions (pp. 28, 35, 41), and is always. on the watch to enter the citadel of the body by the gates of eye, ear, etc. (see note, p. 129). Māra's names is Kāma, 'desire,' He is superior to all the gods of the worlds of sense, even to Sakra or Indra. In every Cakravala or Universe of worlds there is a Mara. He is sometimes called the Buddhist Satur, but this is misleading. He is rather a superior god, whose power consists in exciting sensual or carnal desires.

So far, then, the heavens are all worlds of sense,—like the earth and the lower regions,—and are spheres inhabited by beings who have sexual feelings and live active lives. But at this point in the ascent upwards all sensuality ceases, and we are introduced to beings who enjoy a higher condition of existence in which there is no distinction of sex, and all sensuous desires and objects have lost their hold over the frame—a condition supposed to be induced by the exercise of mystical abstract meditation (Dhyāna, Pāli Jhāna). The importance of Dhyana or intense abstract meditation in the Buddhist system has been pointed out before (p. 32). It is the chief religious exercise in which a true follower of Buddha can engage, and although it is divided into four stages, the man who exercises himself perfectly in any one of the four, becomes so sublimated and refined that he cannot be re-born in any of the sensuous heavens, or in any region lower than the Brahmā worlds.

The first stage of Dhyana consists in fixing (Dharana) the mind and at the same time exercising the thinking faculties on some object, in such a way that a state of ecstatic joy and serenity is attained.

The second consists in concentrating the mind or soul so intensely on itself that the thinking faculties cease to act and only ecstatic joy and serenity remain.

In the third, nothing remains but perfect serenity.

The fourth is a trance-like condition of utter indifference and torpor, in which there is neither any exercise of thought, nor any conscious joy or serenity, but the whole being is released from the fetters of sense and soars to a transcendental condition, characterized by latent energy and a power of working miracles (p. 133).

These four stages of abstract meditation must not be confused with the four earnest reflections and the five contemplations (pp. 49, 127), which are not so abstract and require more earthly objects on which to be exercised.

The fourth and last Dhyana is also called Samadhi, and properly means such a perfect concentration of the soul's faculties, that the soul becomes merged in itself. It is often used to denote an ecstatic condition, scarcely to be distinguished from trance or hypnotism or catalepsy. Those devotees in India who practise it are buried, not burnt, and their tombs are called Samadhs.

To return now to Buddhist Cosmology, the theory of later Buddhism is that he who has practised the first Dhyana will rise at death to one of the three tiers of heavens connected with that first Dhyana, i.e. to the first and lowest of the four groups of worlds of true form (rapa), in which all sexual distinctions are obliterated.

This first or lowest group consists of the worlds of the Brahmas, a high order of gods divided into three classes with three tiers of abodes.

The first class of Brahmā gods, inhabiting the first or lowest of the tiers of the Brahmā abodes, consists of the Brahma-parisajjā devāḥ, or beings who constitute the retinue of the god Mahā-brahmā—the chief of all the Buddhist gods.

The second class of Brahmā gods, inhabiting the second tier, consists of the Brahma-purchitā devāḥ, 'beings who are the ministers of Mahā-brahmā.'

The third class of Brahmā gods, inhabiting the highest of the three tiers, consists of the Mahā-brahmās, 'great Brahmās,' of whom Mahā-brahmā is the chief.

The inhabitants of these three worlds are sometimes called the Brahma-kāyikā devāḥ, 'gods having a Brahmā form.'

It is important, however, to note that Brahmā or Mahā-brahmā, sometimes called Brahmā Sahām-pati,

¹ Even the Brahmis, after immense periods of life in the Brahms

'lord of those who have to suffer¹,' is the king of all the higher heavens (p. 214), ruling there, as Māra and Indra do in the lower worlds and heavens of sense and desire. Out of deference to Brahmanism he has been adopted as the chief god of the Buddhist Pantheon, and yet he is far inferior to the Buddha.

Furthermore, it is to be observed that every Cakravala or 'system of worlds' (see p. 120) has its own Maha-brahma ruling over its own higher heavens, and that as there are countless Cakra-valas, so there are countless Maha-brahmas. Nor is any of these chief gods eternal. Each has to pass into some other form of existence at the end of vast periods of time, and is then succeeded by another. Gautama Buddha himself was born four times as Maha-brahma (see p. 111).

The second group of worlds of true form has also three tiers of heavens like the first, and is assigned as an abode to those who have risen to the second degree of contemplation.

The characteristic of these three heavens is that they are regions of true light—not of the sun's light, but of mental enlightenment, and each of the three is inhabited by beings who have raised themselves to different heights of knowledge and intelligence.

In the first are the Parittabha (Parittabha) devah, beings of circumscribed or limited enlightcument; in

heavers, have to go through other births in one of the six ways of migration. Sahām-patā may therefore mean 'the lord of safferers.' all life involving suffering,' and this excludes the idea of his 'hemg lord over the Buddlm who has not to be hern again.'

the second are the Apramaṇābhā (Appamāṇābhā) devāḥ,

beings of infinite light; in the third are the Abhāsvarā (Ābhassarā) devāḥ, ' beings of the clearest light.'

The third group of worlds of true form has again three tiers of heavens, which are assigned to those who have raised themselves to the third stage of contemplation.

The peculiarity of these three seems to be that they are regions of the greatest purity, and that each of the three is the abode of beings distinguished by higher and higher degrees of purity. In the first are the Paritta-subhā (Paritta-subhā) devāh, 'gods or beings of limited purity;' in the second are the Apramāṇa-subhā (Appamāṇa-subhā) devāh, 'beings of unlimited purity;' in the third are the Subha-kritsnā (Subha-kiṇṇā) devāh, 'beings of absolute purity.'

The fourth group of worlds of true form has seven tiers of heavens, occupied by those beings who have risen to the fourth or highest grade of abstract meditation (Dhyāna), which is really a state of meditating on nothing and of complete indifference to all concrete objects. These beings are the emancipated Arhats who have delivered themselves from the cycle (Saṃsāra) of constant re-birth (p. 134).

In the first tier are the Vrihat-phalā (Vehapphalā) devāh, 'beings enjoying great reward;' in the second are the Asanjāi-sattvā (Asanna-sattā) devāh, 'beings lost in total unconsciousness;' in the third are the Avrihā (Avihā) devāh, 'beings who make no efforts;' in the fourth are the Atapā (Atappā) devāh, 'beings who never endure any pain;' in the fifth are the Sudaršā (Sudassā) devāh, 'beings who see clearly;' in the sixth

are the Sudarsino (Sudassi) devāh, 'beings of beautiful appearance;' in the seventh are the Akanishṭhā (Akaniṭṭhā) devāḥ, 'highest of all beings.' In this last must be included all Arhats and Pratyeka-Buddhas,

High above the worlds of true form and above the abode of pure contemplative beings, rise the four heavens of formless entities—beings who have no material frames, even of the subtlest kind, but are mere abstractions, such as the Dhyani-Buddhas (pp. 202, 203).

In the first of these formless heavens (Arūpa-loka) are the Ākāšānantyāyatanā devāh, 'beings who are capable of conceiving the idea of infinite space;' in the second are the Vijāānānantyāyatanā devāh, 'beings who are capable of conceiving the idea of infinite intelligence;' in the third are the Akiñćanyāyatanā devāh, 'beings who can conceive the idea of absolute nonentity,' or, in other words, that nothing whatever exists anywhere; in the fourth and highest of all are the Naivasañjāānāsañjāāyatanā devāh (Nevasañāānāsañjāayatanā devāh (Nevasañāānāsañjāayatanā devāh these heavens belong to mystical Buddhism.

Subjoined is a synopsis of all the heavens and their inhabitants explained above (see Koeppen i. 260).

A.

Henrens of beings liable to sensuous desires.

- (1) Heaven of the four Malst-rajas.
- (2) Heaven of the Trayastriness-
- (3) Heaven of the Yamas.
- (4) Heaven of the Tushitas.
- (5) Heaven of the Nirmana-rati-devalu.
- (6) Heaven of the Para-nirmita-vasa-varting.

B

Hearens of beings possessing true forms.

First Dhyāna.

- (7) Heaven of the Brahma-parisalia devalu.
- (8) Heaven of the Brahum purchită devâly.
- (a) Heaven of the Maha-brahma dovab.

Second Dhyana.

- (12) Heaven of the Parittälibe devale.
- (11) Heaven of the Apramanabha devah.
- (12) Heaven of the Abhasynta devalu-

Third Dhyana.

- (13) Heaven of the Paritta-subha devah.
- (14) Heaven of the Apramana-subka devah.
- (15) Heaven of the Sabha-kritsnā devāh.

Fourth Dhyana.

- (16) Heaven of the Vribat-phala devalu-
- (17) Heaven of the Asanifit-entive devals.
- (18) Heaven of the Avriba devala.
- (19) Heaven of the Atapa devah.
- (20) Heaven of the Sudarsa devalu-
- (21) Heaven of the Sudariino devah.
- (22) Heaven of the themisletta devalu-

U

Horrens of formless entities.

- (23) Heaven of the Aktistmantyayatana devah.
- (24) Heaven of the Vijanahanatynyatana devah.
- (25) Heaven of the Akinemyayatana devah.
- (26) Heaven of the Naiva-sanjahaksanjahyatana devah.

This elaborate description of higher and higher conditions of future existence may be contrasted with the reticence of the Bible and its simple allusion to a new heaven and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness. The description, however, belongs to later Buddhism. It enables us to understand the true position of the Buddhist gods. They merely constitute one of the six classes of beings, and, as they have to go through other forms of life, are inferior to Arbats and Buddhas.

Mahā-brahmā is often named, whereas Vishņu, the popular god of the Hindūs, is neglected. In point of fact he was, as we have seen, represented by Padmapāṇi (Avalokitešvara, p. 198), who seems to have taken his place in later Buddhism.

At all events the more modern form of Vishau called Krishaa, who is generally worshipped by the lower orders of Hindus as the most popular god of mediæval Hinduism, has not been adopted by the inhabitants of Buddhist countries.

When I was at Kandy in Ceylon I found one solitary shrine (Devāli) dedicated, not to Krishņa, but to Mahā-Vishņu. It was near the well-known Tooth-temple and appeared almost deserted. The shrine was at the end of a bare room, and contained a small silver-gilt image of Mahā-Vishņu (as Vishņu is called when worshipped by Buddhists, just as the chief of the Brahmā gods is called Mahā-Brahmā) about half a foot high. In the hands of the image was a thin metal bar with a kind of locket or amulet suspended from it, while round its neck was a long rosary and in front of the body a large plate for offerings. The folding doors of the sanctuary had representations of the sun and moon.

Turning to the god Siva, we may note that he was adopted by later Buddhism in his character of Yoge, or Mahā-yogī (see 'Brāhmanism and Hindūism,' p. 83). Then, as the Buddhism of the North very soon became corrupted with Saivism and its accompaniments, Saktism, Täntrism, and Magic, so in Northern countries various forms of Siva—such as Maha-Kāla, Bhairava, Bhūma—and of his wife (Pārvat), Durgā, etc.), are honoured, and their images are found in temples. Sometimes bloody sucrifices are offered to them.

Among the female deities forms of Tara are chiefly worshipped, and regarded as Saktis of the Buddhas.

It is even held by the disciples of the more advanced Mahā-yāna—especially in Nepāl—that there are five Saktis or female Energies (corresponding to the five human Buddhas), whose names are given in corresponding order thus;—Vajra-dhātrī, Loćanā, Māmakī, Pāṇdarā, and Tārā or Tārā-devī (the latter being the Tārā par excellence) ¹.

But the goddess Tara was also worshipped by Buddhists in India proper; for we find that Hiouen Thsang alludes to having seen images of Tara Bodhi-sattva in the country of Magadha.

I may mention, too, that in a dilapidated building, which contains the Vajrāsana or thunderbolt throne of Gautama at Buddha-Gayā (in the same country of Magadha), I noticed in a shrine near the temple, an image of Tārā-devī, which, from the crown of fresh flowers encircling its head, appeared to have been recently worshipped by some Buddhist pilgrims, who had arrived on the day of my visit in 1876.

¹ See Wright's Nepal, p. 43.

¹ Beal's Records, ii. 103, 174.

The god Indra, usually called Sakra (Sakka), is, as we have seen, the most popular god of the early Buddhist Pantheon (pp. 51, 207). He is a friendly deity and never exerts evil influences over men, like Māra. On the contrary, if any good man is in need of his services he descends from his own heaven to render assistance; and the fact of his aid being required is made known to him by his throne becoming hot.

The Dharma-pada (107, 392) mentions Agni, god of fire, and again (48), Antaka, god of death, sometimes identified with Mara or with Yama, 'ruler in Hell,' A form of Yama called Yamantaka is also recognized.

In Ceylon I observed several shrines to Kanda-Kumāra, a form of Skanda (son of Śiva), who is said to have received the gift of healing from Buddha,

There also I observed shrines of Saman (sometimes spelt Samanta, sometimes Sumana), the tutelary deity of Adam's Peak, which is thence called Samanta-kūţo and Sumana-kūţo.

Then there were shrines dedicated to a demoniacal goddess called Pattini (regarded sometimes as protecting from small-pox), and to certain good and evil genii, called Naths (Nathas!) as in Burma.

No doubt the worship of devils and demons existed in Ceylon long before the introduction of either Brahmanism or Buddhism. At Colombo in 1877 I witnessed a so-called devil-dance, performed late at night before the then Governor, Sir William Gregory.

First, three men dressed in coarse, loose, jet-black dresses, engaged in a wild dance together. They had shaggy hair, blackened faces daubed with white paint, and a set of six or eight long projecting false teeth, which protraded far below the lower lip, sometimes one, sometimes two at a time. Their legs were completely covered with small bells, which rattled like chains when they moved. In their hands they held three flaring torches, branching from one handle. At intervals they increased the glare and smoke from these torches by sprinkling resin upon them.

Their dance was of the wildest description, in a circle, sometimes moving in and out, and crossing each other, and all the while heating the ground violently with their jingling legs, which kept time to the noisy music of tom-toms, flagiolets, horns, etc., played by attendant musicians. These three men were supposed to represent the various forms of typhus fever. At intervals during their dance they assumed frightful black masks with hideous open mouths.

Then with them were two other dancing demons dressed in red, not so hideous in appearance, who also danced holding torches. These represented another form of devil. They danced in the interval of the two performances of the black devils. There were also three men dressed in reddish garments, who formed part of the group and moved about quietly among the others. They were described to me as devil-charmers or exorcisers.

Every disease—every calamity has its presiding demon, and all such demons are the servants of Buddha.

In regard to the other supernatural beings and figments of Hinda mythology adopted, with a few unimportant modifications, by Buddhists, the first that call for mention are the Pretas (see p. 121). The Pretas are beings of the nature of ghosts and goblins who have recently inhabited the earth, and are often of gigantic size and terrific appearance, with dried-up limbs, hairy countenances, enormous bellies, ever consumed with hunger and thirst, and yet never able to eat and drink by reason of their contracted throats. Some are represented as trying to swallow sparks of fire; others try to eat up dead bodies, or their own flesh. Possibly this form of re-birth was invented to deter the laity from withholding food from the monks. The Pretas inhabit a region above the hells. Some, however, assign them habitations above the surface of the earth or in desert places on the earth itself.

The Asuras or Daityas are evil demons who, like the Titans of Greek mythology, are always at war with the gods. They dwell under the foundations of Mount Meru, as far undemeath the surface of the earth as their great enemy Indra is above it. In short, if he may be supposed to live at the zenith, they live at the nadir, and their battle-field is on the slopes of Meru.

Closely connected with them are the Rākshasas, who are also enemies of the gods and are represented as monsters of frightful form and man-eating propensities. They haunt cremation-grounds and cemeteries and waylay human beings in solitary places to devour them.

Then there is a class of very malignant demons called Piśāćas (described in 'Brāhmanism and Hindūism,' p. 242), who are the authors of all evils.

On the other hand, the Yakshas and Yakshinis are a class of good genii ruled over by Kuvera, 'god of wealth,' who is often referred to in Buddhist writings under his patronymic Vaisravana (Pali Vessavano).

These beings are commonly represented in sculptures in human form and held to be harmless, though some Buddhist legends describe them as cruel. Stories are told about some of them being converted to Buddhism.

Then come the Nagas, who are constantly alluded to. They properly belong to a class of serpent-demons, having human faces with serpent-like lower extremities, who live in one of the lower regions below the earth called Patala, or under the waters. They are introduced into Buddhist sculptures as worshippers of the Buddha and friends of all Buddhists, but usually represented as ordinary men. The Naga Mucalinda (also Mucilinda), who sheltered Buddha, was a real serpent (see p. 39). Naga-kanyas or female Nagas (serpents from the wordownwards) are also not uncommon? In Kashmir Nagas are connected with fountains and the sources of rivers.

Then there are the Mahoragas, 'great dragons,' who also belong to the Nāga class of demons.

We ought also to notice the Kumbhandas, a class of demons who attend on Virudhaka (p. 206); the Garudas,

The images of this deity represent him as coarse and ill-favoured in form (his name in fact signifying 'deformed'). He has semetimes three legs. As guardian of the northern quarter he is sculptured on the corner pillar of the northern gate of the Bharhat Stüps. He had a metropolis of his own, according to Hindu mythology (as we know from the Megha-dūts), called Alaka, on the Himilayas.

[&]quot;A very interesting specimen of ancient sculpture representing a Naga-kanya may be seen in the museum of the Indian Institute, Oxford. It belongs to a collection of Buddhist antiquities lent by Mr. R. Sewell, of the Madrus Civil Service.

a bird-like race ruled over by the mythical Garuda, king of birds and enemy of the Nagas and serpents; the Apsarases, or nymphs produced at the churning of the ocean. These last are sometimes described in Hindu mythology as the Huris of Indra's heaven, who are assigned to heroes killed in battle. In Buddhist sculptures they are represented as beautiful females, who are properly the wives of Indra's celestial musicians called Gandharvas.

Finally, mention should be made of the Kinnaras and Kinnaris—beings who ought properly to be represented with human bodies and equine heads, and are, like the Gandharvas, heavenly musicians. It is even recorded in one legend that the Buddha himself in a former life was a Kinnari.

All this proves the close connexion of Buddhism with the Hindúism which, like Buddhism, grew out of Brahmanism. In short, the one mythology is so interpenetrated with the other, that Buddhism in making proselytes throughout Eastern Asia could not avoid propagating Hindú mythological doctrines along with its own.

The consequence was that Hinduism, though often regarded as an unproselyting and wholly national religion, really exercised a vast influence outside its own boundaries and among alien races.

It is, at any rate, a remarkable fact that no mythological system has ever spread over so large an area of the earth's surface as that which, originating in India, was accepted to a great extent by all Buddhist communities. And this Indo-Buddhistic system of mythology, with its, to us, absurd idolatry, rests on an extremely subtle form of pantheism, which is not to be brushed aside as too contemptible for investigation.

It is usual to denounce all such systems as simple Heathenism; but 'Heathenism' means the religion of the nations'—the religion evolved by the men of all countries out of their own imaginations and by their own natural faculties, without the aid of any true supernatural revelation.

And assuredly this religion of human nature is still a strong citadel entrenched behind the formidable forces of pride, passion, prejudice, and ignorance. Yet the walls of the fortress have numerous weak places, which the wise missionary, armed with the still more powerful forces at his command, will endeavour to discover and quietly undermine. By patient and quiet working he must win the day.

With man, speed and rapidity of action are supposed to be the chief evidences of progress and the chief factors in success. The Evangelist, on the other hand, is a worker for God and a fellow-worker with God, and ought not to be discouraged by the tardy advance of the Truth which he advocates. He may have his moments of despondency, but he has only to look around and observe that God works everywhere throughout His own Universe by slow and almost imperceptible processes. The ripe fruit falls from the tree in a second, but its maturity is not effected without a whole year of gradual preparation.

LECTURE X.

Mystical Buddhism in its connexion with the Yoga philosophy.

The first idea implied by Buddhism is intellectual enlightenment. But Buddhism has its own theory of enlightenment—its own idea of true knowledge, which it calls Bodhi, not Veda. By true knowledge it means knowledge acquired by man through his own intellectual faculties and through his own inner consciousness, instincts, and intuitions, unaided by any external or supernatural revelation of any kind.

But it is important to observe that Buddhism, in the carrying out of its own theory of entire self-dependence in the search after truth, was compelled to be somewhat inconsistent with itself. It enjoined self-conquest, self-restraint, self-concentration, and separation from the world for the attainment of true know-ledge and for the accomplishment of its own summum bonum—the bliss of Nirvāṇa—the bliss of deliverance from the fires of passion and the flames of concupiscence. Yet it encouraged association and combination for mutual help. It established a universal brotherhood of celibate monks, open to persons of all castes and ranks, to rich and poor, learned and unlearned alike—a community of men which might, in theory, be

co-extensive with the whole world—all bound together by the common aim of self-conquest, all animated by the wish to aid each other in the battle with carnal desires, all penetrated by a desire to follow the example of the Buddha, and be guided by the doctrine or law which he promulgated.

Combitic monasticism in fact, as we have already pointed out, became an essential part of true Buddhism and a necessary instrument for its propagation.

In all this the Buddha showed himself to be eminently practical in his methods and profoundly wise in his generation. Evidently, too, he was wise in abstaining at first from all mystical teaching. Originally Buddhism set its face against all solitary asceticism and all secret efforts to attain sublime heights of knowledge. It had no occult, no esoteric system of doctrine which it withheld from ordinary men.

Nor did true Buddhism at first concern itself with any form of philosophical or metaphysical teaching, which it did not consider helpful for the attainment of the only kind of true knowledge worth striving for—the knowledge of the origin of suffering and its remedy—the knowledge that suffering and pain arise from indulging lusts, and that life is inseparable from suffering, and is an evil to be got rid of by suppressing self and extinguishing desires.

In the Mahā-parinibbāna-sutta (Rhys Davids, II. 32) is recorded one of the Buddha's remarks shortly before his decease:—

'What, O Ananda, does the Order desire of me? I have taught the law (desite dhamme) without making any distinction between esoteric and exoteric doctrine (anantaram abahiram karitvā). In the matter of the law, the Tathāgata (i.e. the Buddha) has never had the closed fist of a teacher (ācariya-muṭṭhi)—of a teacher who withholds some doctrines and communicates others. In short, he was opposed to mysticism

Nevertheless, admitting, as we must, that early Buddhism had no mysteries reserved for a privileged circle, we must not shut our eyes to the fact that the great importance attached to abstract meditation in the Buddhist system could not fail in the end to encourage the growth of mystical ideas.

Furthermore, it is undeniable that such ideas were, in some countries, carried to the most extravagant extremes. Efforts to induce a transco-like or hypnotic condition, by abstracting the thoughts from all bodily influences, by recitation of mystical scatences, and by superstitious devices for the acquisition of supernatural faculties, were placed above good works and all the duties of the moral code.

We might point, too, to the strange doctrine which arose in Nepāl and Tibet—the doctrine of the Dhyāni-Buddhas (or 'Buddhas of Meditation')—certain abstract Essences existing in the formless worlds of thought, who were held to be ethereal and eternal representatives of the transitory earthly Buddhas. These have been adverted to in a previous Lecture (see p. 202).

Our present concern is rather with the growth and development of mystical Buddhism in India itself, through its connexion with the system of philosophy called Yoga and Yogaćāra.

The close relationship of Buddhism to that system is well known; but the various practices included under the name Yoga did not owe their origin to Buddhism. They were prevalent in India before Gautama Buddha's time; and one of the most generally accepted facts in his biography is that, after abandoning his home and worldly associations, he resorted to certain Brahman ascetics, who were practising Yoga.

What then was the object which these ascetics had in view?

The word Yoga literally means 'union' (as derived from the Sanskrit root 'yuj,' to join; compare the English word 'yoke'), and the proper aim of every man who practised Yoga was the mystic union (or rather re-union) of his own spirit with the one eternal Soul or Spirit of the Universe. A true Yogi, says the Bhagavad-gitā (VI. 13, 25), should be indifferent to all earthly things. To him a clod, a stone, and gold should be all alike.

Doubtless this was the Buddha's first aim when he addressed himself to Yoga in the fifth century B.c., and even to this hour, earnest men in India resort to this system with the same object.

In the Indian Magazine for July, 1887 (as well as in my 'Brālmanism and Hindūism,' p. 529), is a short biography of a quite recent religious reformer named Svāmī Dayānanda-Sarasvatī, whose acquaintance I made at Bombay in 1876 and 1877, and who only died in 1883. The story of his life reads almost like a repetition of the life of Buddha, though his teaching aimed at restoring the supposed monotheistic doctrine of the Veda.

It is recorded that his father, desiring to initiate him into the mysteries of Saivism, took him to a shrine dedicated to the god Siva; but the sight of some mice stealing the consecrated offerings, and of some rats playing on the heads of the idol, led him to disbelieve in Siva-worship as a means of union with the Supreme Being. Longing, however, for such union and for emancipation from the burden of repeated births, he resolved to renounce marriage and abandon the world. Accordingly, at the age of twentytwo, he clandestinely quitted his home, the darkness of evening covering his flight. Taking a secret path, he travelled thirty miles during the night. Next day he was pursued by his father, who tried to force him to return, but in vain. After travelling farther and farther from his native province, he took a vow to devote himself to the investigation of truth. Then be wandered for many years all over India, trying to gain knowledge from sages and philosophers, but without any satisfactory result, till finally be settled at Ahmedabad. There, having mastered the higher Yoga system, he became the leader of a new sect called the Arya-Samaj.

And here we may observe that the expression 'higher Yoga' implies that a lower form of that system had been introduced. In point of fact, the Yoga system grew, and became twofold—that is, it came in the end to have two objects.

The earlier was the higher Yoga. It aimed only at union with the Spirit of the Universe. The more developed system aimed at something more. It sought to acquire miraculous powers by bringing the body under control of the will, and by completely abstracting the soul from body and mind, and isolating it in its own essence. This condition is called Kaivalya.

In the fifth century B.c., when Gautama Buddha began his career, the later and lower form of Yoga seems to have been little known. Practically, in those days, carnest and devout men craved only for union with the Supreme Being, and absorption into his Essence. Many methods of effecting such union and absorption were contrived. And these may be classed under two chief heads—bodily mortification (tapas) and abstract meditation (dhyāna).

By either one of these two chief means, the devotee was supposed to be able to get rid of all bodily fetters.—to be able to bring his bodily organs into such subjection to the spiritual that he became unconscious of possessing any body at all. It was in this way that his spirit became fit for blending with the Universal Spirit, of which it was originally a part.

We learn from the Lalita-vistara that various forms of bodily torture, self-maceration, and austerity were common in Gautama's time.

Some devotees, we read, seated themselves in one spot and kept perpetual silence, with their legs bent under them. Some ate only once a day or once on alternate days, or at intervals of four, six, or four-teen days. Some slept in wet clothes or on ashes, gravel, stones, boards, thorny grass, or spikes, or with the face downwards. Some went naked, making no distinction between fit or unfit places. Some

smeared themselves with ashes, cinders, dust, or clay. Some inhaled smoke and fire. Some gazed at the sun, or sat surrounded by five fires, or rested on one foot, or kept one arm perpetually uplifted, or moved about on their knees instead of on their feet, or baked themselves on hot stones, or submerged themselves in water, or suspended themselves in air.

Then, again, a method of fasting called very painful (atikricchra), described by Manu (XI. 213), was often practised. It consisted in eating only a single mouthful every day for nine days, and then abstaining from all food for the three following days.

Another method, called the lunar fast (VI. 20, XI. 216), consisted in beginning with fifteen mouthfuls at full moon, and reducing the quantity by one mouthful till new moon, and then increasing it again in the same way till full moon.

Passages without number might be quoted from ancient literature to prove that similar practices were resorted to throughout India, with the object of bringing the body into subjection to the spirit. And these practices have continued up to the present day.

A Muhammadan traveller, whose narrative is quoted by Mr. Mill (British India, i. 355), once saw a man standing motionless with his face towards the sun.

The same traveller, having occasion to revisit the same spot sixteen years afterwards, found the very same man in the very same attitude. He had gazed on the sun's disk till all sense of external vision was extinguished.

A Yogi was seen not very long ago (Mill's India.

i. 353) seated between four fires on a quadrangular stage. He stood on one leg gazing at the sun, while these fires were lighted at the four corners. Then placing himself upright on his head, with his feet elevated in the air, he remained for three hours in that position. He then seated himself cross-legged, and continued bearing the raging heat of the sun above his head and the fires which surrounded him, till the end of the day, occasionally adding combustibles with his own hands to increase the flames.

I, myself, in the course of my travels, encountered Yogis who had kept their arms uplifted for years, or had wandered about from one place of pilgrimage to another under a perpetual vow of silence, or had no place to lie upon but a bed of spikes.

As to fasting, the idea that attenuation of the body by abstinence from food facilitates union of the human soul with the divine, or at any rate promotes a keener insight into spiritual things, is doubtless as common in Europe as in Asia; but the most austere observer of Lent in European countries would be hopelessly outdone by devotees whose extraordinary powers of abstinence may be witnessed in every part of India.

If we now turn to the second method of attaining mystic union with the Divine Essence, namely, by profound abstract thought, we may observe that it, too, was everywhere prevalent in Buddha's time.

Indeed, one of the names given by Indian philosophers to the One Universal Spirit is Cit, 'Thought.' By that name, of course, is meant pure abstract thought, or the faculty of thought separated from every concrete object. Hence, in its highest state the eternal infinite Spirit, by its very nature, thinks of nothing. It is the simple thought-faculty, wholly unconnected with any object about which it thinks. In point of fact, the moment it begins to exercise this faculty, it necessarily abandons for a time its condition of absolute oneness, abstraction, and isolation, to associate itself with something inferior, which is not itself.

It follows, therefore, that intense concentration of the mind on the One Universal Spirit amounts to fixing the thought on a mere abstract Essence, which reciprocates no thought in return, and is not conscious

of being thought about by its worshipper.

In harmony with this theory, we find that the definition of Yoga, in the second aphorism of the Yogasūtra, is, 'the suppression (nirodha) of the functions or modifications (vritti) of the thinking principle (citta).' So that, in reality, the union of the human mind with the infinite Principle of thought amounts to such complete mental absorption, that thought itself becomes lost in pure thought.

In the Sakuntalā (VII. 175) there is a description of an ascetic engaged in this form of Yoga, whose condition of fixed meditation and immovable impassiveness had lasted so long that ants had thrown up a mound as high as his waist, and birds had built their nests in

the long clotted tresses of his tangled hair.

Not many years ago, I, myself, saw at Allahābād near the fort a devotee who had maintained a sitting, contemplative posture, with his feet folded under his body, in one place for twenty years. During the Mutiny cannon thundered over his head, and bullets hissed around him, but nothing apparently disturbed his attitude of profound meditation. Even Muhammadans practise the same. The Russian correspondent of the Times states (Sept. 18, 1888) that he saw in a mosque at Samarkand men who voluntarily remained mute and metionless for forty days. On a curtain being pulled aside he beheld a motionless figure seated in profound meditation like a squatting mummy. The guide said that a cannon fired off in front of his face would have left him equally unmoved.

It is clear, then, that, supposing Gautama to have made up his mind to devote himself to a religious life, his adoption of a course of profound meditation was a most usual proceeding.

A large number of the images of Buddha represent him sitting on a raised seat or throne (called the Bodhimanda), with his legs folded under his body, and his eyes half-closed, in a condition of abstraction (samādhi) —sometimes called Yoga-nidrā; that is, a trance-like state, resembling profound sleep. (Compare frontispiece.)

He is said to have seated himself in this way under four trees in succession (see p. 39 of these Lectures), namely, under the Bodhi-tree or sacred fig-tree, under the Banyan-tree, under the Mucalinda-tree (protected by the serpent), and under the Rajayatana-tree.

And those four successive seats probably symbolized the four recognized stages of meditation (dhyana)

I give this as my own theory. I am no believer in the learned M. Senart's sun theory, or in its applicability to this point.

rising one above the other, till thought itself was converted into non-thought (see p. 209).

We know, too, that the Buddha went through still higher progressive stages of meditation at the moment of his death or final decease (Pari-nirvāṇa), thus described in the Mahā-parinibbāns-sutta (Davids, VI. 11):

'Then the Venerable One entered into the first stage of meditation (pathamajihanam); and rising out of the first stage, he passed into the second; and rising out of the second, he passed into the third; and rising out of the third, he passed into the fourth; and rising out of the fourth stage, he attained the conception of the infinity of space (ākāšāmāčāyatanam, see p. 214); and rising out of the conception of the infinity of space, he attained the conception of the infinity of intelligence (viññāṇañćāyatanam); and rising out of the idea of the infinity of intelligence, he attained the conception of absolute nonentity (akińćañňāyatanam); and rising out of the idea of nonentity, he entered the region where there is neither consciousness nor unconsciousness; and rising out of that region, he entered the state in which all sensation and perception of ideas had wholly ceased.' (See p. 213 of these Lectures.)

Clearly, even four progressive stages of abstraction did not satisfy the requirements of later Buddhism in regard to the intense sublimation of the thinking faculty needed for the complete efficement of all sense of individuality. Higher and higher altitudes had to be reached, insomuch that the fourth stage of abstract meditation is sometimes divided and subdivided into what are called eight Vimokhas and eight Samapattis-all of them forms and stages of ecstatic meditation 1.

A general name, however, for all the higher trancelike states is Samidhi, and by the practice of Samadhi the six transcendent faculties (Abhiñiù) might ultimately be obtained, viz. the inner ear, or power of hearing words and sounds, however distant (clair-audience, as it might be called); the inner eye, or power of seeing all that happens in every part of the world (clair-voyance); knowledge of the thoughts of others; recollection of former existences; the knowledge of the mode of destroying the corrupting influences of passion; and, finally, the supernatural powers called Iddhi, to be subsequently explained.

But to return to the Buddha's first course of meditation at the time when he first attained Buddhahood. This happened during one particular night, which was followed by the birthday of Buddhism.

And what was the first grand outcome of that first profound mental abstraction? One legend relates that in the first watch of the night all his previous existences flashed across his mind; in the second he understood all present states of being; in the third he traced out the claim of causes and effects, and at the dawn of day he knew all things.

According to another legend, there was an actual outburst of the divine light before hidden within him.

We read in the Lalita-vistara (chap. i) that at the supreme moment of his intellectual illumination brilliant flames of light issued from the crown of his head,

¹ These are described in Childers's Pali Dictionary, s.v.

through the interstices of his cropped hair. These rays are sometimes represented in his images, emerging from his skull in a form resembling the five fingers of an extended hand (see the frontispiece).

Mark, however, that Gautama's meditation never led him to the highest result of the true Yoga of Indian philosophy—union with the Supreme Spirit. On the contrary, his self-enlightenment led to entire disbelief in the separate existence of any eternal, infinite Spirit at all—any Spirit, in fact, with which a spirit existing in his own body could blend, or into which it could be absorbed.

If the Buddha was not a materialist, in the sense of believing in the eternal existence of material atoms, neither could be in any sense be called a 'spiritualist,' or believer in the eternal existence of abstract spirit.

With him Creation did not proceed from an Omnipotent Spirit or Mind evolving phenomena out of itself by the exercise of will, nor from an eternal selfexisting, self-evolving germ of any kind. As to the existence in the Universe of any spiritual substance which was not matter and was imperceptible by the senses, it could not be proved.

Nor did be believe in the eternal existence of an invisible Self or Ego, called Soul, distinct from a material body. The only eternity of true Buddhism was an eternity of 'becoming,' not of 'being'—an eternity of existences, all succeeding each other, and all lapsing into nothingness. If there were any personal gods they were all inferior to the perfect man, and all liable to change and dissolution,

In brief, the Buddha's enlightenment consisted, first, in the discovery of the origin and remedy of suffering, and, next, in the knowledge of the existence of an eternal Force—a force generated by what in Sanskrit is called Karman, 'Act.' The accumulated force of the acts of one Universe produced another.

Every man, therefore, was created by the force of his own acts in former bodies, combined with a force generated by intense attachment to existence (upādāna). Who or what started the first act, the Buddha never pretended to be able to explain. He confessed bimself in regard to this point a downright Agnostic. The Buddha himself had been created by his own acts, and had been created and re-created through countless bodily forms; but he had no spirit or soul existing separately between the intervals of each creation. By his protracted meditation he attained to no higher knowledge than this, and although he himself rose to loftier heights of knowledge than any other man of his day, he never aspired to other faculties than were within the reach of any human being capable of rising to the same sublime abstraction of mind.

He was even careful to lay down a precept that the acquisition of transcendent human faculties was restricted to the perfected saints called Arhats; and so important did he consider it to guard such faculties from being claimed by mere impostors, that one of the four prohibitions communicated to all monks on first admission to his monastic Order was that they were not to pretend to such powers (see p. 81).

Nor is there any proof that even Arhats in Gautama's

time were allowed to claim superhuman faculties and the power of working physical miracles.

By degrees, no doubt, powers of this kind were ascribed to them as well as to the Buddha. Even in the Vinaya, one of the oldest portions of the Tri-pitaka, we find it stated (Mahā-vagga I. 20, 24) that Gautama Buddha gained adherents by performing three thousand five hundred supernatural wonders (Pūli, pāṭi-hāriya; see p. 46). These were thought to be evidences of his mission as a great teacher and saviour of mankind; but the part of the marrative recording these, although very ancient, is probably a legendary addition.

It is interesting, however, to trace in portions of the early literature, the development of the doctrine that Buddhahnod meant first transcendent knowledge, and then supernatural faculties and the power of working miracles.

In the Akaakheyya-sutta (said to have been composed in the fourth century s.c.) occurs a remarkable passage, translated by Prof. Rhys Davids (S. B. E., p. 214):—

'If a monk should desire through the destruction of the corrupting influences (āsavas), by himself, and even in this very world, to know and realise and attain to Arbatship, to emancipation of heart, and emancipation of mind, let him devote himself to that quietude of heart which springs from within, let him not drive back the eestasy of contemplation, let him look through things, let him be much alone.

'If a monk should desire to hear with clear and heavenly ear, surpassing that of men, sounds both human and celestial, whether far or near; if he should desire to comprehend by his own heart the hearts of other beings and of other men; if he should desire to call to mind his various temporary states in the past, such as one, two, three, four, five, ten, twenty, a hundred, a thousand, a hundred thousand births, or his births in many an age and reon of destruction and renovation, lethim devote himself to that quietude which springs from within.'

Then, in the Mahā-parinibhāna-sutta (I. 33, Rhys Davids) occurs the following:—

'At that time the blessed One—as instantaneously as a strong man would stretch forth his arm, or draw it back again when he had stretched it forth—vanished from this side of the river, and stood on the further bank with the company of the brethren.'

And, again, the following:-

'I call to mind, Ananda, how when I used to enter into an assembly of many hundred nobles, before I had seated myself there, or talked to them, or started a conversation with them, I used to become in colour like unto their colour, and in voice like unto their voice. Then, with religious discourse, I used to instruct, incite, and quicken them, and fill them with gladness. But they knew me not when I spoke, and would say, "Who may this be who thus speaks? a man or a god?" Then, having instructed, incited, quickened, and gladdened them with religious discourse, I would vanish away. But they knew me not even when I vanished away; and would say, "Who may this be who has thus vanished away? a man, or a god?" —(Mahā-parinibbāna-sutta III. 22, Rhys Davids.)

Such passages in the early literature afford an interesting exemplification of the growth of supernatural and mystical ideas, which led to the ultimate association of the Buddhistic system with Saivism, demonology, magic, and various so-called spiritual phenomena.

I now proceed to show that the development of these ideas in Buddhism resulted from its connexion with the later Yoga, which developed similar ideas.

In the aphorisms of this later Yoga, composed by Patanjali, eight chief requisites are enumerated (II. 29); namely, t. abstaining from five evil acts (yama); 2, performing five positive duties (niyama); 3, sottling the limbs in certain postures (āsama); 4, regulating and suppressing the breath (prāṇāyāma); 5, withdrawing the senses from their objects (pratyāhāra); 6, fixing the thinking faculty (dhāraṇā); 7, internal self-contemplation (dhyāna); 8, trance-like self-concentration (samādhi).

These eight are indispensable requisites for the gaining of Patanjali's summum bonum—the complete abstraction or isolation (kaivalya) of the soul or spirit in its own essence—and for the acquirement of supernatural faculties.

Taking now these eight requisites of Yoga in order, we may observe, with regard to the first, that the five evil acts to be avoided correspond to the five commandments in Buddhism, viz. 'kill not,' 'steal not,' 'commit no impurity,' 'lie not.' The fifth alone—' abstain from all worldly enjoyments'—is different, the Buddhist fifth prohibition being 'drink no strong drink' (p. 126).

With regard to the second requisite, the five positive duties are—self-purification, both external and internal (both called sauća); the practice of contentment (samtosha); bodily mortification (tapas); muttering of prayers, or repetition of mystical syllables (svädhyäya, or japa), and contemplation of the Supreme Being.

The various processes of bodily mortification already described (see p. 228) were repudiated by Buddhism.

As to the muttoring of prayers, the repetition of mystic syllables such as Om (a symbol for the Triad of gods), or of any favourite deity's name, is held among Hindus to be highly efficacious. In a similar manner among Tibetan Buddhists the six-syllabled sentence; 'Om mani padme Hum'—'Om! the jewel in the lotus! Hum!'—is used as a charm against the sixfold course of transmigration (see pp. 121, 371-373).

Mystical syllables are very common. Sir A. Cunningham gives the following as current in Ladāk:—Bhyo, Rakmo-bhyo! Rakmo-bhyo-bhyo! Ru-lu, Ru-lu, Hūm Bhyo Hūm! (Ladāk, 386.)

Other mystical syllables (such as Sam, Yam, Ram, Lam, etc.) are supposed to contain some occult virtue.

The third requisite—posture—would appear to us a somewhat trivial aid to the union of the human spirit with the divine; but with Hindus it is an important auxiliary, fraught with great benefit to the Yogi.

The alleged reason is that certain sitting postures (āsana) and cramping of the lower limbs are peculiarly efficacious in producing bodily quietude and preventing restlessness. Some of the postures have curious names, for example:—Padmāsana, 'the lotus posture;' vīrā-

¹ See my ' Brahmanism and Hinduism,' p. 105.

sana, 'the heroic posture;' sighāsana, 'the lion posture' (see note, p. 336); kūrmāsana, 'tortoise posture;' kukkutāsana, 'cock posture;' dhanurāsana, 'bow posture;' mayūrāsana, 'peacock posture.' In the first the legs are folded under the body and the right foot is placed on the left thigh, and the left on the right thigh.

In short, the idea is that compression of the lower limbs, in such a way as to prevent the possibility of the slightest movement, is most important as a preparation for complete abstraction of soul.

Then, as another aid, particular mystical twistings (called mudra) of the upper limbs—of the arms, hands, and fingers—are enjoined.

Even in Muhammadan countries certain movements of the limbs are practised by devotees with the view of uniting the human spirit with the Divine. Those who have seen the whirling and 'howling' dervishes at Cairo can testify that fainting fits result from their violent exertions, inspirations, expirations, and utterances of the name of God, and such fits are believed to be ecstatic states of union with the Deity.

The fourth requisite—regulation and suppression of the breath—is perhaps the one of all the eight which is most difficult for Europeans to understand or appreciate; yet with Hindus it is all-important. It is sometimes called Hatha-vidyā. Nor are the ideas connected with it wholly unknown in Europe.

According to Swedenborg 1, thought commences and corresponds with respiration:—

¹ Quoted in Colonel Olcott's ' Yoga Philosophy,' p. 282.

'When a man thinks quickly his breath vibrates with rapid alternations; when the tempest of anger shakes his mind his breath is tumultuous; when his soul is deep and tranquil, so is his respiration.' And he adds: 'It is strange that this correspondence between the states of the brain or mind and the lungs has not been admitted in science.'

The Hindū belief certainly is that deep inspirations of breath assist in concentrating and abstracting the thoughts and preventing external impressions. But, more than this, five sorts of air are supposed to permeate the human body and play an important part in its vitality. They are called Prāṇa, Vyāna, Apāna, Samāna, Udāna, In the Chāndogya Upanishad (V. 19, etc.) they are described as if they were divine beings to be adored and to be honoured by offerings of food. The Hatha-dīpikā says: 'As long as the air remains in the body, so long life remains. Death is the exit of the breath. Hence the air should be retained in the body.'

In regulating the breath, the air must first be drawn up through one nostril (the other being closed with the finger), retained in the lungs, and then expelled through the other nostril. This exercise must be practised alternately with the right and left nostril. Next, the breath must be drawn forcibly up through both nostrils, and the air imprisoned for as long a time as possible in the lungs. Thence it must be forced by an effort of will towards the internal organs of the body, or made to mount to the centre of the brain.

The Hindus, however, do not identify the breath

with the soul. They believe that a crevice or suture called the Brahma-randbram at the top of the skull serves as an outlet for the escape of the soul at death. A Hindū Yogī's skull is sometimes split at death by striking it with a sacred shell. The idea is to facilitate the exit of the soul. It is said that in Tibet the hair is torn out of the top of the head, with the same object-

In the case of a wicked man the soul is supposed to escape through one of the lower openings of the body.

The imprisonment of the breath in the body by taking in more air than is necessary for respiration, is the most important of the breath exercises. It is said that Hindū asceties, by constant practice, are able by this means to sustain life under water, or to be buried alive for long periods of time. Many alleged feats of suspended animation are of course mere and sheer trickery. It seems, however, open to question, whether it may not be possible for human beings of particular constitutions to practise a kind of hibernation like that of animals, or acquire some power of suspending temporarily the organic functions. A certain Colonel Townsend is said to have succeeded in doing so.

A well-known instance of suspended animation occurred in the Panjāb in 1837. A Hindū Yogī was there, by his own request, buried alive in a vault for forty days in the presence of Runjit Singh and Sir Claude Wade; his eyes, ears, and every orifice of his body having been first stopped with plugs of wax. Dr. McGregor, the then residency surgeon, also watched the case. Every precaution was taken to prevent deception. English officials saw the man buried, as well as exhumed, and a perpetual guard over the vault was kept night and day by order of Runjit Singh himself. At the end of forty days the disinterment took place. The body was dried up like a stick, and the tongue, which had been turned back into the throat, had become like a piece of horn. Those who exhumed him followed his previously-given directions for the restoration of animation, and the Yogi told them he had only been conscious of a kind of ecstatic bliss in the society of other Yogis and saints, and was quite ready to be buried over again.

What amount of fraud there may be in these feats it is difficult to say. They may possibly be accounted for by the fact that Indian Yogis have studied the habits of hibernating animals; but in some cases the secret introduction of food has been detected.

I may add that it is commonly believed throughout India that a man whose body is sublimated by intense abstract meditation never dies, in the sense of undergoing corruption and dissolution. When his supposed death occurs he is held to be in a state of trance, which may last for centuries, and his body is, therefore, not burnt, but buried—generally in a sitting posture—and his tomb is called a Samidh.

With regard to the fifth requisite—the act of withdrawing the senses from their object, as, for example, the eye from visible forms—this is well compared to the act of a tortoise withdrawing its limbs under its shell.

The sixth requisite—fixing the principle of thought—comprises the act of directing the thinking faculty

(citta) towards various parts of the body, for example, towards the heart, or towards the crown of the head, or concentrating the will-force on the region between the two eyebrows, or even fixing the eyes intently on the tip of the nose. (Compare Bhagavad-gitā VI. 13.)

The seventh and eighth requisites—viz. internal self-contemplation and intense self-concentration—are held (when conjoined with the sixth) to be most important as leading to the acquisition of certain supernatural powers, of which the following are most commonly enumerated:—(1) Animan, 'the faculty of reducing the body to the size of an atom;' (2) Mahiman, or Gariman, 'increasing the size or weight at will;' (3) Laghiman, 'making the body light at will;' (4) Prāpti, 'reaching or touching any object or spot, however apparently distant;' (5) Prākāmya, 'unbinited exercise of will;' (6) Išitva, 'gaining absolute power over one's self and others;' (7) Vašitā, 'bringing the elements into subjection;' (8) Kāmāvasāyitā, 'the power of suppressing all desires.'

A Yogi who has acquired these powers can rise aloft to the skies, fly through space, pass through the key-hole of a door, pierce the mysteries of planets and stars, cause storms and earthquakes, understand the language of animals, ascertain what occurs in any part of the world, or of the universe, recollect the events of his own previous lives, prolong his present life, see into the past and future, discern the thoughts of others, assume any form he likes, disappear, reappear, and even enter into another man's body and make it his own.

Such were some of the extravagant ideas which grew with the growth of the Yoga system, and were incorporated into the later developments of Buddhism.

We learn from Mr. Sarat Chandra Das that in the monastery of Galdan in Tibet there is at this moment a college specially devoted to the teaching of Esoteric and Mystical Buddhism; while magic and sorcery are taught in the monasteries founded by Padma-sambhava (see pp. 272, 274, 441).

Of course it was only natural that, with the association of Buddhism with the later Yoga and Saivism, the Buddha himself should have become a centre for the growth of supernatural and mystical ideas.

Hence the Buddha is fabled by his followers to have ascended to the Trayastrinsa heaven of Indra, walked on water, stepped from one mountain to another, and left impressions of his feet on the solid rock. Although in the Dhamma-pada it is twice declared (254, 255), There is no path through the air.

Perhaps the climax was reached when the later dectrine made every Buddha possess a threefold existence or three bodies, much in the same way as in Hinduism three bodies are assigned to every being,

The first of the Buddha's bodies is the Dharma-kāya, body of the Law, supposed to be a kind of ethereal essence of a bighly sublimated nature and co-extensive with space. This essence was believed to be eternal, and after the Buddha's death, was represented by the Law or Doctrine (Dharma) he taught. The idea seems

to have been invented as an analogue to Brahman, or the Universal spiritual Essence of Brahmanism '.

The second body is the Sambhoga-kāya, 'body of conscious bliss,' which is of a less ethereal and more material nature than the last. Its Brahmanical analogue appears to be the intermediate body (belonging to departed spirits) called Bhoga-deha, which is of an ethereal character, though composed of sufficiently gross (sthula) material particles to be capable of experiencing happiness or misery.

For observe that it is an essential part of the Hindu doctrine of transmigration or metempsychosis, that a soul without a body is incapable of feeling either hap-

piness in heaven or pain in helf,

The third body is the Nirmann-kaya, body of visible shapes and transformations, that is to say, those various concrete material forms in which every Buddha who exists as an invisible and eternal essence, is manifested on the earth or elsewhere for the propagation of the true doctrine.

The Brahmanical analogue of this third body appears to be the earthly gross body, called Sthula-sarīra.

It is evident that the extravagances of mystical Buddhism have their counterparts in Brahmanism.

There is a Brāhmanical legend which relates how the great Brāhman sage Śaŭkarāćārya entranced his gross body, and then, having forced out his soul along with his subtle body, entered the dead body of a recently deceased king, which he occupied for several weeks.

See my Brähmanism and Hindtism, p. 35-

The Yoga of the Brāhmans, in fact, held that adepts, skilled in occult science, might throw their gross bodies into a state of unconsciousness, and by a determined effort of will project or force out the ethercal body through the pores of the skin, and make this phantasmal form visible in distant places ¹.

And now it is declared to be a fact that a community of Buddhist 'Brothers' called Mahātmas, are living at this moment in the deserts of Tibet, who, having emancipated their interior selves from physical bondage by profound abstract meditation, have acquired 'astral' bodies (distinct from their gross bodies), with which they are able to rise in the air, or move through space, by the mere exercise of will.

Sir Edwin Araold on the other hand, in his 'India Revisited' (p. 273), states that he asked Sri Weligama of Ceylon whether there existed anywhere Mahātmas, who elevated in this way above humanity, possessed larger powers and more profound insight than any other living philosophers? Weligama answered, 'No! such do not exist; you would seek them vainly in this island, or in Tibet, or in Siam, or in China. It is true, O my friend, that if we had better interpretations of the Lord Buddha's teaching, we might reach to heights and depths of power and goodness now quite impossible, but we have fallen from the old wisdom, and none of us to-day are so advanced.'

I believe that the Psychical Research Society once sent

¹ Colonel Olcott and Mr. Sinnett mention this faculty as a peculiar characteristic of Asiatic occultism.

delegates to India who inquired into this subject, and exposed the absurdity of some of the alleged phenomena.

Curiously in agreement with these extravagant notions are the beliefs of various uncivilized races. Dr. Tylor, in his 'Primitive Culture' (i. 440), relates how the North American Indians and others believe that their souls quit their bodies during sleep, and go about hunting, dancing, visiting, etc. It is stated by Mr. Finn, late H. M. Consul for North Persia, that he never could induce his Persian servants to awaken him in the morning. They gave as their reason that the soul during sleep wanders away from the body, and that a sleeper will die if awakened before the soul has time to rejoin the body. The Indian tribes in Central Brazil have the same belief, so says Dr. Karl von den Steinen (recently quoted in the Times newspaper).

Furthermore it is clear that the possibility of acquiring supernatural faculties is not an idea confined to one country.

Old legends relate how Simon Magus made statues walk; how he flew in the air; how he lept into the fire, made bread of stones, changed his shape, assumed two faces, made the vessels in a house move of themselves (Colonel Yule's Marco Polo, i. 306).

We are told that the phenomena of European spiritualism are to be kept distinct from those of Asiatic occultism. Modern spiritualism, it is said, requires the intervention of 'mediums,' who neither control nor understand the manifestations of which they are the passive instruments; whereas the phenomena of occultism are the 'achievements of a conscious living operator,'

produced on himself by an effort of his own will. According to Mr. Sinnett, the important point 'which occultism brings out is, that the soul of man, while something enormously subtler and more ethereal and more
lasting than the body, is itself a material body. The
ether that transmits light is held to be material by any
one who holds it to exist at all; but there is a gulf of
difference between it and the thinnest of gases.' In
another place he advances an opinion that the spirit is
distinct from the soul. It is the soul of the soul.

And again: 'The body is the prison of the soul for ordinary mortals. We can see merely what comes before its windows; we can take cognisance only of what is brought within its bars. But the adept has found the key of his prison, and can emerge from it at pleasure. It is no longer a prison for him—merely a dwelling. He can project his soul out of his body to any place he pleases with the rapidity of thought!

It is perhaps worth noting that many believers in Asiatic occultism hold that a hitherto unsuspected force exists in nature called Odic force (is this to be connected with Psychic force?), and that it is by this that the levitation of entranced persons is effected,

Others, like the Yogis, maintain that any one may lighten his body by swallowing large draughts of air, and by an effort of will forcing this air to diffuse itself through every part of the frame. It is alleged that this phenomenon has been actually witnessed.

The connexion, however, of similar phenomena with

^{&#}x27;The Occult World,' by A. P. Sinnett, Vice-President of the Theocophical Society, pp. 12, 15, 20,

feats of conjuring is undeniable. In the Asiatic Monthly Journal (March, 1829), an account is given of a Brahman who poised himself apparently in the air, about four feet from the ground, for forty minutes, in the presence of the Governor of Madras. Another juggler sat on three sticks put together to form a tripod. These were removed, one by one, and the man remained sitting in the air 1.

Long ago Friar Ricold related that 'a man from India was said to fly. The truth was that he did walk close to the surface of the ground without touching it, and would seem to sit down without any substance to support him '(Colonel Yule's Marco Polo, i. 307).

On the other hand, it is contended, that 'since we have attained, in the last half-century, the theory of evolution, the antiquity of man, the fargreater antiquity of the world itself, the correlation of physical forces, the conservation of energy, spectrum analysis, photography, the locomotive engine, electric telegraph, spectroscope, electric light, and the telephone (to which we may now add the phonograph), who shall dare to fix a limit to the capacity of man * ? Few will deny altogether the truth of such a contention, however much they may dissent from Colonel Olcott's theosophical views.

There may be, of course, latent faculties in humanity which are at present quite unsuspected, and yet are capable of development in the future.

¹ At a meeting of the Victoria Institute, where I repeated the substance of the present Lecture, Mr. W. S. Seton-Karr, who was for some time Foreign Secretary at Calcutta, stated that he also had witnessed the performance of this feat in India.

² Colonel Olcott's 'Lectures on Theosophy and Archaic Religious,' p. 109.

According to Sir James Paget, in his recent address on 'Scientific Study,' many things, now held to be inconceivable and past man's imagination, are profoundly and assuredly true, and it will be in the power of Science to prove them to be so '.

Most persons will assent to these propositions, and at the same time agree with me when I express my conviction that mystical Buddhism and Asiatic occultism are no more likely than modern European spiritualism, to bear the searching light of true scientific investigation.

Nevertheless the subject of mystical Buddhism ought not to be brushed aside as unworthy of consideration. It furnishes, in my opinion, a highly interesting topic of inquiry, especially in its bearing on the 'neo-Buddhism,' and 'Theosophy' of the present day. At all events it is clear from what we have advanced in the present Lecture, that the practices connected with spiritualism, mesmerism, animal magnetism, telepathy, clairvoyance, thought-reading ', etc., have their counterparts in the Yoga system prevalent in India more than 2,000 years ago, and in the practices of mystical Buddhism prevalent in Tibet and the adjacent countries for many centuries.

'The thing that bath been, it is that which shall be; and that which is done is that which shall be done; and there is no new thing under the sun.'

Report in the Times newspaper.

^{*} See Mr. Walter Bennut's recent interesting story, 'Herr Paulus.'

LECTURE XI.

Hierarchical Buddhism, especially as developed in Tibet and Mongolia.

Early Buddhism was, as we have seen, opposed to all ecclesiastical organization. It had no hierarchy in the proper sense of that term—no church, no priests, no true form of prayer, no religious rites, no ceremonial observances. It was simply a Brotherhood consisting of men who had renounced all family ties, all worldly desires—even all desire for life—and were pledged to devote themselves to meditation, recitation of the Law, self-restraint, and the accumulation of merit, not for the sake of saving others, but for their own deliverance.

It was on this account that when the Buddha died he abstained from appointing a successor, and gave no directions to his followers as to any particular form of government. All that he said was, 'Hold fast to the Law; look not to any one but yourselves as a refuge.' In short, the Society (Sangha) he left behind was a simple brotherhood of monks which claimed some kind of corporate authority for the enforcement of discipline, but had no Head except the Law. Nor did Buddhism for a long time think of contravening the last injunctions of its Founder. Nor has it ever attempted to establish a universal hierarchy under one Head and under one central authority, and although the great Käsyapa as president of the first Council (p. 55) is sometimes held to have been the first successor of Buddha, and Ananda the second (p. 56), these men never claimed any supremacy like that of Popes. In point of fact Buddhism simply organized itself in separate monastic institutions according to local ideas and necessities. And indeed the exigencies of healthy growth, and even the simple instinct of self-preservation compelled the scattered members of the Buddhist Brotherhood to attempt some such organization very soon after the death of their Founder. In ancient times communication was carried on with difficulty, and the Buddhist Brotherhood could only hold together by combining for mutual support in various centres, and adopting some sort of monastic government.

It was thus that every collection of monks naturally tended to crystallize into a distinct organized society with certain definite rules.

Naturally, the earliest constitution of each was moulded according to the family pattern. The living Head of every monastery' was a kind of spiritual father, while its inmates were his children, and these, again, resolved themselves into two classes: the first consisting of the more youthful members of the society; the second, of those whose more mature experience entitled them to greater respect and reverence. Then, again, some kind of pre-eminence was assigned to individuals who were remarkable for greater knowledge, or sanctity of character.

It is easy to understand, therefore, how it happened that the Sangha or collective community of monks was compelled in the end to establish several gradations of rank and position among its members.

The following were soon recognized:—1. The Śrāmaņera or 'novice' (who began by being a Ćhela or 'pupil' under education); 2. The Śramaṇa (also called Bhikslm) or full monk; 3. The Sthavira or 'elder,' who was merely superior to others in virtue of his age; 4. The Mahā-sthavira or 'great elder' (sometimes called Sthavirah Sthavirāṇām); 5. The Upādhyāya and Ācārya. These last were teachers of different kinds, who received honour in virtue of their knowledge; the two positions of elder and teacher being frequently united in the President of particular monasteries.

No doubt gradations of this kind existed in very early times in India, Ceylon, and Burma. But in India the whole Buddhistic Order of monks passed away.

In Ceylon and Burma, on the contrary, Buddhism has held its own. It may even now be found in a purer form in those countries and in Siam than in any other region of Eastern Asia, although it must be borne in mind that, when it was introduced there, it was grafted on serpent-worship, Naga-worship, demonworship, and Nath-worship; with all of which, as well as with the worship of numerous Hindū gods, it continues to be adulterated in the present day.

The Sinhalese (Koeppen, i. 207, 386) give a list of the first five successive enforcers of discipline (viz.

Naga-worship is not always identical with serpent-worship. See p. 220.

⁴ The Naths are certain demons or spirits of the air more worshipped in Burms than in Ceylon. See p. 259.

Upāli, Dāsaka, Sonaka, Siggava, and Moggali-putta), and another list of ten successive Sthaviras or elders, beginning with Sāri-putta. These lists are untrustworthy, especially as omitting the great Kāšyapa.

And I may here state that the condition of Buddhism in Ceylon is a subject which I have had an opportunity of investigating personally. I visited Ceylon in 1877, and had many interesting conversations with intelligent monks, heads of monasteries, and a few really learned men, including a leading monk named Sumangala, who described himself to me as "High Priest of Adam's Peak".

I found, too, that a lofty idea prevails in Ceylon in regard to the status of the monkhood. Theoretically, a true monk is regarded as a kind of inferior Buddha, and revered accordingly. There are boy-pupils, novices, and full monks, as in Burma (see p. 259). The admission-ceremonies resemble those before described (p. 77.) Admission confers no priestly powers. Those monks who are Anglicized by contact with our civilization call themselves 'priests,' but they are not real priests, and have no sacerdotal functions except teaching, intoning the Law, and preaching. They live as celibates and exemplities in Pān-sālās ('houses made of leaves,' p. 430), or monastic buildings of the simplest structure.

The number of such monks is said to be about 8,000, and their chief duties are supposed to be to meditate a great deal, to perform Bana, that is, to recite the

^{&#}x27;His proper title is Sripāda Samnigala Unnānse. The title Unnānse is used by all the superior monks of Ceylon for 'venerable' (Samskrit vandya).

Tri-piţaka with its commentary the Attha-kathā in a sing-song voice, to repeat constantly the three-refuge formula (p. 78), to teach and to preach, to fast and to make confession to each other on at least four days in every month, at the four changes of the moon called Uposatha (or commonly Poya) days (see p. 84); these days being generally in modern times made to coincide with the Christian Sunday.

True Buddhism does not require monks to perform public religious services in temples. Nor is it the daily practice of monks to set the people an example of worshipping and presenting offerings there. So far as I was able to observe, the duty of visiting temples belongs rather to the laity. The monks receive offerings, rather than present them. As to their dress, it resembles that represented in the Buddha's images, and ought to consist of three pieces of cloth stained yellow or of a dull yellowish colour. The principal garment is in one piece, but torn and sewn together again, the object being to reduce its value and assimilate it to a dress made of rags. The end of the dress is brought over the left shoulder, and generally so as to leave the right shoulder bare. In some cases both shoulders are covered, or the right partially so.

A good deal of care seems to be taken in Ceylon to instruct the youthful members of the Order in Pali;

^{&#}x27;Summigula informed me that this was the only prayer used in Ceylon. It is no real prayer, but only an expression of revergues. Often, however, wishes for good lack are expressed like prayers. They are called Mangala or Jaya-mangala. For example: 'May I for this particular act of merit obtain some particular piece of good fortune!'

that is, in the language of their sacred books (p. 60), and to make them conversant with the sacred texts.

I visited two principal colleges for monks at Kandy, which enjoy a reputation rather like that of Oxford and Cambridge in our own country. One is called Malwatte, and the other Asgiriya. In the former I noticed a large central hall, in which the ceremony of admission to the monkhood takes place.

At Colombo there has been recently a revival of learning, and a modern Oriental College (called Vidyodaya), for the cultivation of Sanskrit, Pāli, and Sinhalese, has been established under the superintendence of the learned Sumangala, 'the High Priest of Adam's Peak,' mentioned before.

Each monastery in Ceylon has a presiding Head, and generally a temple and library attached, with considerable property in land, but there is clearly no organized hierarchy in the proper sense of the term, and no supreme authority like that of an Archbishop; though it is said that the Heads of the two Kandy Colleges exercise a kind of control over the after-career of the monks they have trained. I found that a certain amount of intelligence and learning exists among the monks both at Colombo and Kandy, but it must be evident to every impartial observer that the habit of living in houses apart from the laity, of repeating the Law by rote, and of engaging in a kind of meditation which generally amounts to thinking about nothing in particular, must tend, in the majority of instances, to contract the mind, induce laziness, and give a vacant and listless expression to the countenance. It may

be safely affirmed that the chief religious aim of the Buddhists of Ceylon is to acquire merit with a view to 'better' themselves in future states of existence, and that their highest aspiration is to attain to the heaven of Indra (Sakra, p. 207). They have no real desire for Nirvāņa (p. 141), and still less for Pari-nirvāṇa (p. 142).

Passing on to Burma we may remark that although in Burma, as in Ceylon, a pure form of Buddhism has prevailed ever since its introduction by Buddha-ghosha (p. 65), and is still existent, yet we find that the purer system is mixed up, as in Ceylon, with the worship of Nagas, demons, spirit-gods called Naths (commonly spelt Nats, p. 217), and with a kind of Shamanism derived from the surrounding hill-tribes.

In regard to the gradations of the monkhood a more complete organization exists in Burms than in Ceylon.

To begin with the boy-pupils;—In Burna nearly all boys become inmates of monastic houses (called Kyoung) with the one object of learning to read and write. They are simply school-boys and nothing more. Indeed, until our advent, the monasteries monopolized the education of the country, and to a great extent do so still. The real gradations are as follow:—

 The Shen or Shin, that is Srämaneras or novices. These are properly youths of at least fifteen years of age (but see p. 307); their hair is cut off and yellow garments are put on for a time.

It should be noted that every male throughout Burma is required to enter a monastery and become a novice for a portion of his life, if only for a single Vassa. This is because the Buddha taught that every true Buddhist ought to conform to his example and become a monk, although he wisely abstained from imposing any irrevocable vows. The whole process is often merely formal, and sometimes only lasts for seven days.

2. The Pyit-sen or Pyit-sin (sometimes pronounced Patzin) or full monks, who have the title Pungi or Phungi (sometimes spelt Phungee or Phongie), 'full of great glory,' when they have been at least ten years members of the order. They correspond to the Sramanas, and are by Europeans called Talapoins (from their carrying fans of palm leaves). Their dress usually consists of three pieces of yellow cotton cloth.

The Hsayā (always a Phungi) or Head of a separate monastery, who corresponds to the Abbot of Eu-

ropean countries.

 The Gain-ok or provincial Head, who has a kind of episcopal jurisdiction over all the monasteries of a district.

5. The Thathana-paing (Thathana - Sanskrit Sasana) or supreme rulers, who correspond to Archbishops. They superintend all religious affairs. According to Mr. Scott, there are now eight of them.

Occasionally instances occur of hermit-monks who lead solitary lives, and sit motionless in meditation for

years.

In Siam the gradations of monkhood are nearly similar to those in Burma, and we learn from Mr. Alabaster that the monastic vow is not binding for life, but can be cancelled at any time. This rule leads to every Siamese man spending at least three months of his life in a monastery.

We have now to pass from Ceylon, Burma, and Siam to Tibet (properly called Bod or Bot or Bhot, Sanskrit Bhota). And here we leave the simpler forms of Buddhism and are brought face to face with that highly developed system which, though nominally resulting from an expansion of the Hina-yana, 'Little Method,' into the Mahā-yana, 'Great Method' (p. 158), was really the product of a still further expansion of the 'Great Method' and its combination with other creeds.

In truth, Tibetan Buddhism is so different from every other Buddhistic system that it ought to be treated of separately in a separate volume, as Koeppen has done. In his elaborate and excellent work on this subject he has remarked that for the development of a hierarchy no circumstance is more favourable than isolation, and that this advantage was offered in the highest degree by Tibet. Up to the moment of its conversion to Buddhism a profound darkness had rested on it. The inhabitants were ignorant and uncultivated, and their indigenous religion, sometimes called Bon, consisted chiefly of magic based on a kind of Shamanism.

To describe exactly what Shamanism is would be no easy task. The word is said to be of Tungusic origin, and to be used as a name for the earliest religion of Mongolia, Siberia, and other Northern countries.

Perhaps we shall not be far wrong in asserting that the two principal constitutents of Shamanism are the worship of nature and the dread of spirits.

Some connect the wisard-priest Shaman with the Buddhist Sramana.

The inhabitants of Tibet and Mongolia and indeed of other Northern countries believed that spirits, good and bad, influenced the whole course of nature. They held that such spirits were able either to cause or to avert diseases and disasters, to control the destinies of men, and even to decide the fate of the lower animals. Hence it is easy to understand that the chief function of the Shamans, or wizard-priests, was to exorcise evil demons, or to propitiate them by sacrifices and various magical practices. In this way they pretended to prevent storms, pestilences, and other calamities. They were supposed, too, to understand omens and to predict the future by watching the flights of birds, by examining the shoulder-blades of sheep, and by similar devices. Shamanism, in fact, with its Tibetan offshoot, Bon, had much in common with the lowest types of Saivism, Saktism, and Tantrism, with which the Buddhism of Northern India, Nepal, and the countries bordering on Tibet, had already become adulterated.

When, therefore, this mixed form of Buddhism advanced from those countries into Tibet, its approach was not resisted as an intrusion. On the contrary, Tibetan Shamanism, although it had possession of the field, was quite ready to meet the new religion half-way. The result was an alliance, or rather perhaps an amalgamation; and this led to the establishment of a complex religious system which I have ventured to call Lamism.

Lama (written in Tibetan blama) is the Tibetan name for a superior teacher (Sanskrit Guru), and from this word the hierarchical system of Tibet is usually called Lamaism. It seems, however, as

Lämism, then, is a form of Buddhism which, although based on the Hina-yana and Mahā-yāna of India, is combined with Shamanism, Siva-worship, and magic, and has a marked individuality and a peculiar hierarchical organization of its own. This organization has been compared to that of the Roman Catholic Church. Doubtless in its great receptivity Buddhism may have borrowed from Christianity, but Lämism possesses certain unique features which distinguish it from every other system in the world.

Unfortunately few Europeans have, as yet, penetrated into Tibet, and its sacred literature has been little studied. It follows therefore that the various gradations of the Tibetan hierarchy are not easily described, and only a general idea of them can be given.

We ought first to note the boy-pupil called Genyen, sometimes spoken of as Bandi or Baute (= Bandya*, a term more properly applicable to monks). Boy-pupils are inmates of every Tibetan monastery; but under exceptional circumstances a pupil may live with his parents. He may be received after seven years of age, and until fifteen, as in Burma (p. 259). He is placed under a full monk, who teaches him and makes him promise to keep the five chief commandments (p. 126). Though sometimes called a novice he is merely under

legitimate to form a word Lämism from Läma, as Baddhism from Buddho. At any rate my adjective Lämistic is less awkward than Lämnistic. As to a in Läma, see Rules for pronunciation at p. xxxi.

⁴ This is the Sanskrit wordyn, 'to be saluted.' I cannot bely thinking that Bante and Bandya may be the origin of the term Bonze, applied to masks or priests in China, though I believe Professor Legge connects Bonze with Munchi.

education, and not necessarily a cambidate for the monkhood. The real degrees of the Lamistic hierarchy, as explained by Kocppen and others, are as follow:—

1. First and lowest in rank comes the novice or junior monk, called Gethsul (Getzul), who has been admitted after fifteen years of age to the first stage of monkhood by a Khanpo Lāma or his representative. His hair is cut off and he wears the monkish garments, and has 112 rules to observe. He waits on the full monk, and assists in all functions except blessing and consecrating. He has been compared to the deacon of the European coelesiastical system, but the comparison is misleading, as shown at p. 76.

2. Secondly and higher in rank we have the full monk, called Gelong (or Gelon). He corresponds to the Bhikshu, who has received complete consecration, and is often called by courtesy a Lanu (see note, p. 262), though he has no real right to that title. He is not properly a priest, yet it is certain that in Tibet he often discharges sacerdotal functions. The ceremony of admission to the full monkhood can only be performed after the twentieth year, and binds the recipient to 253 rules of discipline.

3. Thirdly we have the superior Gelong or Khanpo (strictly mKhan po), who has a real right to the further title Lāma, and from his higher knowledge and sauctity sometimes becomes a kind of head-teacher (Sanskrit Upādhyāya or Āćārya). As the chief monk in a monas-

According to Dr. Schlagintweit the number of rules is 250, and they are detailed in the first or Dulva portion of the Kanjur.

tery he may be compared to the European Abbot; but in respect of consecration he is only a Gelong. Nor are any of the higher grades of monks—so far as the forms of consecration are concerned—higher than Gelongs and Khanpos.

At this point, however, we have to note the special peculiarity of the Lāmistic system, namely, that some of the higher Khanpo Lāmas are supposed to be living re-incarnations or re-embodiments of certain canonized saints and Bodhi-sattvas who differ in rank. These are called Avatāra Lāmas (see p. 190), and of such there are three degrees, which we may denote by the letters A. B. C. as follow:—

A. The lowest degree of Avatara Lama. He may be called an ordinary Khubilghan (from a Mongolian word—written by Huc, Hubilghan). He represents the continuous re-embodiment of an ordinary canonized saint (p. 188), or founder of some great monastery. He is higher by one degree than the Khappo Abbot, as presiding over a more important monastery.

B. A higher grade of Avatara Lama called Khutuktu. He exercises a kind of episcopal jurisdiction over a still more important monestery than that presided over by the ordinary incarnated Lama. He represents the incarnation of a higher Bodhi-sattva or deified saint, but he sometimes claims to be an incarnated Buddha.

C. The highest Avatāra Lāma commonly called a Supreme or Grand Lāma. He is not an incarnation of a mere ordinary Bodhi-sattva (p. 188), but a continuous re-embodiment of either a supreme Buddha or of his Bodhi-sattva. The two notable examples of this highest degree are the Dalai and Pauchen Lämas, who claim an authority, like that of a Pope or Archbishop, over extensive regions outside their own monasteries. They will be more fully described in the sequel (see p. 284).

It may be stated generally, therefore, that the Lamistic hierarchy consists of three lower and three higher grades. We have, besides, to reckon certain other distinctions of rank, such as those of the Rabjampa, 'doctor of theology or philosophy,' the Chorje (strictly Chos-rje), 'lord of the faith.' These are sometimes associated with the Khanpo or Abbot, though slightly inferior in rank to that dignitary. It is said that the Chorje often acts as a kind of condjutor Abbot. Practically they rank below the incarnated or Avatara Lamas. Moreover, in every monastery there are numerous other subordinate officials; for example, schoolmasters, teachers who explain the Law and guide the studies of the brotherhood, precentors or choirmasters, secretaries, collectors of revenue, treasurers, stewards, overseers, physicians, painters, sculptors, manufacturers of relies, of amulets, of resaries, of images, and in some monasteries—especially those of the Red sect-astrologers, fortune-tellers, magicians (Chos-kyong or Chos-kyon), and exercists. The Lama is not only the priest; he is the educator, schoolmaster, physician, astrologer, architect, sculptor, painter; he is 'the head, the heart, the oracle of the laity."

There is also a whole class of mendicant Lamas, who have vowed to live a vagabond life for a certain number of years. They are better known than some others, for they often find their way into British territory.

When I was staying at Dārjūling, I encountered two specimens of the vagabond class who came from some distant part of Tibet. They called themselves Lāmas, though, of course, they had no real right to that title. They were clothed in ragged garmonts made up of thirty-two patches of different cloths, and wore thick buskins to protect them from the snows. Then they carried a kind of knapsack or wallet of goat-skin behind their backs, and in their hands a sort of sacred drum or tabour called Damaru (see p. 384).

According to M. Hue, these vagabond Lamas travel for the sake of travelling. They wander through China, Manchuria, Southern Mongolia, Kuku Nür, Tibet, Northern India, and even Turkestan.

There is scarcely a river which they have not crossed; a mountain which they have not ascended; a Grand Lama before whom they have not prostrated themselves; a people among whom they have not lived, and of whom they do not know the manners and language.

It should be noted that when an incarnated Lama is the spiritual Head of a monastery there is generally a temporal Head to manage its affairs.

Then we must not forget that Tibetan Buddhism has also its organized female hierarchy, on the highest steps of which are female Khutuktus and incarnated Abbesses, as well as lower gradations of nuns and novices, living together in their own convents.

The rules of discipline for the whole Lamistic hierarchy fill at least thirteen out of the ros volumes of the Tibetan Canon (see p. 272). They do not differ materially from those of other Buddhist countries. The 253 rules of the Pratimoksha-sūtra (see p. 62) are said to contain commands and prohibitions relating to five sides of the monastic life—conduct, dress, food, habitation, and occupation.

It must be borne in mind that early Lamism, like true Buddhism, had properly no secular priesthood and encouraged no intercourse with the outer world, except for the reception of alms and food from the laity. All grades of the hierarchy were supposed to live together as one celibate fraternity in monastic seclusion, apart from mundane associations. Their only duties were to meditate, recite the Law, and obey certain strict rules of discipline. This strictness of discipline, however, was not long borne with equal patience by the whole fraternity. It soon became irksome to a large section, and the same state of things which arose in early Buddhism and generally arises in all religious communities, occurred in Lamism. The fraternity of Lamas became split up into two chief parties or sects-the strict and the lax. We shall see in the end that these two sects were distinguished from each other by the colour of their garments, and especially of their caps, the former adopting yellow and calling themselves Gelug pa or Galdan pa, the latter adopting red (Shamār). Of course the lax or Red-cap sect soon infringed the rule in regard to celibacy, and allowed the marriage of monks under certain conditions, though such marriages seem at first to have been exceptional.

It is said, indeed, that in Nepāl, under modern Gorkharule, the celibate occupies a lower position than the married monk, to whom the services in the temples are committed. It is said, too, that the Lāmas of Sikkim and other northern countries constantly have children living with them, though they do not admit them to be their own (p. 152). Yet, for all that, celibacy is the rule, and nominally, at any rate, the great majority of Lāmistic monks in Eastern Asia are unmarried comobites, who live together in monasteries.

Certainly in no other country in the world are monasteries so numerous or on so vast a scale as in Tibet and Mongolia (see p. 426).

And, indeed, in all probability it was the difficulty of enforcing discipline and order in these immense establishments, without some method of securing obedience to a presiding Head acceptable to all the immates, that led to that strange re-incarnation or 'Avatāra' theory which is one chief distinguishing feature of Lamism.

The process by which this remarkable theory was developed is so interesting and so important in relation to the subject of the present Lecture that it deserves careful investigation, and to clear the ground we must here make a brief digression and advert to some circumstances in the early history of Tibet and Mongolia, as given in Koeppen's laborious work.

We learn from him that Nya Khri Tsanpo, who lived in the Yarlung valley, was the first king of Tibet. After several successors came Srong Tsan Gampo. This king was born in 617, and, according to a legend, exhibited at his birth certain marks of perfection like those of Amitābba or Avalokitešvara (p. 198). He is worshipped as a great Conqueror and Reformer.

In the year 632, or about the time when Muhammad died in Arabia, he begon the work of civilizing his subjects. To this end he directed his minister Thumi (or Thonni) Sambhota to proceed to India, and make himself acquainted with Buddhist writings. This great man was the first to design the Tibetan alphabet on the model of the Indian letters then in use (called Lancha), but rejecting certain consonants and certain vowels as unsuitable for the representation of Tibetan sounds, and adding six new letters. Hence he was the first to introduce the art of writing along with Buddhism into Tibet.

It may be noted here that Buddhism, to its great credit, has generally given some sort of literary education to the barbarous nations to which it has imparted its own doctrines. It has also made the vernacular of the people its medium of instruction, though it has not always translated its sacred literature or ritualistic formularies into that vernacular.

The first Tibetan author was Thumi Sambhota himself, who is said to have composed a grammar and other books during his sojourn in India. An important work translated by him into the vernacular was the Mani Kambour—a Tantra work, alleged to have been revealed by Amitabha and his son Avalokitesvara. This book describes the introduction of Buddhism into Tibet as well as the origin of the well-known six-syllabled prayer-formula of Tibet—Om mani padme Hum (see Pp. 371–374). It contains 100,000 precepts. The teaching of Thumi Sambhota seems to have been of an orthodox character. He may perhaps be regarded as the founder of the strict school of Tibetan Buddhism (already mentioned), which was afterwards called Kadampa, and finally developed into the Yellow-robed sect, as distinguished from the Red. After Thumi Sambhota the propagation of Buddhism in Tibet was chiefly carried on by the two princesses, wives of King Srong Tsan Gampo, called Dolkar and Doljang. They were worshipped under the name Dolma, as forms of the wife of Siva or of the goddess Tārā; one being called the white mother, and the other, the dark; representing the mild and fierce forms of Siva's consort.

The first two Lāma monasteries in Tibet (called Lābrang and Ra mo che, founded about A.D. 650; Edgar, p. 38) were erected at Lhāssa* by them or in their honour, and each monastery contained a renowned wonder-working image, which each princess had brought with her (see pp. 440, 441, 492).

After King Srong Tsan Gampo, Buddhism declined in Tibet. One of his successors, named Khri Srong De Tsan, who was born in 728 A.D. and reigned from 740 to 786, tried to restore it. For this purpose, he sent for religious teachers in great numbers from India. These seem to have brought with them a very corrupt

One was a Nepälese princess (called Britssun) and the other a Chinese princess (called Wenching). According to Koeppso, they were worshipped under the general name Dara Eke—Dara standing for the Sauskrit Tara and Eke meaning Mother.

Sume write Lhasa (strictly Lhasa). I prefer Lhasa as best representing the pronouciation. It means 'the city of the gods' (that or that).

form of Buddhism, which aimed chiefly at counteracting the evil influences of demons by magical spells.

First came Śūata Rakshita, with twelve companions from Bengal.

Then the celebrated Padma-sambhava was sent for out of the land of Udyāna (= Dardistān)—west of the Indus, north of Peshawar—where the people were addicted to Saivism and witchcraft. It was under him that the great monastery at Samye (strictly Samyas) was built (see p. 448). He was celebrated for his skill in magic, sorcery, and alchemy, and became the real founder of the Red sect, after instructing several young Tibetans in his own lore. At the same time he was remarkable for his knowledge of Indian languages, and was active in promoting a taste for literature in Tibet. It redounds much to his credit that he was the first to further the translation of the whole Buddhist Canon (almost entirely from Sanskrit books) into Tibetan.

But the sacred books had by that time greatly increased, so that the Tibetan Canon commonly called Kanjur (or more strictly Kangyur and Ka-gyur, pp. 70, 267) consisted of at least 108 volumes.

Then we have the Tanjur (Tangyur) consisting of 225 folio volumes of translations, commentaries, and treatises, corresponding to the Attha-kathā of Ceylon (p. 65), and embracing works on all subjects (often mere translations from the Sanskrit), such as grammar, logic, rhetoric, poetry, medicine, astrology, alchemy, magic, and the use of spells.

A sect called Urgyanpa (or Urgyenpa), another called

Brugpa (or Dugpa or Dukpa), another called Sakyapa all belonging to the Red-clothed (in Tibetan, Shamār) Lāmas who are numerous in Nepāl, Bhutān, Sikkim, Ladāk, and in portions of Southern Tibet—follow the rules of Padma-sambhava.

After Khri Srong De Tsan came a number of kings who caused Buddhism to decline; but in the second half of the eleventh century it began to recover, and learned men were sent for from Kashmir and India, one of whom was Atisha (strictly Atisa), who might be called the re-founder of Lāmism.

He had an eminent Tibetan pupil named Brom Ton (Brom-sTon or Brom Baksbi¹). All violent opposition to Buddhism then ceased. Monastery after monastery was founded in the eleventh and twelfth centuries.

Three of the most important were (1) Raseng (or Radeng, strictly Ra sGreng), north-east of Lhāssa, founded by Brom Ton in 1058; (2) Sakya (see p. 448), situated in the district of Tsang, south-west of Shigatse, and founded by Koncho Yalpo, whose son was the first Grand Lāma of this monastery; (3) Brikhung (also written Brikun or Brigun or Brigung), four days' journey north of Lhāssa, founded by Koncho Yalpo's son.

Atisha belonged to a school which did not favour Saivism and sorcery in the way that Padma-sambhava had done, and his pupil, Brom Ton of the Raseng monastery, was the founder of the sect called Kadampa²,

¹ Bakshi is probably a corruption of Bhikshu. Koeppen says it is Mongolian for Ton. Mr. Edgar (Report, p. 39) pronounces Brom Ton Donnton.

^{*} Dr. Schlagintweit (p. 73) identifies this with the sect which wenvered dresses, but this must surely be an error for yellow.

which enforced great strictness of monastic life—a sect which, as we have already mentioned, had its earliest origin in the teaching of Thumi Sambhota, and whose tenets were adopted by the celebrated reformer Tsong Khapa (p. 277), the real founder of the Yellow sect.

On the other hand, the monks of the Sakya monastery belonged to the more lax school, and were therefore followers of Padma-sambhava. No doubt these two chief monasteries of Raseng and Sakya maintained at first their own separate independence, the presiding Lama of each claiming equal authority with the other. Then in process of time, a rivalry sprang up between them. Moreover the Brikhung monastery strove with the Sakya, each trying to acquire predominance. Ultimately they appealed to the Chinese authorities, who decided that the highest position belonged to the monastery of Sakya and to the Red sect.

And here we have to turn for a short time to Mongolia. That country received its Buddhism, or rather Lamism, from Tibet. It is well known that the great Mongol conqueror, Jenghiz Khān, conquered Tibet about A.B. 1206. Before that period the Mongolians had come in contact with various religious cults; for example, with Zoroastrianism, Buddhism, and Islam.

They had even had some experience of Christianity; for Nestorian Missions existed in Central Asia in the fifth and sixth centuries of our era, and penetrated to China in the seventh century. All these religious strove

Through the Mongola Tibet gradually come under the power of China from 1255 to 1720. The dynasty in China is now Manchu.

to convert the Mongolians, who soon became an important nation through the conquests of Jenghiz Khān. That conqueror, however, had a very simple religion of his own. He believed in one God in heaven, and one king on earth; that is, he believed that God had given him the dominion of the whole world, and he set himself to conquer the world. Yet he tolerated all religions. 'As the hand,' he said, 'has many fingers, so there are many ways to show men how they may reach heaven.'

Khubilai (1259-1294), the greatest of all the descendants of Jenghiz and Sovereign of a vast empire, was the first to elevate his people above a mero life of rapine and plunder; and it struck him that the best method of civilizing them would be by adopting and promoting Buddhism, which the greater number of the races subject to him already professed.

Between the indigenous Shamanism of Northern countries and the doctrines of Confucius, or of Islām, or of Christianity, there were no points of contact; whereas Shamanism, as we have seen, had much common ground with Northern Buddhism, which had become mixed up with Saivism and magic,

It was this that led Khubilai to adopt the Lāmistic or Tibetan form of Buddhism. He also thought it wise to conciliate the spiritual potentates of Tibet, who had for many centuries taken all real power out of the hands of their temporal chiefs.

And among Lämistic prelates, the Head of the Monastery of Sakya and of the Red school in Southern Tibet had, as we have seen, acquired a kind of sovereignty. Many monks of this Red sect married, according to the practice of the Brahmans, and remained householders till a son and heir was born to them. At that time they had a presiding monk, called Sakya Paṇḍita, and the Emperor Khubilai appointed Mati-dhvaja, the Paṇḍita's nephew, to succeed him as Head of the monastery, conferring on him a certain amount of temporal power and making him a kind of tributary ruler of Tibet. He was known as the Phaspa (strictly Phags pa), 'excellent Lama,' and in return for the supremacy granted to him, was required to consecrate or crown the emperors of Mongolia.

Koeppen observes that Khubilai was thus the creator of the first Lamistic Pope; just as Pepin and Charlemagne were of the first Christiau Pope.

The Mongolians also owe their written character and literature to Buddhism. It was Phaspa Lāma who invented the Mongolian alphabet. Taking the Tibetan alphabet as his model, he invented a square character with a thousand syllables. He then undertook a new revision of the Buddhist sacred writings, causing the Tibetan sacred texts (Kanjur) to be compared with the Chinese. It is said that this lasted from the year 1285 to 1306.

Twenty-nine learned men, versed in the Tibetan, Ugrian, Chinese, and Sanskrit languages, were occupied on the task of collation, and a few years later, the first Mongolian translation of the sacred texts was begun by the Sakya Lama Choskyi Odser.

Khubilai, no doubt, was a great promoter of Buddhism, and founded many monasteries in Mongolia, and a celebrated one at Peking. After the elevation of the Phaspa Lama to quasitemporal as well as spiritual sovereignty very little is known about the state of Buddhism in Tibet, except that the successive Heads of the Sakya monastery maintained their position under Khubilai's successors, and of course perpetuated and extended the doctrines of the Red school of Buddhism. Probably they resided at Lhassa, and possibly at the Mongolo-Chinese Court.

In 1368, the last Mongol emperor was expelled by the founder of the Ming dynasty, after Jenghiz's family had occupied the throne of China for about a century.

The emperors of this dynasty did their best to bring Tibet under the Chinese Government, and to conciliate the Tibetan Lämus by gifts, titles, and other favours. But they thought it politic to prevent the predominance of any one monastery. Hence they made three other Heads of monasteries equal in rank to the Sakya Lämu, and encouraged antagonism between them. This facilitated the great Reform which Lämism underwent in the time of the Emperor Jong lo—a reform brought about by the celebrated Tsong Khapa, sometimes called the Luther of Lämistic Buddhism.

Tsong Khapa, whose name is as much celebrated in Mongolia and Tibet and among the Kalmuk Tartars as that of the founder of Buddhism, is said to have been born in the year 1355 or 1357 of our era, in the land of Ando, where the celebrated monastery of Kunbum or Kumbum—situated North of Tibet on the borders of China—now stands. All sorts of legends, but none worth repeating, are related about him. We may note, however, a probable tradition that a learned Läma,

'with a long nose and bright eyes,' who had settled in the land of Amdo, and may possibly have been a Roman Catholic priest, became his teacher.

In process of time, Tsong Khapa set out on a journey from Amdo to Tibet, his object being to acquire a knowledge of the doctrine from original sources. He is said to have studied the Law of Buddha at Sakya, Brikhung, and Lhāssa. It was in this way that he became impressed with the necessity of purifying and reforming the discipline of Tibetan Buddhism, which the Red sect had corrupted by allowing the marriage of monks and by laxity in other matters. Innumerable pupils gathered round him, all of whom adopted, as their distinguishing mark, the orthodox yellow garments of primitive Buddhism, and especially the yellow cap (p. 268); while the followers of Padma-sambhava and the more corrupt school wore red garments and a red cap.

Tsong Khapa soon acquired vast influence, and in the year 1409 was able to build on a hill about thirty miles from Lhassa, the afterwards celebrated monastery called Galdan (or Gahdan) of the Yellow school. Of this Tsong Khapa was the first Abbot. His followers, however, rapidly became too numerous to be comprehended within so limited an area. Hence there arose in the immediate neighbourhood of Lhassa, two other great monasteries, Brepung (also written Dapung, etc., see p. 442), founded by Jam-yang Chos-rje, and Sera 'the Golden,' founded by Byam Chen Chos-rje,

These three monasteries once held 30,000 monks of the Yellow sect, but now have only 16,500.

Tsong Khapa wrote many works, which enjoy a

quasi-canonical authority among the adherents of the reformed sect. Many of them exist in Mongolian translations, but they have not yet been fully examined.

Undeniably, Tsong Khapa's chief merit was that he caused his followers to revert to the purer monastic discipline, especially to the rule of celibacy. He also purified the forms of worship, and greatly restricted without altogether prohibiting the use of magical rites. Tsong Khapa, too, is said to have re-established the original practice of retirement for religious meditation at certain seasons, although as there was no rainy season in Tibet, another period had to be chosen.

Travellers in Tibet have often described the many points of resemblance between the Roman Catholic and Lamistic systems, such as the Popedom, the celibacy of the priesthood, the worship of saints, confession, fasting, processions, holy water, bells, rosaries, mitres, croziers, etc. These resemblances and coincidences will be more fully noted in a subsequent Lecture (see pp. 338, 339).

It is possible that Tsong Khapa may have imbibed some of his notions from his instructor at Amdo already named (p. 277), who was either a Roman Catholic missionary, or was familiar with the constitution of the Romish hierarchy. On the other hand, it is certain that celibacy, confession, and fasting existed in Buddhism before the teaching of Christ, and long before that of Tsong Khapa.

In fact, Tsong Khapa's reformation had been to a certain extent anticipated, as we have seen, by the school of Kadampa, founded in the eleventh century, by Atisha's disciple, Brom Tou (p. 273).

Very little more is known about Tsong Khapa. He died in the year 1419, or, as his disciples believe, ascended to heaven, and that ascension is still celebrated during the festival of Lamps by all orthodox Buddhists of the Lamistic Church (see pp. 345, 346).

When some time after his death, he was canonized, he was regarded by some as an incarnation of Amitabha, or by others of Manju-sri, or by others of Vajra-pani (see p. 195), or even of the Mahā-kāla form of Siva, and his image is generally found in the temples of the Yellow sect, and often between the two images of the Dalai Lāma and the Panchen Lāma, on the right and left respectively.

His followers of the Yellow school called themselves Gelugpa (or Gelukpa), 'adherents of virtue' (or, Galdanpa from their monastery); their principal characteristic being that they adhered to the purer discipline.

The chief point of interest in connexion with Tsong Khapa is the bearing of his reformation on the development of the Avatara theory already mentioned (see pp.

190, 265).

It is said that Tsong Khapa himself, like Gautama Buddha, had two chief pupils, and that he appointed these two to succeed him with equal authority as Heads of the orthodox sect. He is also credited with having been the first to promulgate the doctrine that no election of successors to his two pupils would at any time be needed, as each of them on dying would be constantly re-born in a supernatural manner.

There is, however, no historical foundation for such a statement. Indeed, according to the opinion of some, the two Grand Lämas were merely the lineal successors of the two eminent Lämas, Atisha and his pupil Brom Ton (see p. 273).

After all, it seems most likely that the whole Avatāra theory was an invention of some shrewd Head Lāma, who, perceiving that the strict enforcement of celibacy would prevent any hereditary succession, like that possible in monasteries of the Red school, and foreseeing that it would be necessary to prevent the suicidal divisions to which the intrigues of an election to the Headship of monasteries—especially of Grand Lāma monasteries—would be likely to give rise, bothought himself of a compromise between hereditary succession and election. After more than one trial, the system was found to work so well that it was eventually adopted with little modification by all Northern Buddhists, and even by those of the Red seet.

The date of its invention is as uncertain as the name of the inventor. All that can be said is, that it cannot be traced back to an earlier period than the fifteenth century.

And here we must again guard against the confusion of thought likely to arise from the usual practice of translating Avatara by 'incarnation.'

We have seen that the doctrine of transmigration (gati) through various embodiments, as applicable to all beings, is a fundamental dogma both of Brahmanism and of Buddhism, though in Buddhism transmigration properly means a mere continuous transformation and reconstruction of the elements (Skandhas) of being (p. 109).

The idea is very dimly, if at all, adumbrated in the Mantra portion of the Veda. It is more clearly traceable in one of the Brāhmaṇas, and distinctly enunciated in the Chāndogya Upanishad (V. x. 7) thus :—'He whose conduct has been good, quickly attains to some good embodiment as a Brāhman, Kshatriya, or Vaisya. He whose conduct has been bad, assumes an inferior embodiment, as a dog, a log, or a Candāla.' In Mann the theory is fully developed.

Now it is true that in Buddhism this kind of transmigration may be described as a continuous series of incarnations, although genuine Buddhism denies the separate existence of a soul between each incarnation (see p. 110).

But the doctrine of repeated incarnations of one individual in six forms of life is quite distinct from the Tibetan Avatāra theory. This theory not only recognizes the separate existence of an immaterial essence or soul, but also teaches that the Head Lama of certain monasteries is the living, visible embodiment, for the time being, of the continuous descent (avatāra) on earth of a portion of the essence of the canonized Founder of a monastery or of a celestial Bodhi-sattva or Buddha, who will perpetually continue to descend from heaven and re-appear in human forms for the welfare of the world (see p. 109).

A similar idea, we know, prevails in India, where the doctrine of the descent (avatāra) of portions of the essence of Vishņu and other gods is common. There is, however, a noteworthy distinction in the Hindū

¹ It is remarkable that the expression 6 savaSor is said of Christ in the New Testament.

doctrine, because the descents of Vishnu are not continuous and uninterrupted (see 'Brāhmanism and Hindūism,' pp. 47, 107-116); and although every great Hindū teacher is supposed to be the embodiment of a portion of the essence of a deity, each such embodiment is isolated and single.

And here note that one theory is that the continuous descents of Bodhi-sattvas and Buddhas into human forms were effected by means of their third changeable body (Nirmāṇa-kāya, p. 247), which belonged to Bodhi-sattvas as well as to Buddhas; or, according to another theory, through rays of light proceeding from the essences of the Bodhi-sattvas, just as the Bodhi-sattvas themselves were held by some to have been generated by rays of light proceeding from the Dhyāni-Buddhas.

Or again, the Dhyani-Buddhas might incarnate themselves not only intermediately through their Dhyani-Bodhi-sattvas, but by the transmission of rays of light directly from their own essences into a continuous succession of human beings of pre-eminent sanctity.

Hence it is clear that the Avatāra Lāma is no example of the working of either Hindu metempsychosis or of Buddhist metamorphosis. And indeed, re-birth, through transmigration and transformation, according to the ordinary Hindu and Buddhist theories, is regarded as a kind of natural act, whereas continuous incarnation through the descent of a portion of a celestial essence into human bodies is a supernatural act.

Of course, as we have stated, there were lower and higher Avatāras, corresponding to the difference in rank of Saints and Bodhi-sattvas (see pp. 190, 265). Examples of the highest Avatāras are the two quasi-Popes, or spiritual Kings, who are supreme Lāmas of the Yellow sect—the one residing at Lhāssa, and the other at Tashi Lunpo (Krashi Lunpo), about 100 miles distant, in a south-westerly direction, not far from the town of Shigatse (or Shigatze, capital of the province of Tsang), and not very far from our Indian frontier.

The Grand Lama at Lhassa is the Dalai Lama, that is, 'the Ocean-Lama, or one whose power and learning are as great as the ocean;' a half Mongolian half Tibetan title—Dalai (or Tale) meaning in Mongolian 'Ocean,' and Lama meaning in Tibetan 'a superior Teacher' (see note, p. 262). He has also the Tibetan title of rGyamthso Rinpoche (Rin-po-ce), 'Ocean-Jewel' (the Tibetan equivalent for Dalai being rGyamthso).

The other Grand Lāma who resides in the monastery of Tashi Lunpo, is known in Europe under the names of the Tashi Lāma (sometimes written Teshu Lāma) or Panchen Lāma (called in Mongolian Bogdo Lāma). He has the Tibetan title of Panchen Rinpoche (Pañ-cen Rin-po-ce), 'the great Pandit Jewel' (Pan being equivalent to Pandita, and then meaning great).

Hence Tashi Lunpo is the second metropolis of Lāmisın (see p. 443). It is said to have been built by Gedun grub pa, the chief papil of the Reformer Tsong Khapa, in 1445 (see p. 261).

Neither of these Grand Lamas are Popes in the European sense, for neither are elected by a conclave of chief Lamas.

The belief is that when they quit their bodies at death, they re-appear after nine months, or occasionally after the second or third year, in children whose bodies they have occupied from conception.

The Dalai Lamas are held to be continuous re-incarnations of the Dhyani-Bodhisattva Avalokitesvara (p. 197), while the Panchen Lamas are continuous reincarnations of his father the Dhyani-Buddha Amitabla (p. 203).

Hence, as the father is superior to the son, and the master to the pupil, the Panchen Lama at Tashi Lunpo might reasonably have ranked above the Dalai Lama at Lhassa. But, as Avalokitesvara is the special patron of the Lamistic Church in Tibet, his incarnation at Lhassa is practically a more important personage than the incarnated Dhyani-Buddha at Tashi Lunpo. Some hold that the Panchen Lama is only a re-incarnation of Tsong Khapa, who was identified with Manju-sri.

It is said that the Dalai Lamn exercises secular authority over about four millions of people, including monks; although in the present day political power has to a great extent been taken from him by the Chinese Government, which has two permanent Commissioners or Residents (called Ampas) at Lhassa, and sometimes sends a special Envoy (Kin-Tehe)!

The real fact is, that since mere children, who are too young to have received any education, are elevated to the Grand Lamaship, and most of them either die

^{&#}x27;According to the Times Correspondent Lhassa stands in no closer relation to China than the least dependent of Indian States to the British Empire; history, however, proves that China can, when her interests demand it, assume a very different position. The military power of China is not great, but that of the Lama Government is nearly wil. The expulsion of the messionaries Hue and Galact proves this.

naturally or are made to die before they have gained any knowledge, the re-incarnated Lamas are generally unfit to govern, and in monasteries which have an Avatara Grand Lama, an elected chief Lama acts as regent or administrator of affairs, while the incarnated Buddha is supposed to lose himself in sublime heights of meditation and receive divine homage 1. This elected Regent also governs during the intervals of the incarnations, and at Lhassa he is the real Head and most powerful Tibetan official. He is called Nomun-khan or Nomin-khan (or No min han).

The manner in which the Avatāra doctrine is carried into practice has varied at different times.

It is alleged that formerly the departing Lama, before he transferred himself to another body, was in the habit of revealing where and in what family he would be re-incarnated. Or occasionally it happened that children of two or three years of age called out suddenly, as if impelled by some spiritual influence, 'I am a living Buddha, I am the chief Lama of such and such a monastery.'

Or more commonly the sacred books were consulted; or the official soothsayers gave their opinion.

But the usual rule was that at the death of the Dalai Lāma the interpretation of the traditions and oracles about his re-birth and the duty of discovering the family in which he was to appear were committed to the Panchen Lāma. When the Panchen Lāma him-

¹ It is said by some that even his excreta are held ascred. They are dried, ground to powder, and either swallowed or made use of as charms. Others deny this.

self died, the Dalai Grand Lama did the same service for him.

It was only natural that the holy land of Tibet, and especially the holy city of Lhāssa, should have been most fruitful in re-incarnations, and should even have

supplied foreign countries with them.

When Messrs. Hue and Gabet were travelling in Mongolia they were about to pass a certain Lāmistic convent without stopping, when a Lāma came out and invited them to enter, that they might have an opportunity of paying adoration to the saint enthroned within. 'Our saint,' he said, 'is not a mere man. In our small convent we have the happiness to possess a living Buddha! Two years ago he deigned to descend from the holy mountains of Tibet, and he is now seven years old.' These living Buddhas, according to M. Hue, are very numerous. Sometimes a clever Lama builds a small temple and attracts a few disciples. Then by degrees his reputation increases. Other Lāmas build their cells near the temple, and bring it into fashion, and proclaim him to be a living Buddha,

It is said, indeed, that some spiritual Heads of the Hierarchy in Lhāssa have contrived to instal their illegitimate children in the Headship of distant Lāmaseries, so that occasionally the supposed living Buddha is really the son of some Tibetan Grand Lāma.

In the present day the Emperor of China exercises so great an influence in the nomination of both the Dalai and Panchen Lamas, that the co-operation of the Lamistic priesthood has become little more than a form. Still the form is gone through, and the following description (chiefly resting on the authority of Koeppen and Huc) may give some idea of the whole process.

When the Dalai Lama dies, or rather when his soul—which consists of a portion of the essence of Avalo-kitesvara—has east off one body with the object of entering another, the names of all the male children born at the time of his death in Tibet have to be sent in to the great monastery of La brang at Lhassa, and those parents who have reason to suspect that their children are re-incarnations, are obliged to notify the fact.

A true decision cannot be arrived at until three children have been found, or rather (as is practically the case) until three candidates have been set up for election who are accepted by the Chinese Government or its representatives.

The first stage in the process of election is to write the names of these three children on lots, and place them in a golden urn. Then the Khutuktus assemble together in solemn conclave. For six days they remain in retirement. During all that period they are supposed to fast and to be engaged in repeating prayers. On the seventh day, the leading Khutuktu draws a lot, and the infant or child whose name comes out is proclaimed Dalai Lāma. The Panchen Lāma and the representatives of China must be present at the time 1.

In the Times newspaper for June 15, 1888, is the following:

How the Grand Lama of Tibet is appointed.—A recent number of the
Peking Gazette contains a memorial to the Emperor from the Chinese
Resident at Lhassa, stating that a certain Tibetan official called the
Nominhan (see p. 286 of this volume) had reported to him that he
had found three young boys of remarkable intelligence and acute-

In a similar manner, the Panchen Lämas, Khutuktus, and ordinary Avatāra Lāmas are elected.

The Mongolian mode of election is thus described by M. Huc. (The quotation is not literal, and is abridged.)

The election and enthronization of the living Buddhas is extremely curious. When a Grand Lama is 'gone away,' that is to say, is dead, the event is by no means made a matter of mourning in the convent. There are no tears or regrets, for every one knows that the living Buddha will soon re-appear. The apparent death is only the commencement of a new existence, a new link added to a boundless and uninterrupted chain of successive lives—a simple palingenesia. White the saint is in the chrysalis state, his disciples are in the greatest anxiety, and the grand point is to discover the place where their master has returned to life. If a trainbow appears, they consider it as a sign sent to them from their Grand Lama, to assist them in their researches.

Every one then goes to prayers, and especially the convent which has been widowed of its Buddha is incessant in its testings and orisons, and a troop of chosen Läntes set out to consult the Churchun or diviner of hidden things. They relate to him the time, place, and circumstances under which the rainbow has appeared; and he then, after reciting some prayers, opens his books of divination, and at length pronounces his oracle; while the Tartars who have come to consult him, listen on their knees with the most profound devotion.

'Your Grand Lama,' they say, 'has returned to life in Tibet-at.

ness, into one of whom beyond a doubt the spirit of the late Lama of Tashi Lunpo (one of the two supreme pontiffs) had passed. Thereupon the Chinese Resident sent a report to Peking, asking that the ceremony of selecting one of these three children might be permitted. By the time the authority arrived, the Nominhan with the children had reached Lhassa, and a lacky day was abosen for the ceremony. The golden vase in which the lots are cast was brought and placed before the image of the Emperor. Prayers were chanted before the assembled Lamas, and the children were conducted into the presence of the Resident and Tibetan authorities in order that their intelligence and difference from other persons might be tested.

such a place-in such a family; ' and when the poor Mongols have heard the oracle, they return full of joy to their convent, to ansumes the happy news. Sometimes the living Buddha aumounces himself, at an ago when other infinis council articulate a word; but whether his place of alode be found by means of the minbow, or by this spontaneous receletion, it is always at a considerable distance, and in a country difficult of series. A grand procession is then made, headed by the bing, or the greatest man in the country, to fetch the young living Buddha. The Mongols often go through incredible fatigue and hardships, traverse frightful descrts, and sometimes, after being plundered by robbers, stripped of everything, and compelled to return, set out again with undiminished courage. When the living Boddla is found, however, he is not saluted Grand Laum without a previous examination. Doubtless, the simple Mongols are in this matter often the dupes of those who have an interest in making a Grand Lama of the baby. The title of the living Buddha laving been confirmed, he is conducted in triumph to the monastery of which he is to become Grand Lama; and as he passes along, the Tartars come in great troops and prostrate themselves before him, and bring him offerings. As som as he arrives at the convent, he is placed on the altar, and every Tartar, from the highest to the lowest in the land, bown down before this child. There is no Tartar kingdom which does not possess one of these living Buddlas; but there is always another Grand Lama, chosen among the members of the royal family, with whom the real government of the convent rests. The famous maxim 'Le roi règne et ne gouverne pas' has been of old application among the Tartars. [See note p. 306 of these Lectures]

It should be noted that the Lämistic community like to keep up the fiction of these re-incarnations; and therefore they pretend to ascertain the genuineness of every re-birth by clear signs. Hence before a re-born saint is installed, his identity is established by his passing a kind of examination before a solemn assembly, thousands of witnesses being present.

Some of the books, clothes, and sacred or secular utensils which the dead Lama was in the habit of

using, are brought and mixed with others. The child is then asked to pick out the true ones, or he has to answer questions as to the events in his previous state of existence. If the replies are satisfactory, he is installed as the re-born Lama amid great rejoicings.

Keeppen asserts that no positive information as to the relationship between the Dalai and Panchen Lämss is forthcoming. Some maintain that both hierarchical systems developed simultaneously. Some say that the Panchen Läma of Tashi Lunpo was the first Grand Avatara Lama, while others hold that the elevation of the Panchen Lämas took place later, and only resulted from the increase in importance of the Tashi Lunpo monastery in which they reside (p. 284).

The Dulai Lamas may be enumerated as follow :-

The first is said to have been Gedun grub pa (otherwise pronounced Gedun dubpa). Probably he was the nephew and chief pupil of the Reformer Tsong Khapa. t was he who founded the monastery of Tashi Lunpo in 1445, and he is by some therefore called the first Lāma of that monastery. His birth is supposed to have occurred in 1391 or 1419, and his death in 1473 or 1476. Then he was born again after ten months as Gedun GyamThso (or Gedun Yamtso), the second Grand Lāma, who is held by some to have been the real founder of the Avatara system of perpetual succession by reincarnations. He filled the Dalai Lāma Chair from 1474 or 1476 to 1540 or 1542.

The third embediment took place in 1543, and bore the name Sod nam GyamThso (or Sod nam Yamtso), 'sea of virtue.' He was the first who really took the half Mongolian title of Dalai Lanna. Moreover, he laboured hard to spread Buddhism among the Mongolians, and founded the first Great Lanna's Chair in Mongolia.

In his fourth re-birth, the Dalai Lama took the name of You Jan Yam Theo, 'ocean of merit,' and lived up to his 14th year (until 1602) in Mongolia, when he moved to Lhassa.

The fifth Dalai Lāma was the great Navang Lobsang (strictly Ngag dBang bLo bSang), 'wise speaker or eloquent sage,' who is the most celebrated of all. According to some be was the first real Dalai Lama, those who preceded him being merely supreme Lāmas of the Yellow school. His career lasted from 1617 to 1682. He was a kind of Lāmistic Innocent. But his long minority led to political disturbances. In the end, Navang Lobsang overcame all difficulties, and as a sign that the power of a king of Tibet had been made over to him, built on one summit of the triple hill Potala, where once the royal castle had stood, that palatial mouastery—that wonderful Lāmistic Vatican—in which he still resides in his continual re-incarnations (see p. 330).

Indeed the successors of Tsong Khapa had good reason to be satisfied with their position at that time. They had overshadowed the Red sect, or reduced it to comparative unimportance. They had won over Mongolia, which greatly aided them in their struggle for dominion. Monastery after monastery arose there. The sacred books had been translated into the Mongolian language, and thousands of Mongolians came every

year with rich presents to worship the re-born Lamas at Lhassa, or sent their sons there for education.

When Navang Lobsang died, his death was concealed by the Regent, and great intriguing followed. In the interregnum two Dalai Lamas were successively set up and deposed. These are not reckoned in the list of legitimate Dalai Lamas.

Then a child was chosen, who had all the signs of being called to the Lamaship. This was Lobsang Kalsang Yamthso; he is reckoned the sixth Dalai Lama. He died in 1758, after gaining some repute as a writer.

The seventh Dalai Lama was Lobsang Jampal (or Clampal) Yamthso, who is believed to have died in either r8o5 or 18o8.

The next was Lungtog YamThso, who died a mere infant in 1815 or 1816. He had three child-successors, who were all killed as minors by the acting Regent. The last child was made away with in 1837.

If these three children are reckoned, Ge Mure YamThso must be regarded as the eleventh Dalai Lāma. He died in 1855. The twelfth was born in 1856, and seems to have lived till 1874.

The discovery of the present Dalai Lama is thus related by Sarat Chandra Das.

After the death of an incarnate Linna, his soul is said ordinarily to remain in the spiritual world for a space (called Fardo) of at lead forty-nine days. In 1875, one year after the demise of the late Dalai Linna, Thirde Gyastsha, the Regency and the College of Cardinals at Lineau consulted the celebrated ocacle of Nachung Chinohypung about the re-appearance of the Dalai. The oracle declared that the Grand Linna-could only be discovered by a moult of the purest morals. Accordingly the Skar-tse Klampo of the Galdan monastery, who was well

known for his virtuous character and his profound knowledge of the sacred books, proceeded to Chloikhor Gya, where he sat in profound meditation for full seven days. On the night of the last day he saw a vision, in which a voice from heaven directed him to go and see a miraculous sight in the Ya-tsho lake of Chhoikhor Gya. Awaking from his sleep, the Khanpo went to the lake, where in the crystal-like water he saw the inextrate Grand Librar sitting in the lay of his mother and encosed by his father. The boose with its farniture was also visible. All on a solden this mirage-like appearance disappeared, and be heard the neighing of a horse. So much of his dream being fulfilled, he proceeded on the horse to the province of Kong-po, and, on the way, be happened to call at the house of a rich and respectable family of the district of Tag-po. Here he recognized the house, the family, and the child he had seen in the lake, and at once declared that the real end of his journey was obtained. On his report the Government. officials and the College of Cardinals, headed by the Regent, visited Tag-po and escorted the infaut with its parents in great pomp to the palace of Rigyal near Lhassa. The princely child was only one year old when he was discovered. He is now ten, and hears the name of Nag-wang Lo-ssang Thub-day Gya-tsho, 'the lord of speech, and powerful scean of wisdom.' (This extract is abbreviated.)

A similar list of the Panchen Lümas who have reigned at Tashi Lunpo has not been given. When Mr. Sarat Chandra Däs was there in August, 1882, the then Panchen Läma died from grief (so it was said) because he had not been ullowed to consecrate the young Dalai Läma, according to previous custom.

The next important Lāma in great Tibet (after the Dalai and Panchen Lāmas) is the Head Lāma or Khanpo of the monastery of Guldan (Gahdan)—the oldest monastery of the Yellow sect, founded in the year 1409 by the reformer Tsong Khapa (see p. 278), who was the first Abbot. It once had 8,000 inhabitants. The body of Tsong Khapa is said to be there visible, preserved from corruption and miraculously poised in the air.

Prints of his hands and feet and his bed are also shown to pilgrims (see p. 441).

But the Grand Lāma of the Yellow school who comes next in rank to the Dalai and Panchen Lāmas is the Head of the monastery of Kurun (also written Kuren) or Urga, in the land of the Khalkhas in Mongolia. His perpetual re-incarnation began in the sixteenth century. He is generally called by the Mongolians Maidari or Gegen Khutuktu, but his proper title is Je Tsun Dampa (or Tampa) Tāranātha. A Tāranātha Lāma (born in 1575) completed a work on Buddhism in the Tibetan language in 1608 (Markham's Tibet, xlviii).

There is also a celebrated Avadāra Lāton at Kuku khotun in Tartary who is a perpetual re-incarnation of Manju-šrī Khutuktu.

Indeed Mongolia is a kind of paradise in which the monks of Lämism enjoy perennial bliss, for the Mongolians are simpler and more full of faith than the Tibetans.

Another Grand Lama is the Dharma-raja of Bhutan (p. 297), and another Great Lama is at Peking in China (see p. 299).

As to Ladāk (the capital of which is Le or Leh), this is the most western part of Tibet that has adopted Lāmism. Ašoka's mission penetrated to Ladāk, so that the whole land in king Kanishka's time (that is, in the first century) was Buddhistic. Moreover, the Buddhist religion (both Red sect and Yellow) has maintained itself there until now, while in the neighbouring countries of Kashmir, Kafirstān, the Panjāb, etc., it has been displaced by Brāhmanism, Islām, and Śāktism, etc. We have little knowledge of the ancient history of Ladāk. It has a large and ancient monastery at Lāma Yurru, near the Indus—in which is an onormous image of the clovenheaded Avalokitešvara—another at Hemis, and another at Hade. (See Conningham's 'Ladāk,' Mrs. Bridges' 'Travels,' and p. 433 of this volume.)

In Taogut, all round the blue lake (Kuku Nur), Lamistic Buddhism has been the established religion since the end of the ninth century. It seems to have taken a great start upwards in the succeeding four centuries, for it was in the province of Amdo, as before mentioned (p. 277), that the great Reformer commenced his career. In the North-eastern corner close to China is the Lämasery of Kunbum (Kumbum), where Tsong Khapa was born, When his reputation increased, Lamas from all parts made pilgrimages there. Sarat Chandra Das states that it is inhabited by 9,000 Lamas of the Yellow sect. Koeppen says that it has a University with four Faculties, and an important printing-press, and that at the head of it is an incornated living Buddha. The Lamas from Amdo are said by Koeppen to be more highly-gifted, intelligent, learned, and religious than the monks of other monasteries. They are intrusted in Lhassa with the most important offices, and are employed in the education of the infant representatives of Buddla. Ando is still almost a terra incognita.

Passing on to Nepāl—this country probably adopted Buddhism before the beginning of the Christian era. It is said that Ašoka's missionaries found their way there; but there is no proof that Buddhism really flourished in Nepāl till the seventh century, and even then it never existed except in conjunction with Brāhmanism. It is probable that Buddhist monasteries and Brahmanical temples always adjoined each other. Indeed since the immigration of the Hindus into Nepul, and especially since the invasion of the Gorkhas, there have always been two nationalities, two huguages, two literatures, two religions in contact with each other.

In recent times Brähmanism has gained the predominance as the State-religion, and Buddhism has degenerated, though it is everywhere tolerated.

It is a question whether the spiritual supremacy of the Tibetan Grand Lama has ever been acknowledged in Nepal proper. But, according to some, the Dalai Lama formerly had a legate or representative in the largest and oldest Buddhistic temple of Kladmanduthe temple of Syavambhu-nath, who is here at once Adi-Buddha and Siva. The Dalai Lama also claimed the ownership of this temple, which, he maintained, had been dependent on him from the earliest times, But it is certain that, even if the Tibetan Legate ever possessed the authority arrogated by him, he was compelled by the Gorkhas to abandon his claims. Nevertheless the Tibetan tribes now in Nepāl still adhere to Buddhism. The same may be said of the Newars, who are the original possessors of the great valley of Nepāl. They profess a kind of Buddhism, though they reject the Lamas, and lave priests of their own, whom they call Bandya (see note p. 263).

With regard to Bhutān (capital town Punakha) it is said to have become Buddhist about 350 years ago. Its spiritual ruler and incarnated saint is called Dharmarāja (or Lāma Rinpoche). He belongs to the Red-cap school, and calls himself Chief of all the monks of the Dugpa sect. His subordination to the Dahi Lama is little more than nominal. The temporal Governor is called Depa-raja (Deb-raja).

The following titles engraved on the Dharma-raja's seal of office will give some idea of his pretensions:—

'I am the Chief of the realm. Defender of the Faith,
Equal to Sarasvatī in learning. Chief of all the
Buddhas. Head-expounder of the Śāstras. Caster
out of devils. Most learned in the holy Laws. An
Avatār of God. Absolver of sins. Head of the best
of all religions.' (See Dr. Wright's Nepāl.)

It is said that there are about 10,000 monks, and about 50,000 Buddhist lay families in Bhutan. Many of the monks do not live in monasteries, but hold offices under the Government.

Next, as to Sikkim—of which Dărjiling, now the Sanitarium of the Bengal Government, once formed a part. This is a small boundary country between Bhutan and Nepāl. It seems to have adopted Buddhism about the same time as Bhutan, or perhaps a century earlier. The Lamas there belong to the Dugpa Red sect (p. 268). The aborigines, called Lopehas, though they venerate the Lamas, are really only half Buddhists; and their priests, called Bijna (Bhikshu?) beggars, are half devil-exoreists. The oldest temple is that of Pemyangehi (see p. 432). Next come the important monasteries of Tassiding, Changachelling, Raklang, and Tamlung (one residence of the Rāja, the other being at Chumbi in Tibetan territory). There is also one near Dārjīling.

We ought finally to advert briefly to China and Japan. It is noteworthy that next in rank to the Mongolian Grand Lama comes the Head Lama of the great monastery of Peking, who represents Lamism in that country. Koeppen informs us that in China, for at least six centuries, there have been two classes of Buddhist monks side by side, viz. first, the Ho-shang (p. 92) or Chinese monks, who had become naturalized in the year 65 after Christ; and, secondly, the Lamas. These two schools are not distinguished so much by difference of doctrine and discipline, as by the position they hold in the empire. The Ho-shang are little more than separate fraternities of monks, tolerated by the State, They have no hierarchical organization, and no bishops, but each monastery stands independently, and has no superior except its own Abbot,

On the other hand, the Lamas constitute in China a public organized society, acknowledged to a great extent and supported by the State, and possessing certain spiritual and temporal rights over particular districts. It is said, however, that the Lamistic hierarchy in China is subordinated to the Government Committee for foreign affairs.

It is further stated that three great monasteries situated in or near Peking are exclusively reserved for the Tibetan and Mongolian Lamas, and that of the three Lamas who preside over these the chief is the before-mentioned representative of Lamism at the Government Court (p. 295).

In China proper, within the eighteen Provinces, the number of the Lama monasteries is said to be small, and these are generally to be found in the Provinces nearest to Tibet and Mongolia.

As to Japan, it does not appear that the Lämistic form of Buddhism las penetrated into that country. In all probability Buddhist writings were introduced there from Corea about A.D. 552 , but it is certain that Buddhism did not gain much ascendency in Japan till the ninth century, and even then was not able to displace cither Shintoism or Confucianism and the worship of deceased ancestors. In fact, Buddhism commended itself to the Japanese, as it did to the people of every country to which it spread by its receptivity; and just as in Tibet, it adapted itself to the Shamanism which previously existed there, so in Japan it adopted Shintoism, and turned some of the Shinto deities into Bodhisattvas. Then followed the inevitable splitting up of Japanese Buddhism, as of all other religious systems, through disagreements and divisions; and in the thirteenth century various sects were developed. As to these, we need only note that while some sects adopt the early Atheistic and Agnostic form of Buddhism with its doctrine of Nirvaga, the principal sect called Shin is decidedly Theistic.

Sir Edward Reed, in his work on Japan (i. 84), informs us that he met a learned priest named Akamatz in company with the Archbishop of the Western sect. This priest's account of the Shin sect coincides with the information which I myself received from a learned Japanese priest at Oxford.

Article on Japan in the last edition of the Encyclopædia Britannica.

It appears that the members of this sect believe in Amitabha Buddha as a Being of infinite light and goodness, their chief prayer-formula being Namo Amida (for Amita) Butsu, 'Reverence to the Infinite Buddha,' that is to Amitabha'. They place faith in the love and mercy of Amita Buddha, or rather in his readiness to receive them into his paradise called Sukhāvati (see pp. 183, 204). At the same time they are required to lead moral lives, and salvation is practically only obtainable through their own works. The monks are allowed to marry and to cat flesh and fish.

Their dectrines have many points of contact with Christianity. The late Mr. Kasawara of Japan, who belonged to this sect and was highly esteemed by all who knew him in England, said to a Christian friend that 'it gave him great pleasure to meet in the Gospels many coincidences with the aspirations of his own Buddhist faith, and that he greatly admired the idea of the Christ as the concrete expression of the Inscrutable Essence in its twofold form of infinite Light and infinite Love.'

Another well known sect called Nichiren was founded by a celebrated student and teacher named Nichiren. The Nichirens have been called the Methodists or Revivalists of Japan. They are very strict, and esteem the book of the Law as the highest object of veneration. Their prayer is to the following effect;—'Glory be to the salvation-bringing book of the Law!'

According to one of my Japanese informants Butsu should be Bhutsu, and the formula should be translated, 'Reverence to the Infinite Being.'

Doubtless Japan once had a peculiar hierarchical organization of its own, which crumbled away not long ago, and need not now be described. Even in the present day each sect may have its leader or Head, who exercises a kind of episcopol superintendence like that of a Bishop or Archbishop.

We have already mentioned (p. 200) that a female form of Avalokitesvara is worshipped in Japan and China as the goddess of mercy. Her name in China is Kwan-yin, and in Japan Kwan-non; and she is represented as possessing any number of eyes and arms up to a thousand, and sometimes three faces.

In concluding this Lecture we may note that Russia is the only European country to which Lämistic Buddhism has hitherto penetrated. There are adherents of the Dalai Läma among the Burat (Buryad) tribes on the Baikal Lake, and among the Kalmuks on the Volga. Koeppen informs us that the chief temple and monastery of the former is on a lake thirty versts to the North-west of Selenginsk, and that the presiding monk is called the Khanpo Pandita and claims to be an Avatāra Lama. The Chief Läma of the latter is said to be appointed by the Russian Government.

Hierarchical Buddhism naturally leads us on to the subject of ceremonial Buddhism, which must be reserved for the next Lecture.

LECTURE XII.

Ceremonial and Ritualistic Buddhism.

Having in the last Lecture described the manner in which hierarchical systems were established in various Buddhist countries, we are naturally led on to consider in the present Lecture the development of what may be called 'Ceremonial and Ritualistic Buddhism'; for no hierarchy can maintain its hold over the masses anywhere without the aid of outward manifestations, rites, ceremonics, and appeals to the senses.

Early Buddhism was, as we have already shown, vehemently opposed, not only to all sacerdotalism, but to all merely external ritualistic and ceremonial observances. It swept away the whole Vedic ritual—the whole sacrificial system of the Brahmans; it rejected all penitential austerities and painful bodily mortifications; it denounced every form of superstition, idolatry, and priestcraft; it maintained that to lead a life of purity and high morality was better than all the forms and ceremonies of religion.

But the very vehemence of its opposition tended to bring about a reaction. Indeed, the history of all religious movements proves that the teaching of extreme doctrines of any kind is almost invariably followed by a Nemesis, though the teacher of them may himself not live to see it. At the outset a reformer of the ultra type is sure to gain adherents by his enthusiasm and earnestness, as well as by his ardour in condemning abuses, but a time is almost certain to come when his followers will themselves lapse into the identical practices which it was his great object to denounce.

At all events, it is well known that in the present day the Buddha's followers have invented a mass of complicated forms and ceremonies wholly out of keeping and incompatible with the purer and simpler system which he himself sought to establish.

In point of fact the Buddha in promulgating his creed did not take into account the impossibility of eradicating certain deep-seated cravings inherent in human nature, which every religion aiming at general acceptance must reckon with and satisfy:—for example, the craving for the visible, for the audible, and for the tangible; the craving for some concrete impersonation of infinite goodness and power; the craving for freedom from personal responsibility and for its transference to a priesthood; the craving for deliverance from the pains and penalties of sin; the craving for an infallible guide in all matters of faith and doctrine.

Later Buddhism, on the other hand, set itself to satisfy these longings—these ineradicable yearnings of the human heart. It felt that it could not establish itself on a firm foundation without hierarchical organizations, and it could not maintain these without external forms, ceremonies, and ritual observances. It therefore turned the simple monastic brotherhood into

a caste of priests, and it attracted and gratified the senses of unthinking multitudes by a great variety of religious rites, usages, and symbols, many of which are quite unique, while nearly all are accompanied with superstitious practices implying an amount of ignorance and credulity on the part of the people, quite unparalleled.

This corrupt phase of Buddhism is especially dominant in Tibet, Mongolia, and Northern countries. In real truth it might be affirmed of every Buddhist in Tibet that religious superstition colours all his thoughts, words, and deeds. It is interwoven with the tissue of his daily life, and is part and parcel of his worldly occupations. It is equally part and parcel of the national life, and enters into every Government transaction. Furthermore, it is fostered by art and science, and ministered to by painting and sculpture. Nay, it is stamped on Nature itself. It is impressed on rocks, stones, and trees. It finds its way to the summit of snow-clad mountains, to the recesses of inaccessible ravines, and to the extremities of remote deserts.

To crown all, it might be affirmed that in Tibet religious superstition goes on by machinery, quite independently of the human will. It is kept in continual activity, night and day, by the flapping of flags, and by the revolution of innumerable wheels and cylinders, which are acted on by the forces of wind and water.

It may easily, therefore, be imagined that to give an exhaustive account of all the ceremonies and superstitions practices of Tibetan, or, as it may be called, Lāmistic Buddhism, would require the command of 306

unlimited time. They have been treated of by Koeppen in his second volume, and by Schlagintweit in his 'Buddhism in Tibet,' and have been illustrated by descriptions in Hue's travels', in Markham's account of the travels of Bogle, Turner, and Manning, and in the recent narrative of Mr. Sarat Chandra Dās' Journey. All I can attempt is to give a concise account of some of the chief Lāmistic observances, taking the books just named as my authorities, and adding whatever information I have been able to collect myself from other sources, while travelling in Buddhist countries.

We must, however, guard against the notion that ceremonial observances are confined to Tibet and Northern regions. They are now more or less prevalent in Burma and Ceylon, which have adopted much of the Maha-yana system, and to these countries we must give our first attention. Even the ceremonies now observed at the reception of novices and monks in Burma and Ceylon are less simple than the early admission-forms already described (pp. 77, 78, 256).

Of course every novice has to cut off his hair. He does this to prove that he is ready to give up the most beautiful and highly-prized of all his personal ornaments for the sake of a religious life.

But other forms have to be gone through in the present day, and I now give an account of the admissionceremony of a novice—as performed in Burma—based

¹ My quotations from the travels of Hue and Galet have been made from excellent translations by Mrs. Percy Sinnet and W. Hazlitt, but I have been compelled to abbreviate the extracts.

on the description in the third chapter of Shway You's interesting volume called 'the Borman'.'

It is well understood that, according to the strict letter of the law (p. 77 of the present Lectures), a boy ought not to be admitted to the novitiate until he is fifteen, but in modern times, the admission often takes place at twelve or even eleven years of age, the belief being that until a boy is so admitted he cannot claim to be more than an animal.

The first point to be noted is that his admission involves the dropping of his secular name, and the receiving of another title to mark that it is then possible for him to escape the suffering of life. As he is sure to have been a scholar or pupil in a monastery (Kyoung) before applying to be admitted as a novice, he has learnt beforehand all the forms of worship and much that will be required of him during his monastic life; for instance, that he is to address senior monks in a particular manner and to wait upon them respectfully; that he is to walk through the streets keeping his eyes fixed on the ground, without gazing about, even if he have to pass a pageant or attractive spectacle of any kind; that he is to wear his garments in the prescribed fashion; that he is to eat with moderation and dignity.

On the day appointed for the induction-ceremony, the young neophyte dresses in his gayest clothes, and mounted on a pony, passes at a foot's pace through the town or village. A band of music goes before him, and all his friends dressed in their best garments.

[!] Published by Messes. Macmillan & Co. Shway You is an assumed name. The nathor's real name is Scott.

follow in a crowd, the young men dancing and singing, the girls smiling and laughing. Thus he proceeds in procession to the houses of his relations, to bid them farewell. Of course the introductory observance is intended as a kind of dramatic imitation of Gautama Buddha's celebrated abandonment of his own family and worldly associates, called the Mahabhinishkramana. 'the great going forth from home' (see p. 28 of this volume). When the round of visits is finished, the would be novice turns back with all his companions to his parents' house. There he finds a large number of persons assembled, and among them the Head of the monastery, with several of his brother monks. These are seated on a raised dais in front of which are the offerings intended for presentation to them, consisting of fruit, cooked food, yellow cloth, etc.

The monks ('Talapoins') seated in a row, carefully hold up their large fan-like screens to shut out the female portion of the assemblage from their view. Portions of the Vinaya (p. 62 of this volume) are then recited, after which the would-be novice is made to throw off all his fine clothes and bind a piece of white cloth round his loins. Then his hair is cut off close, and his head is carefully shaved and washed. Next he is taken to a bath, and after immersion in pure water, is brought once more, partially clothed, before the assembled monks. Prostrating himself three times before them, he raises his hands in reverence, and, using the regular Pali form of words, asks to be admitted to the holy brotherhood. Upon that the Head of the monastery presents him with the yellow

monastic garments. These are duly put on, and the mendicant's bowl is hung round his neck. The ceremony concludes by the formal announcement of his having become a member of the monastery.

The present admission-ceremony in Ceylon appears to be of a simpler character. In fact it differs little from the aucient form. Those boys who are destined for the novitiate usually begin their connexion with the monastery to which they intend to belong by first becoming pupils in the monastery-school. The devotion of the monkhood to the education of mere boys was perhaps one of the best results of the progress and development of Buddhism. In monusteries, all boys may learn to read and write'. There also they gain some experience of monastic duties and requirements, so that when the time comes for any pupil to enter the novitiate, his preparedness is taken for granted. He merely makes known his intention to a superior or senior monk. Then having shaved his head, and undergone the ceremony of bathing, the applicant, who has furnished himself with the proper yellow robes, presents them to the superior monk, and requests to be allowed to receive them again that he may become a novice. Next, on his reciting the threerefuge formulary, and the ten prohibitions, he is permitted to take back the monkish garments and to put them on. He is then formally admitted, and his admission assounced to the other members of the monastery

¹ I was told when in Ceylon, that many monasteries in the Kattdynn provinces had misappropriated their endowments and dropped the schools, which they were bound to keep up.

310

(Hardy's Eastern Monachism, p. 23). It may be noted that the monkish garments do not include a headcovering as in Northern countries.

As to the ceremony of admission to the full monkbood, it differs so little from the ancient rite (described at p. 79), that no further description need here be given.

With regard to the religious services performed in the monastic institutions of modern times, they are, of course, a great advance on the simple formularies used in early days, before the establishment and organization of large monasteries.

The earlier and purer Buddhism, as we have seen, had only one religious formula, and that was a simple expression of veneration for the three jewels—the Buddha, his Law, and his Order of Monks (p. 78).

Any form of worship was altogether out of place, if not a mere mockery, when there was no supreme Being to worship; when the Buddha himself, who never claimed to be more than a perfected man, had passed away into non-existence, and when all that he left behind was the great ideal of his own memory, to be venerated and imitated.

When, however, monastic establishments were organized and the doctrine became developed, a great development of worship took place.

To illustrate this I submit a description of daily life in a Burmese monastery, based on the information given by Shway Yoe (p. 507), and often using his words,

It appears that every monastic community in Burma is roused a little before daylight by the sound of a big

bell, beaten with a wooden mallet. Each monk has then to rise, rinse out his mouth, wash his hands and face, arrange his dress (the same in which he has slept all night) and recite a few formularies, among which is one to the following effect :- How great a favour has the Lord Buddha bestowed upon me in manifesting to me his law, through the observance of which I may escape the purgatorial penalties of hell and secure salvation!' All the members of the fraternity then station themselves before the image of the Buddha, with the Abbot at their head, and the rest of the brotherhood, full monks, moviees and scholars, according to their order. This done, they proceed to intone the morning service. At its conclusion each stands before the Head of the monastery, and pledges bimself to observe during the day all the rules and precepts incombent upon him. They then separate—the pupils and novices to sweep the floor of the monastery, bring drinking water, filter it, etc., the more advanced novices and full monks to tend the sacred trees; the elders to meditate in solitude on the miseries of life, such meditation being beyond all other actions meritorious. Some gather flowers and offer them before the relic-shrine (Dagaba).

Then comes a repast, preceded by a grace to the effect that the food is eaten to satisfy bodily wants, not to please the appetite; that garments are used to cover nakedness, not for vanity; that health is desired to give strength for the performance of religious worship and meditation. After the meal, all devote themselves to study or to teaching. Then arranging themselves in file, they set out with the Abbot at their

head to receive their food (not beg). Silently they move on through the streets, fixing their eyes steadily on the ground six feet before them, meditating on the vanity and mutability of all things, and only halting when a layman emerges from some door to pour his contribution of rice or fruit or vegetables into their alms-bowls. The gift received, not a word or a

syllable of thanks is uttered; for is it not the receivers

who confer the favour and not the givers? In this way they circle back to the monastery.

On their return from their perambulation a portion of the food is offered to the Buddha, and then all proceed to eat the remainder, consisting perhaps of cooked rice, boiled peas, fish, cocoa-nut cakes, cucumbers, or even curried flesh and fowl, usually wrapped separately in plantain-leaves. Next the bowls are washed, and a few hymns are chanted before the Buddha's image. During the succeeding hour the boy-scholars are allowed to play about, while the monks pass their time in conversation, and the Abbot receives people who come to pay their respects. All visitors prostrate themselves before him three times, once for the Buddha, once for the Law, and once for the Monkhood. The Albot in return says: 'May the supporter' (so he calls all laymen; compare p. Sg), 'as a roward for merit, be freed from the three calamities (of war, pestilence, and famine)!' At about half-past cleven the last regular meal of the day is eaten. Monks are forbidden to eat after noon. When the mid-day meal is over, all return to work. Some undertake the teaching of the boyscholars. Others read the texts of the Tri-pitaka with

their commentaries, or superintend the writers who are copying manuscripts. Some of the older members of the monastery talk with the idlers, who are to be found lounging about the precincts, and some sink into deep

meditation, which probably ends in deep sleep.

Yet this profound meditation is believed to be all important, for is it not the path to Arhatship, to Nirvana, and to the acquisition of supernatural faculties (see p. 245)? Other monks tell the beads of their resaries and repeat the prescribed formularies, such as: 'All is changeful, all is sorrowful, all is unreal,' followed by invocations to the three holies (see p. 175). Between three and four o'clock the lessons are finished, and the scholars perform any domestic duties required in the momestery. This is the chief return for the teaching they receive. Then most of the pupils go to their own homes for dinner. As to the youthful novices or junior monks, these are all obliged to fast like the full monks. Many of them go out with some of the senior monks for a solemn walk. Then at sunset the far-reaching notes of the bell summon the walkers back to the monastery. All must be within the walls before the sun goes down. The day's duties now draw to a close. The boy-pupils are made to repeat all they have learned during the day, and some of the Pali rituals are chanted with spasmodic energy.' At half-past eight or nine there are further recitations before the image of the Buddha. All assemble, as in the morning, and together intone the hymns. When the last sound of the chant has died away, one of the novices stands up and proclaims the hour, day of the week, day of the month,

and number of the year. Then all bow before the Buddha's image, and thrice before the Head of the monastery, and retire to rest (see Shway Yoe's 'Burman').

It is noteworthy that severe asceticism and painful austerities—as practised among the Hindus from the earliest times up to the present day (described at pp. 228-230 of this volume)-form no part of the duties of Buddhist monks; for Buddhism has never sanctioned bodily torture, as Brāhmanism has done.

We now pass on to a description of the observances usual during the period of Vassa (see pp. 82-84).

Mr. Dickson has given us some valuable notes on the method of keeping this season in Ceylon, and I venture to found a short narrative on the information he has communicated 1.

It seems that the villagers of Ceylon esteem it a privilege and a work of great merit to send for one or two monk-priests from a monastery and to minister to their wants, as well as listen to their preaching and recitations during Vassa,

The season begins on the fifteenth day of the eighth month; that is, on the day of full moon in the month Ashādha (June, July). Sometimes two or three villages join in inviting a monk-priest to live with them for the whole three months. They prepare a chamber for his sleeping accommodation, a room for his meals, a temporary chapel for the reception of the Buddha's image, of the relic-casket and of the sacred books, and a place in which he can recite the law and explain it.

Notes illustrative of Buddhism as the daily religion of the Buddhists of Ceylon, by J. F. Dickson, M.A. Oxon.

On the first day of Vassa the villagers put on their holiday dresses, and set off with music, dancers, singers, and flags for the monastery, where the priest, whom they desire to invite, resides. Thence they conduct him in procession to their homes. His first act, after his arrival, is to set up the image and arrange the reliccasket and books. An altar is placed in front of the image, and on this the people proceed to make their offerings of flowers and perfumes. Next every villager contributes something for the priest's food, such as tea, sugar, honeycomb, orange-juice, and the like. The priest, in return, pronounces a benediction, and says:-By virtue of this first offering made for the sake of the Buddha, who is like unto the sun of gods and men, and by virtue of this second offering made to the monkhood, which is like a field of morit, may you henceforth be delivered from the evils of birth in the place of terment, in the world of beasts, in the world of ghosts, and in the world of demons, and inherit the bliss of those who ascend and descend through the worlds of gods till you are born again in the world of men (see p. 21)!'

Then the monk-priest proceeds to the preachingchamber, in the middle of which is a chair with a cushion. He takes his seat, and, holding a screen before his face to prevent his attention being distracted, commences his recitations. The people sit on the floor the men on one side, the women and children on the other. First he repeats the three-refuge formula (p. 78) and the five prohibitions (p. 126), the people repeating after him. Next he recites some favourite passage from the discourses of Buddha, the one generally selected being the Nidhi-kāṇḍa Sutta (see p. 129). If any listener interposes a remark, or hints that he does not understand, the priest explains the meaning. The people then make obeisance and depart.

The monk-priest next repeats to himself the appointed Pirit for the first day of Vassa-namely, the Mangala-sutta, Batma-sutta, and Karamya-merta-sutta (see p. 318), after which he retires to rest for a few hours. Rising before daybreak, he meditates on the virtues of Buddha, on goodwill towards all living beings, on the impurities of the body, and on death, walking up and down in his own chamber, or in any place suitable for perambulation. Next he goes to the temporary chapel, and prostrating himself before the shrine, says, 'I worship continually all the relic-shrines, the sacred Bodhitree, and the images of Buddha. I reverence the three jewels' (see p. 175). He then arranges his offering of flowers, and places these with a small portion of his morning meal on the alter. His meal being concluded, he teaches the children of the villagers, or he prepares for the mid-day and evening preaching (bana).

These preachings are generally well attended, especially on the four Poya days (p. 257). On the new-moon and full-moon days, the priest must go to the nearest monastery and join in the Pätimokkha (see p. 84); and on the full-moon day, which terminates the three months of Vassa, he must go there again as before, but on that occasion, addressing the assembled monks, he must say;—' Venerable Sirs, I have duly finished the Vassa; if you have any doubt about it, speak, and tell me in what I have erred.' If no one speaks he is held to have

fulfilled his duties faultlessly. Then returning and taking with him a second priest, the two together perform the Rätri-bana or mid-night service, which concludes the ceremonies of Vassa. Two pulpits, made of four upright posts, supporting small platforms, are erected, and the people from the neighbouring villages, dressed in their holiday attire, attend in large numbers. These nocturnal recitations are commonly continued for about five hours.

Some account should next be given of the ceremony called Pirit, which is performed in Ceylon and Burma during Vassa, and also at other times. The name Pirit is corrupted from the Pāli paritta, which again is supposed to be connected with Sanskrit paritra or paritrāṇa, 'protection'.' We must premise that this ceremony had its origin in the fear of evil spirits and demons everywhere prevalent in the East (see p. 218); but it must be borne in mind that Buddhism recognizes no order of beings, called demons, created by God, and eternally separate in nature from men.

Demons are beings who are regarded as created by men, rather than by God; for they may have been men in their last state of existence and may become men again (see p. 122). They are, however, represented as cherishing spiteful and malevolent feelings against the superior race to which they once belonged; and all kinds of safeguards and counteracting influences

^{&#}x27;This is the derivation given by Childers; one might otherwise have been inclined to suspect some connexion with Preta, a ghost (pp. 121, 219 of this volume).

are thought to be needed to protect human beings from their malignity.

This is quite in keeping with the Hindû theory, which holds that when a man addicted to any particular vice dies, his evil nature never dies, but assumes another personality and lives after him as a demon. And this applies equally to women, so that the resulting demons may be of either sex, and the female is held to be more spiteful than the male.

The most effective of all, safeguards against the machinations of such malignant beings, is believed to be the recitation or intoning of the Buddha's Law, and especially of the Sutta (Sūtra) division of it already described (p. 62). And of this division there are choice portions—twenty-nine in number '—supposed to possess greater prophylactic potency than other portions. Collectively, they constitute what is called the Pirit, and of these, three are most commonly recited:—the Mangala-sutta, the Ratna-sutta, and the Karaniya-metta-sutta. Part of the first of these has been already given (at p. 129 of this volume).

Part of the second or 'Jewel' Sutta (translated by Childers) runs thus:—

^{*}All spirits here assembled,—those of earth and those of air,—let all such be joyful; let them listen attentively to my words.

^{&#}x27;Therefore Isear me, O ye spirits; be friendly to the race of men; for day and night they being you their offerings, therefore keep diligent watch over them.

¹ The texts and commentaries of some of these were collected by M. Grimblot, and translated with notes by M. Leon Feer, in the Journal Asiatique. The Tibetan Pirit is said to consist of only thirteen Settas.

"Whatsoever tressure exists here or in other worlds, whatsoever glorious jewels in the beavens, there is none like Buddha.

Buddha is this glorious jowel. May this truth bring presperity!

There is unught like this ductrine. The Law is this glorious jowel.

May this truth bring presperity!

'The disciples of Buddha, worthy to receive gifts, the priesthood is

this glorious jewel. May this truth bring prosperity!

Their old karma is destroyed, no new larma is produced. Their hearts no longer cleaving to future life, their seed of existence destroyed, their desires quenched, the righteous are extinguished like this lamp. The priesthood is this glorious jewel. May this truth bring prosperity! Ye spirits here assembled—those of earth and those of air—let us how before Bubilia—let us how before the Law—let us how before the Monkhood.

Part of the third or Karanya-metta-sutta runs as follows:—

This is what should be done by him who is arise in seeking his nawn good. Contented and obserful, not appressed with the curve of this world, not burdened with riches, tranquil, discreet, not arrogant, not greedy for gifts, let him not do my mean action for which others who are wiss might reprove him. Let all creatures be happy and prosperous; let them be of joyful mind. Let no man in any place decrive another, nor let him be harsh towards any one; let him not, out of anger or resentment, with ill to his neighbour. As a mother, so long as she lives, watches over her child, her only child, so among all beings let boundless goodwill prevail. Let goodwill without measure, impartial, unmixed with camity, prevail throughout the world, above, below, around.

The Rev. D. J. Gogerley witnessed the performance of a great Pirit ceremony in Ceylon (Hardy's Monachism, p. 240). Taking his account and that of Mr. Dickson, I have compiled the following brief description of the Mahā-baṇa Pirit, 'great Pirit recitation':—

So soon as the sun has set crowds of people arrive at the Recitation-Hall, bringing oil-lamps made out of cocount-shells. The Hall is decorated, and a campy, shaped like a pagoda, is creeted over the pulpits, which are placed on a raised platform. When darkness supervenes a blaze of light illuminates the Hall. A relic of the Buddha is deposited on the platform, and a sacred thread is fastened round the Hall, one extremity of it being brought close to the relic and to the Reciters. On the morning of the next day, the recitations begin. One of the Reciters repeats the three-refuge formula, and the five commandments (see pp. 78, 126). Then incense is burnt round the platform, and the musicians outside the Hall strike up a lively air. Next, the formula of 'the twelve successive causes of existence' (see p. 102) is intoned, and a hymn of victory chanted.

The recitation of the Pirit continues uninterruptedly, day and night, for seven days. Twenty-four priests are employed, two of whom are constantly seated on the platform and engaged in reciting. Moreover three times in each day-at sunrise, mid-day, and sunsetthey all assemble together and chant in chorus. Of course, when the recitation of the Suttas constituting the Pirit is concluded, it is recommenced, and in this way all the Suttas are recited again and again. On the morning of the seventh day a messenger is sent to a neighbouring temple to invite the attendance of the gods. Then by a stretch of the imagination certain of the gods and spirits are believed to answer the summons, and on their supposed arrival, the protective Suttas are chanted more energetically than ever till the morning of the eighth day, when a benediction concludes the ceremony, and offerings of roles are made to the priest-reciters.

We now pass on to Tibet and Mongolia.

The ceremonies of admission to the mouldhood in those countries do not deviate sufficiently from the practices just described to require special notice.

With regard, however, to the dress of Lāmistic monks after their admission to the Order, the ancient rule, as we have seen, obliged them to wear only three garments of a dirty yellowish colour, made out of rags, or picked up in cemeteries or on dust heaps. But the necessities of a colder climate have compelled the Lāmas to increase their official vestments, and the higher Lāmas sometimes wear bright silken robes enriched with ornament. The law is sufficiently obeyed by putting a patch or two at one corner.

A full equipment is supposed to consist of an under vestment, a sort of tunic worn over it, a montle, a kind of scarf worn over the left shoulder, a loose robe brought round over the same shoulder, and a cap!. The right shoulder is rarely bare, as it generally is in Southern Buddhist countries.

The colour of these six articles of clothing, especially of the cap, is yellow or red, according to the sect to which a monk belongs.

The cap is an important mark of sectarian difference, and is of various forms, and when it has five points, has been compared to a bishop's mitre, but the five points really denote the five Dhyani-Buddhas and their Bodhi-sattvas.

A pold climate necessitates the addition of trousers, and boots and occasionally shoes are worn.

Part of every full monk's equipment in Tilet is a peculiar instrument, made of bronze or other metal, and called a Dorje (Sanskrit Vajra, 'a thunderbolt'), the employment of which for religious objects is peculiar to Northern Buddhism, It is shaped like the imaginary thunderbolt of the gods Indra and Siva-that is, it consists of a short bar, about four inches long, the two extremities of which swell out in globular form, or like small oval cages formed of hoops of metal. The original Dorje is supposed to have fallen direct from Indra's heaven, and to have been preserved in a monastery near Lhassa, called Sera (pp. 278, 442). According to another legend, the original instrument belonged to Gautama Buddha himself, and on his passing away into non-existence, transported itself through the air from India into Tibet. The consecrated imitations of it are innumerable. Their primary use is for exorcising and driving away evil spirits, especially in the performance of ceremonies and repetition of prayers—the instrument being then held between the fingers and thumb and waved backwards and forwards, or from side to side.

The efficiety of the Dorje in securing good fortune and warding off evil influences of all kinds is supposed to be of wide application. The idea was really borrowed from Saivism or from the Tantra system, introduced through Nepal by the Red sect. It is easy to understand the enormous power supposed to belong to a priesthood which claimed to be the wielders of a formidable thunderbolt, sent to them directly from heaven.

No wonder that the original Dorje preserved at the Sera monastery has become an object of actual worship. According to M. Huc, countless pilgrims prostrate themselves before it; and at the New Year's festival, on the 27th day of the first month, it is carried in procession with great pomp to Lhässa,—to the two centres of Lämism—Potala and Lä brang. On its way there, the mystical implement is adored by the whole population, male and female (ii. 221).

Below is an engraving of a Dorje which I brought from Darjiling.



It should be mentioned that the fierce Bodhi-sattva Vajra-pāṇi (see p. 201 of this volume) is represented holding a similar Dorje in his right hand in his character of subduer of evil spirits. In some representations the evil demons are denoted by serpents.

Another important part of a full monk's equipment in Tibet is the Prayer-bell (called Drilbu) employed at the performance of daily religious ceremonies, and rung to accompany the repetition and chanting of prayers, or to fill up the intervals of worship. It often has balf a Dorje as a handle, or the handle is ornamented with various mystical symbols carved on it. The object of ringing bells during worship is to call the attention of the beings who are worshipped, or to keep off evil spirits by combining noise with the waving of the Dorje in the handle.

The bell here represented was brought by me from Dārjiling.



The bells used in Buron are described at p. 526.

Other religious implements used by novices and laybrethren, as well as by full monks, are prayer-wheels, prayer-cylinders, resaries, amulets (see p. 358), drums (see p. 385), and the Phurbu or Phur-pa (pp. 351, 352).

As to the daily religious services and ceremonies performed by Mouks in Tibet and Mongolia, these, of course, are far more ritualistic than in southern Buddhist countries. It has already been explained (at pp. 202, 225) that certain abstract essences or mystical forms of the Buddha, called Dhyani-Buddhas, were imagined to exist, and these had their concrete energizing vice-gerents called Bodhi-sattvas—beings who received adoration as if they were actually gods. In Tibet the Bodhi-sattva Avalokitesvara, and the canonized reformer Tsong Khapa, and other supposed saints, became prominent objects of religious worship. Then, in process of time, a complicated ceremonial was developed, which, as we shall see (p. 338), has much in common with the ritual of Roman Catholic Christianity.

The language employed in the religious services of the Lamistic Hierarchy, whether in Tibet, Mongolia, or in the Lama monasteries of China and Manchuria, is Tibetan. In fact, Tibetan is to the Lamistic Church what Latin is to the Romish. It is the sole orthodox language of religion and religious ceremonial.

According to Koeppen, only one Mongolian Lamamonastery (and that established at Peking) has the right to perform religious services in Mongolian instead of in Tibetan ',

Dr. Edkins, however, states that there is a temple (called Fa-hai-si) near the hunting-park, in which the Manchu language is employed instead of Tibetan. (Chinese Buddhism, p. 406.)

Without doubt the acquisition of some knowledge of the Tibetan language is incumbent on every Lama.

¹ This is probably permitted with a view to prevent the study of Mongolian from entirely dying out. It is certain that, although the Enddhist sacred books have long been translated into Mongolian, Chinese, and Tangusic, only the Tibetan texts are esteemed as examined.

Nevertheless, few, except in Tibet, really understand it. They simply repeat the usual prayers and formularies mechanically.

⁴ The indomitable persevering Hungarian traveller, Alexander Csoma de Kirsis, already mentioned (at p. 70), was the first European to throw light on the Tiletan language. He had been impelled toacquire it by the task he had imposed on himself of scarching out the progenitors of his race. More than eighty years ago he set out on his travels, and his search ultimately brought him to Tibet. There be devoted binnelf to the study of the Tibetan language and its sacred. literature, taking up his abode in the monastery of Pugdal, in defiance of intense cold and other hardships. But his heroic energy did not end. there. In 1831 he travelled from Tibet to Calcutta, and in that city, about the year 1834, published his Grammar and Dictionary of the Tibetan language, besides his table of contents of the Kanjur and the extra-canonical treatises. At length fancying himself qualified for the accomplishment of his self-inflicted task, he started off again, and died in Sikkim in April 1842. He is buried at Darjiling. We Englishmen, who ought to have taken the greatest share in these linguistic conquests-so important in their bearing on the interests of our Indian frontier-have hitherto, to our great discredit almost entirely neglected them. Meanwhile, St. Petersburg and Paris have founded clasirs of the Tiberan language, and nearly all that has been effected for promoting the study of Tibetan has been due to Bussian and French scholars, and to German and Moravian missionaries, especially to Jüschke and Hyde.

I am glad, however, to see from the annual address delivered by the President of the Asiatic Society of Bengal, and published in the Report for February, 1888, that this represent is now being wiped out by our fellow-subjects in India. Bobu Pratapa Chandra Ghosha is bringing out in the Bibliothera India the Tibetan translation of the Buddhistic work Prajūs-pāramitā, forming the second division of the Kanjur, while Mr. Sarut Chandra Dās, C.I.E., is editing the Tibetan version of the Avadāna-Kalpalatā (a store-house of legends of Buddha's life and acts), and compiling a Tibetan-Sanskrit-English Dictionary, Great credit is due to our Indian Government for the publication of Jaschke's Tibetan-English Dictionary. It appears that the Lamistic priests assemble three times a day to go through the prescribed ritual—at sunrise, at mid-day, and at sunset. We read that, before commencing the service, they enter the temple or hall of worship in procession and seat themselves on low seats in long rows. These are placed the whole length of the hall, from the entrance-door to the altar, being divided in the middle by a passage. At the further extremity, close to the altar, are two raised thrones for the Head Lamas—a five-cushioned one on the right for the Abbot and a three-cushioned one for the Vice-Abbot.

When all have seated themselves, the choir-master or precentor gives a signal with a bell. Then the prayerformularies are recited or chanted, certain passages out of the Law are intoned and certain litanies sung, sometimes in loud tones, accompanied by noisy music or by clapping of hands, and generally in unison, though occasionally verses are sung alternately with responses.

Then at other times a sentence of the Law is repeated by each mouk in turn; or a chant is set up consisting of such words as: Praise be to the Buddha! or praise be to some Bodhi-sattva! followed by a recital of all his names, titles, and epithets; or mystical sentences and syllables are ejaculated. The result is said to be a chaos of voices and a deafening confusion of sounds.

The chief instruments used in the services are a spiral shell, a long trumpet of copper or brass (sometimes more than ten feet long), a large drum, flutes, cymbals, and horns—the last being sometimes made of the thigh-bones of human beings t

The ritual is imposing, and still more so when a living Buddha is present. It has been described by M. Hue, and I here give the substance of his account.

In front of the chief idel, and on a level with the altar, is a gilded sent for the living Buddha or Grand Lana of the Monastery. The whole space of the temple, from one end to the other, is occupied by long low seats almost level with the ground, stretching right and left of the Grand Laun's throne. These are covered with curpets, n vacant space being left between each row for the Lamas to pass and repass. When the hour of prayer is come, a Lama, whose office it is to summen the choir, places himself in front of the grand entrance of the temple and blows with all the force of his lungs into a conchshell trumpet, the sound of which is audible for a league round. This effectually rouses the Lamas and calls them together. Each then takes his mantle and official hat of ceremony, and repairs to the interior court. The trumpet sounds again, and when its note is heard for the third time, the great door is suddenly thrown open; the living Buddha enters, and takes his sent in front of the image on the altar. Then the Lamas, after depositing their red boots in the vestibule, advance towards him barefact, and odore him by three prostrations. This done, they seat themselves on the long seats according to their dignity, cross-legged and face to face. As soon as the director of the ceremenies has given the signal by tinkling a little bell, everyone nurmura the prescribed propers, unrolling the formularies on his knees. After this recitation, there is profound silence for a minute. Then the bell is again rang, and a hymn or chant in two choruses begins. The Tibetan prayers, ordinarily arranged in verses, and written in metrical style, are well adapted to harmony; but sometimes at certain pauses indicated by the rubric, the Lama municians execute a strain

As corpses are exposed to be devoured by animals in Tibet human bones are easily obtained for this purpose.

As before stated (p. 306, note) I have been compelled to abbreviate the translator's version and occusionally to vary the expressions, and have therefore felt it right to omit inverted commas.

in little accord with the gravity of the psalmody. The result is a sturning noise of bells, cymbols, drams, tambourines, conch-shells, trumpets, and pipes. Each musician sounds his instrument with a sort of fary, and each strives to outle his neighbour in the soise he can produce. (Huc's Travels, i. 88, abridged.)

One important element in some Tibetan religious services is the consecration and distribution of holy water and grain by the chief Lamas.

Perfumes, too, are burnt, and censers containing incense are swung backwards and forwards during the ceremonies.

Then, again, some Lamistic ceremonials include the drinking of ten poured into little cups, kept in the breast-pockets of the monks' robes, and replenished two or three times during the service.

Sir Riehard Temple (Journal, ii. 208) thus describes a tea-drinking ceremonial at which he was present, at the monastery of Pemyangchi in Sikkim (see p. 298 of these Lectures).

The priests and monks, some thirty-five in all, were drawn up in full robes to receive us. Then the officials of the monastery were introduced—the steward, the rod-bearer, the deputy master, and lastly, the master. A procession was quickly formed, which we followed into the chapel, where they all took their accustomed scats, while we sat on places prepared for us. The interior of the chapel seemed an odd place for this, but we were told that it was the correct ceremonial. A chant was begun, which lasted some ten minutes, as a sort of grace, and then ten was landed round—first to us, next to the priests, and lastly to the monks. A short chant followed, and then the procession preceded us out of the chapel.

In the picture which accompanies Sir Richard's description, all the monks have head-coverings, some of which are like caps or last of a high sugar-loaf shape, while others have several points like episcopal mitres (see p. 321).

The monks of Sikkim are generally of the Dugpa sect *, and wear red caps (see pp. 273, 298).

When Dr. Watt was in Ladak, he was present at a service performed by a number of monks belonging to both sects, who seemed to fraternize very unically. All the monks of the red sect took up a position on one side of the chapel, while those of the yellow sect ranged themselves on the opposite side. The two sects entered together, as usual, in procession, and part of the ceremonial—as in that witnessed by Sir Richard Temple—consisted in drinking tea from little cups taken from the folds of their robes, and put back again, to be again taken out and replenished; and this, too, without interrupting the continuous repetition of prayers, chants, and formularies?

M. Huc also describes a 'Tea-general' ceremony after morning service in a temple. Each monk drinks in silence, carefully placing his scarf before his cup, as if to prevent the sight of the apparent incongruity of drinking tea in such a sacred spot (ii. 57).

Another instance of tea-drinking as an element in Lamistic ceremonial, occurs in Mr. Sarat Chandra Dās' highly interesting account of the ceremony of his presentation to the Dalai Lāma at the palacemonastery of Potala, in Lhāssa, on June 10, 1882. I

According to Schlagintweit this sect (also called Brugps, p. 272) are especially worshippers of the Dorje (see p. 322), and are therefore Tautrikas.

^{*} This I heard from his own lips.

venture to give the substance of it in an abbreviated form and not quite literally 5.

An account of other presentations both to the Dalai Lāma and Tashi Lāma will be given in a future Lecture (see pp. 439, 444, 447).

Early in the morning I was informed of the arrival of Chola Knebo, who was ready to take me to Potala for presentation to the Dahii Lama. We sallied forth on horsebock, with three buildles of incomesticks in our hands, and a roll of scarves in our breast-pockets, chanting as we went along certain hymns, and particularly the mystic 'Om mani padme Hūm.' In the street we saw a calf nucking milk, and several women fetching water in our direction. My companions were delighted at these ausparious omens. Arrived at the eastern gateway of Potala, we discontinted, and marked up a long half, on two sides of which were two rows of proper-wheels, put there to be twirled, on going in pull coming out.

A young monk now came down to conduct us, and we accorded slowly, hoking only on the ground before us. The several bathlers which conducted as from one story to another were steep, and placed in dark halls. I counted five, which took us as far as the groundfloor of the Red palace. Half-a-dozen ladders still remained to be scaled.

At about eight we reached the top, and there found a number of monks anxiously awaiting an interview with his Haliness. A seat was pointed out to me. A monk sat near me, and smilingly observed that it must have been on account of the sins of my former life that I was born in India, where there is no living Buddha.

From the top of the Reil palace we enjoyed a grand panoruma of Libbsa and its suburbs. Shortly afterwards some Libbsa of high rank, dressed in loose yellow mantles, arrived. They entered the hall of reception one after another in solemn array. We remained outside in anxious suspense, fixing our eyes on the entrance door, and expecting to be summoned to his Holiness' presence.

At last, three Limas came towards us and asked us to enter in a

³ The abstract has been made by me from a copy of Sarat Chandro Das' Report kindly lent to me by Sir Edwin Arnold. But I learnt much from Mr. S. C. D. in personal conversations. In my numerous quotations I have ventured to make a few alterations in the English.

line one after another. Walking very gently, we proceeded to the middle of the audience hall—a systems apartment supported by three rows of four weeden pillars. The walls bad paintings of the exploits of Huddha, of Chaurasaig 1, Tsong Klaspa, and other celebrated saints. besides images of the successive incurnations of the Dahi Lama.

As soon as we had sutered the official scarf-collectors received the presentation-scarves from our hands. We seated ourselves on ruck. spread in about eight rows, my seat being in the third row, at a distance of about ten feet from the Grand Line's throne, and a little to his left. When all were sented, perfect silence reigned in the grand hall. The state officials walked from left to right with screne gravity, as became their exalted rank, in the presence of the Supreme Vice-Regent of Buddha on earth. At their head walked the Kuchar Khanpo, who carried in his hand the bowl of benediction, containing the sacred Thui (that is, consecrated water stained yellow with saffron) for sprinkling over the audience. The bearer of the incense-not, suspended by three golden chains, the carrier of the royal golden tea-pot, and other domestic officials, now came up, and stood motionless as pictures, without looking on either side, but fixing their eyes and their attention, as it were, on the tips of their respective nows. Two large golden lamp-burners, resembling flower-vases, flickered on two sides of the throne. The great altar-resembling an oriental throne, and supported by lions a carved in wood-on which sat his Holiness, a child of eight, was covered with ailk scarves of great value. It was about four feet high, six long, and four broad. A yellow mitre-hat? covered the Grand Lama's head, the pendant portions veiling his ears, and a yellow mantle caveleped his person. He sat cross-legged, with the palms of his hands joined together to bless us. When it came to my turn I received his Holiness' benediction, and was able to look upon his divine face. Other Lamas approached him with downcast looks, and resumed their respective seats, not presuming to look up. I longed to linger a few seconds, but other candidates for benediction displaced me by pushing me gently forward. I noticed that the

See p. 321.

This is the Tibetan name of Avalokitesyara or Padma-pagi. is often spelt Chenresi, or Chenresig, or Chenreseig.

The Lion is an emblem of the Buddha, and he is called Sakyasinha, 'the Lion of the Sikya tribe' (see pp. 23, 394).

princely child peasessed a really bright and fair complexion, with rosy cheeks. His eyes were large and penetrating. The contour of his face was remarkably Aryan, though somewhat marred by the obliquity of his eyes. The thinness of his person was probably owing to the fatigues of the court-ceremonies, religious duties, and secric observances, to which he had been subjected since taking the vows of monk-hood. Remembering the stories about the freaks of fortune, which had lately brought him to this proud position, and had compelled his predecessors to undergo untimely transmigrations, I pitied his exalted rank; for who knows whether he will not be forced to undergo another transmigration before reaching his twentieth year?

When all were again seated after receiving the Dalai Lama's benediction, the Sol-pon Chhenpo poured ten in his Holiness golden cup from a golden tea-pot, while four assistant Sol-pons poured tea in the cups of the audience, consisting of the head Lamas of Meru monastery and ourselves. Before the Grand Lama lifted his cup to his lips, a grace was solemnly said, beginning with 'On ah Hum' thrice chanted, and followed by a prayer to the following effect :- ' Never even for a moment losing sight of the three Holies, always offer reverence to the Tri-ratnas; let the blessings of the three be upon us, Without even stirring the air by the movements of our limbs, we slowly lifted our cups to our lips, and drank the ten-which was delicious-taking care to make no sound with our lips. Three times was ten served, and three times we emptied our cups, after which we put them back in our breast-pockets. Then the Sol-pon placed a golden dish full of consecrated rice in front of his Holiness, which he only touched. The remainder was distributed among those present. I obtained a handful, which I carefully tied in one corner of my handkerchief. The following grace was then uttered by the assembled monks, with much gravity :— The most precious Buddha is the most perfect and matchless teacher; the most unerring guide is the Saigha; the most infallible protection is in the sacred Dharma. We offer these offerings to these three objects of refuge. Reverence be to each of them!

Mr. Sarat Chandra Dās also witnessed at the same time the performance of a remarkable ceremony for the translation of the soul of a chief Lāma or Khanpo to one of the heavenly mansions, It appears that a certain well-known Khanpo had died of small-pox. He was one of the most distinguished scholars of Tibet, and held the highest position in the Court of Potala. The day on which the ceremony was performed was the twenty-seventh day of this chief Lāma's Burdo (p. 371); that is, of the interval of fortynine days between his death and his translation to another world. (According to Jäschke the interval of the intermediate state only lasts for forty days.)

The Dalai Lāma, seated on his throne, chanted a hymn in a low indistinct voice. Afterwards the assembled monks in grave tones repeated what the Grand Lāma had uttered. Then a venerable personage rose from the middle of the first row of seats, and addressing the Grand Lāma as the incarnate Lord Chenressig (Avalokitesvara), recited all the many acts of mercy performed by him, as the patron-saint of Tibet, for the benefit of its people. Next, he made offerings of certain precious things (including an imaginary presentation of the seven mythical treasures:) for the benefit of the soul of the late Khanpo, saying:—'I pray that you may graciously accept these presents for the good of all living beings.'

Finally, he prostrated himself three times before the Grand Lama's throne. A solemn pause followed; after which the audience rose, and the Grand Lama retired. Mr. Sarat Chandra Das goes on to relate that at the end of the ceremony one of the assistant Lamas gave him two packets of pills, and another tied a scrap of red

¹ Sec these enumerated at p. 528.

silk round his neck. The pills, he was told, were chinlab or blessings, consecrated by the Buddha and other saints; and the consecrated scrap of silk, called sungdû, 'knot of blessing,' was the Grand Läma's usual return for presents made to him by pilgrims and devotees.

We may note here that in 1866 the Indian explorer Nain Singh saw the then Dalai Lāma. He was a handsome boy about thirteen years old, and was seated on a throne six feet high. He had the Regent on his right hand. He was said to be in his thirteenth transmigration.

Dr. Schlagiatweit (p. 239) describes a ceremony in which consecrated water (thui) is poured from a teapot-like vessel over a metallic mirror (pp. 458, 463 of these Lectures), which is held so as to reflect the image of Gautama Buddha scated on the altar. This water falls down into a flat vessel containing a bag filled with rice, and is then suitable for ceremonial ablutions.

Another ceremony (called Nyungne? by Schlagintweit), involving long abstinence, lasts for four days.

The first and second days are passed in preparations. Those who are to take part in the ceremony rise at sunrise, bathe and prostrate themselves several times before the image of Avalokitesvara. The head Lāma then bids them confess their faults, and meditate on the evils resulting from demerit. He next, with his attendants, recites extracts from certain books of confession. This goes on till ten o'clock, when ten is taken. After this the recitations and prayer-recitals

¹ See Mr. Clements Markham's Tibet, p. exiii

continue till two o'clock, when a meal of vegetables is eaten. Then comes a pause, but the prayers and readings are afterwards carried on till late at night, tea being handed round at intervals. Before retiring to rest, the head Lama specifies the various duties to be performed by the devotees on the following day, and orders them, as a penance, to sleep in 'the lion-posture,' viz. to lie on the right side, to stretch out the feet and to support the head with the right hand 't.

The third day is the most important, and is passed in rigorous abstinence from all food. No one is even allowed to swallow his saliva, which must be ejected into a vessel placed before him. Not a word must be spoken. Each man prays and confesses his sins, but does so in absolute silence. This continues till sunrise on the fourth day.

It was at first the rule that repetitions of the Law, confessions of sin (especially the Patimokkha), and some of the chief religious ceremonies (including fasting) should take place, more particularly on the days of new and full moon (called Uposatha, p. 84).

Thus we read that 'on the day of full moon Ananda purified himself, and went up to the upper story of his house to keep the sacred day (Mahāsudassana-sutra, 1-10). This was in conformity with the ancient Brāhmanical rule that every new-moon day (Darša) and every full-moon day (Paurṇamāsa) should be set apart for special religious observances ².

* See my Brahmanism and Hinduism, p. 367.

¹ This was the Buddha's attitude when he died (see pp. 50, 24t). He is called 'a Lion.' (See note 2, p. 332.)

In later times the intermediate quarter-moon days were also held sacred, and so the number of Uposatha days (see p. 84) was increased to four in every month, or once a week. Very strict Buddhists in Tibet eat nothing on these days between sunrise and sunset except farinaceous food with tea (p. 346).

The laity are invited to join in keeping the Uposatha days, but take no real part in the detail of the services. The same rule applies to all religious ceremonies. Laymen may be present at any rite, but without co-operating in carrying out the ritual. Still, laymen have their own part to perform. They look on—listen, tell their resaries, and repeat short prayers—such as the 'three-refuge' and 'jewel-lotus' formula (pp. 78, 370)—and make declarations to avoid the five great sins (p. 126). Or they walk up to the image-altar and place offerings on it, or bow before it and receive the Lama's benediction. Theoretically, the laity only exist to honour and support the monkhood, and to be blessed by them in return. At all events a layman's religion is usually restricted to a very limited range of duty.

One common way of showing piety is by walking round temples, monasteries, Stūpas, and sacred walls (see pp. 380, 505), from east to west, keeping the right shoulder towards them, and even occasionally measuring the ground with the extended body.

This last task is by no means a light or easy one. According to M. Huc (i. 202), a whole day scarcely suffices to perform the circumambulation when the monastic buildings and temples occupy an extensive area. People begin at daybreak, and the feat must

be accomplished all at one time, without any break, or even a few moments' pause for taking nourishment. Moreover, the measuring-process must be perfect; 'the body must be extended to its whole length, and the forehead must touch the earth while the arms are stretched out in front and the hands joined.' At each prostration a circle must be drawn on the ground with two rams' horns held in the hands. 'It is a sorrowful spectacle, and the unfortunate people often have their faces and clothes covered with dust and mud. The utmost severity of the weather does not present any obstacle to their courageous devotion. They continue their prostrations through rain, snow, and cold. Sometimes they go through the additional penance of carrying an enormous weight of books on their backs. You meet with men, women, and even children sinking under these excessive burdens. When they have finished their circumambulation, they are considered to have acquired the same merit as if they had recited all the prayers contained in the books they have carried' In point of fact they are generally far too ignorant to be able to read the books, and the carrying of them on their backs is taken as an adequate equivalent.

The acquisition of merit by circumambulation is not an exclusively Hindû or Buddhist idea. The Holy House at Loretto near Ancona—believed to have been transported there from Bethlehem by angels—is circumambulated by pilgrims on their knees, but keeping the sacred object to the left. Indeed, we may fitly conclude the present Lecture by a comparison between the ritual of Tibetan Buddhism and that of Roman Catholicisma comparison, too, drawn by the Roman Catholic Missionaries themselves:

'The cross, the mitre, the dalmatica, the cope, which Grand Lamas wear on their journeys, or when they are performing some ceremony out of the temple; the service with double choirs, the psalmody, the exorcisms, the censer for incense, suspended from five chains, and opened or closed at pleasure; the benedictions pronounced by the Lamas by extending the right hand over the heads of the faithful; the chaplet, ecclesiastical celibacy, spiritual retirement, the worship of the saints, the fasts, the processions, the litanies, the holy water, all these are analogies between the Buddhists and ourselves' (Huc, ii. 50). To these may be added sacred images, sacred pictures, sacred symbols, relics, lamps, and illuminations !.

This is doubtless a true comparison. But it does not follow that the opinion which the missionaries express—
'that these analogies are of Christian origin'—is equally deserving of our assent. No doubt one chief feature of Buddhism, as of Hinduism', is its receptivity, but may it not be the case that human nature and human tendencies will be found to assert themselves independently in every part of the world, wherever surrounding circumstances are favourable to their development?

[†] I found, when in the South of India, that an image of Bhavāni in a Hindū tomple was very like that of the Virgin Mary in an adjacent Roman Catholic Church, I was told that the same Hindū carver curved both.

⁴ We know that Hindúism, in the end, adopted Buddha himself, and converted him into one of the incarnations of Vishou (see 'Brahmanism and Hindúism,' p. 114).

LECTURE XIII.

Festivals, Domestic Rites, and Formularies of Prayer.

WE must now turn to the consideration of some of the chief festivals, domestic rites, and prayer-formularies of Buddhism—a subject which follows as a natural sequel to the last Lecture.

It is well known that the Hindus have certain festivals and holy days, celebrated at the junction of the seasons which in India are properly six in number—, namely, spring, summer, the rains (Varsha), autumn, winter, and the season of dew and mist (see 'Indian Wisdom,' p. 450; 'Brāhmanism and Hinduism,' p. 428).

Buddhism has adopted the old Hindu ideas on this subject, and has added others of its own, but generally only reckons three seasons—summer, the rains (Vassa = Varsha) and winter.

The festival of the New Year is, of course, universal. It is supposed to celebrate the victory of light over darkness, and, in Buddhist countries, of Buddhism over ignorance. The corresponding Hindū festival is called Makara-sankrānti. In India this marks the termination of the inauspicious month Pausha and the beginning of the sun's northern course (uttarāyaṇa) in the heavens. It is a season of general rejoicing.

In Burma, where a good type of Southern Buddhism is still to be found, the New Year's festival might suitably be called a 'water-festival.' It has there so little connexion with the increase of the New Year's light, that it often takes place as late as the early half of April (see Mr. Scott's 'Burman,' ii. 48). It is, however, a movable feast, the date of which is regularly fixed by the astrologers of Mandalay, 'who make intricate calculations based on the position of various constellations.' The object is to determine on what precise day the king of the Naths (see p. 217 of this volume) will descend upon the earth and inaugurate the new year. When the day arrives all me on the watch, and just at the right moment-which invariably occurs at midnight-a caunon is fired off, announcing the descent of the Nath-king upon earth. Forthwith (according to Mr. Scott) men and women sally out of their houses, carrying nots full of water consecrated by fresh leaves and twigs of a sacred tree (p. 514 of this volume), repeat a formal prayer, and pour out the water on the ground. At the same time all who have guns of any kind discharge them, so as to greet the new year with as much noise as possible.

Then, 'with the first glimmer of light,' all take jars full of fresh water and carry them off to the nearest monastery. First they present them to the monks, and then proceed to bathe the images. This work is usually done by the women of the party, 'who reverently clamber up' and empty their goblets of water over the placid features of the Buddhas and Bodhisattvas. Then begin the Saturnalia. All along the

road are urchins with squirts and syringes, with which they have been furtively practising for the last few days. The skill thus acquired is exhibited by the accuracy of their aim. Cold streams of water catch the ears of the passers by. Young men and girls salute one another with the contents of jars and goblets. Shouts of merriment are heard in every quarter. Before breakfast every one is soaked, but no one thinks of changing his garments, for the weather is warm, and 'water is everywhere.' The girls are the most enthusiastic, and as they generally go in bands and carry copious reservoirs along with them, 'unprotected males' are soon routed. Then a number of 'zealous people' go down to the river, wade into the water knee-deep, splash about and drench one another till they are tired. No one escapes. For three days no one likes to be seen with dry clothes. The wetting is a compliment. A clerk comes up to his master, bows, and 'gravely pours the contents of a silver cup down the back of his neck, saying, 'let me do homage to you with water."

It appears from Mr. Scott's amusing narrative that, when there was a king in Burma, an important feature of the festival was the formal washing of his Majesty's head,

The New Year's rejoicings in Ceylon require no special notice.

In Tibet the New Year's festival properly begins at new moon, and may be delayed till some time in February. The festival lasts fifteen days, and, as usual, is a season of general festivity, gifts, congratulations, mummery, dancing, and acting. It is the Lamistic carnival,

According to M. Hue (ii. 216) the rejoicings commence (as in Burma) at midnight. At Lhāssa all the inhabitants sit up, awaiting the solemn moment which is to close the old year and open the new. The usages differ so curiously from those customary in Southern Buddhist countries, that I here give an abbreviated version of the two French travellers' experiences.

Not being at all eager to watch for the moment of separation between the two Tibetan years, we went to hed at our assal hour, and were wrapped in profound slamber, when we were suddenly awakened by cries of joy issuing from all quarters of the town. Bells, cymbals, couchs, tambourines, and all the instruments of Tibetan music, were set to work together and produced the most frightful aproar imaginable. We had a good mind to get up to witness the happiness of the inhabitants of Lhoson, but the cold was so cutting that, after reflection, we decided to remain under our woollon coverlets, and to unite ourselves in heart only with the public felicity. Unhappily for our comfort, violent knocks on our door, threstening to smash it into splinters, warned us that we must renounce our project. We therefore donned our clothes, and the door being opened, some friendly Tibetans rushed into our room, inviting us to the New Year's Issuquet. They all hore in their hands a small vessel made of baked earth, in which balls of honey and flour floated on boiling water. One visitor offered us a long silver needle, terminating in a hook, and invited us to fish in his basin. At first we sought to excuse ourselves, objecting that we were not in the habit of taking food during the night, but they entreated as so warmly, and put out their tongues at us with so friendly a grace, that we were obliged to comply, and resign ourselves to a participation in the New Year's festivities. Each of us, therefore, hooked a ball, which we then crushed between our teeth to ascertain its flavour. For politeness sake we had to swallow the dose, but not without making some grimaces. Nor could we get off with this first act of devotion. The New Year was inexorable. Our numerous friends at Linassa succeeded

each other almost without interruption, and we had perforce to munch Tibetan sweetmeats till daylorak.

It is said that other peculiar customs follow, one of which the Tibetans call the Lhassa-Moru. This takes place on the third day, and leads to the invasion of the town and its environs by innumerable bands of Lamas. Immense numbers of Lamas, some on foot, some on horseback, some on asses or oxen, and all carrying cooking-utensils and prayer-books, crowd into Lhassa from all points. The town is completely overrun. Those who cannot get lodgings encamp in the streets and squares, or pitch their tents in the suburbs. The tribunals are closed, and the course of justice is suspended. The Lamas parade the streets in disorderly bands, uttering discordant cries, pushing one another about, quarrelling, fighting, and yet, in the midst of all, chanting their prayers (Huc, ii. 218).

In Tibet there is a 'water-festival' in the seventh or eighth month (about our August and September), At this festival the Lamas go in procession to rivers and lakes, and consecrate the waters by benediction or by throwing in offerings. Huts and tents are erected on the banks, and people bathe and drink to wash away their sins. It concludes with dancing, buffoonery, and masquerading.

The festival of Gautama Buddha's conception, or of the Buddha's last birth—for it must be borne in mind that, before Buddhahood, he went through innumerable previous births—is a most important anniversary in all Buddhist countries, but the right date has been the occasion of much controversy. The event is generally celebrated at the end of April, or beginning of May, or on a day corresponding to the 15th day of the Hindū month Vaišākha, which is also sometimes given as the date of the Buddha's attainment of Buddhahood, and of his death. Everywhere throughout the modern Buddhist world the Buddha's birthday is kept by the worship of his images, followed by processions.

As to the day of his death, Sarat Chandra Dās was at Lhāssa on June 1, 1882, and wrote thus;—'To-day being the holiest day of the year—the anniversary of Buddha's Nirvāṇa—the burning of incense in every shrine, chapel, monastery, and house, darkened the atmosphere with smoke. Men hastened to the great temple to do homage to the Buddha and to obtain his blessing.'

The 'festival of lamps' is an important anniversary with all Buddhists. The Hindus have their Divali or feast of illuminations (see 'Brahmanism and Hinduism,' p. 432) when the cold season begins. The early Buddhists marked the end of the rainy season (Vassa = Varsha), which terminated their period of retirement, by a day of rejoicing (see p. 84). In process of time they connected the celebration of Gautama's descent from heaven (p. 417) with the termination of Vassa.

In Tibet the orthodox followers of the Dalai Lama have a festival of their own, with illuminations, on the 25th day of the 10th month (Nov.-Dec.), to celebrate the ascension of Tsong Khapa to heaven (p. 280). Sarat Chandra Das was at Tashi Lunpo on this day in 1831, when 'hundreds of lamp-burners were tastefully placed in rows on the roof of every building.' The illuminations

of the temples, tombs, and grand monastery 'presented a magnificent appearance.'

With regard to the season called Vassa, it should be noted here that since there is no rainy period of the year in Tibet which corresponds to the Indian Rains, certain seasons of abstinence from food are observed either before, or at the same time with the great Festivals. These periods of fasting are distributed equally throughout the year—one in February, one in May, one in July, one in November or December.

The festivals and holy days thus briefly described, are by no means the only festivals of Buddhism. There are numerous other special and local ones. For example, in Ceylon, the Sinhalese celebrate the coming of the Buddha to their island and his victory over the Rākshasas and evil demons by a festival in March or April, when the greater number of pilgrims flock to his supposed foot-print on Adam's Peak, or to the sacred Bodhi-tree at Anurādha-pura (see p. 519). Other Southern countries have festivals connected with the worship of special foot-prints and relies of their own.

Then the Lamas in Lhassa keep the day of the worship of the Dorje (see p. 322) on the 27th day of the first month, while those in Sikkim celebrate as a festival the day on which the Lepchas make offerings to the spirit of the mountain Kinchinjunga.

Then, again, at the beginning of the third month an exhibition of sacred vessels and pictures takes place at Lhassa, accompanied by processions in masks, the Lamas appearing as good genii, and the laity as tigers, leopards, elephants, &c. In other places, too, there are special festivals. For example, a singular festival, called 'Chase of the spiritkings,' is kept by Northern Buddhists on the 30th of the second month, when there is a vast amount of religious dancing (with tediously slow movements), masquerading, mummery, and buffoonery, not unlike the devil-dancing which goes on in Ceylon, and closely connected with the universal belief in demons and evil spirits.

The most hideous masks are used on these occasions. In 1884 I had an opportunity of inspecting in a Buddhist monastery near Darjiling a most singular assortment of religious masks, which for distortion of feature and horrible unsightliness, could scarcely be matched anywhere; for indeed mask-making is an art which Buddhism has brought to the greatest perfection. I also witnessed a religious dance performed by a party of masqueraders which struck me as a remarkable example of the utter debasement of Buddhism in Northern countries.

Mrs. Bridges describes a similar religious dance in Ladak thus:—

"A group of grinning masks—lions' heads and harlequins' hodies came down the steps, and whirling slowly round, retreated again into the gloom and came out dragon-headed. Then a hand of skeletons, the skulls (masks) admirably painted, grashing their hideons jaws and shaking their lanky limbs, rushed out into the sonshine and executed a real "Dance of Death" before us. ("Truvels." p. 101.)

Yet all true Buddhists are prohibited from dancing and masquerading (p. 126 of this volume); just as Manu (II. 178, IV. 15, 212) prohibited Brahmans from engaging in similar frivolities.

Then the religious dramas performed on some of

the Buddhist festive days are not the least interesting examples of the present prevalent superstitions.

I witnessed part of a dramatic performance at a Burmese Theatre in Calcutta (during the Exhibition year), when the story of the Hindu Epic, called Ramayana, and especially that portion of it which relates to the carrying off of Sitā by demons (see Brāhmunism and Hinduism, p. 42, and Indian Wisdom, p. 337), was dramatically represented. The theatre was a rude wooden enclosure open to the sky, with the exception of a portion roofed over for a band of musicians, whose noisy performances appeared to constitute an important element in the proceedings. The chief musician saton the ground in the middle of a circular frame-workabout two or three feet high-hung round with drums of different sizes, which he struck with his hands, and occasionally tuned by the application of moist clay in larger or smaller lumps. In the centre of the open area of flat dusty soil which served for the stage, a big branch of a tree was stuck upright, possibly to represent the forest in which Rama lived with his wife. Then the hero and heroine of the drama-Rama and Sità-kept up a tedious colloquy, interspersed with jokes, for hours. The former-who, be it remembered, was supposed to be a god-smoked a cigar all the while, and occasionally ejected saliva with perfect indifference to all appearances and to all laws of congruity, while every now and again Sitä, in spite of a tight dress, varied the monotony of the dialogue by executing a slow dance, characterized by strange contortions, twistings, and wrigglings of the limbs. Hideous masks

were at intervals assumed by the actors, and, of course, by the demons who intervened at odd moments with much ludicrous gesticulation. The action of the play went on continuously for about ten days, during which period people came and went as they liked, and the last comers entered into the progress of the plot with as much interest as if they had witnessed the whole. There is never much originality of invention in these religious plays. The Indian heroic poems and the five hundred and fifty birth-stories (see p.63) of the Buddha furnish the basis of all.

The religious dramas of Tibet are of a somewhat different character. The following description is founded on Dr. Schlagintweit's account (p. 233), and on that of Mrs. Bridges in her interesting 'Travels' (John Murray, 1883, p. 130).

The dramatis personn consist of three classes.—1. Tutelary deities or good genii, called Dragshed (Dragsed), who ward off the assaults of evil demons; 2. Evil demons; 3. Men. The actors of each class are distinguished by their masks. The first class—that is the Dragsheds or good genii—wear masks of enormous size and terrific aspect. The second class—that is the Evil demons—wear larger masks of a dark colour, and their garments are well padded to deaden the force of the blows showered upon them. The third class—that is the Men—wear the usual dress of human beings, and masks of a natural size and colour, while under their clothes they carry heavy wooden sticks, with which at times, during the progress of the drama, they belabour the demons. The gods also get well knocked about by the demons, much to the amusement of the spectators.

The drama is preceded by the recital of hymns and prayers and by

^{&#}x27;These good deities, according to Schlagintweit, are represented with formidable countenances and dark complexions, and a third eye in the forebend—probably the eye of wisdom, as in the Dhyani-Bucklins (see p. 203 of these Lectures).

noisy music. The Drugsheds occupy the centre, the men are on their right and the demous on their left. At short intervals the men and the demons execute slow dances, each group by itself. At Last, an evil spirit and a man step forth. The evil spirit then tries, in a plansible speech, to tempt the man to violate some precept of morality. while other evil spirits approach and claime in. The man at first stands firm, but gradually gives way and is about to yield, when other men come forward and entrest him not to be seduced by the artful suggestions of the demons. He is then closely pressed by the two opposite parties, but in the end takes the advice of his human counsellors. Upon this all the men break out into proise of the Dragsheds, to whose presence and assistance they ascribe the victory. The Dragsheds now proceed to punish the evil demons. The leading Dragshed, who is distinguished by an unusually large yellow mask, advances against them surrounded by about a dozen followers. Other Dragsheds next rush out from the back-ground, shoot arrows, throw stones, and even fire with maskets upon the demons, while the men belabour them with their sticks, hitherto concealed under their clothes. The demons are routed, and run in every direction pursued by the good genii. The drawn nuncledes by all the actors (men and demons included) singing bymas in honour of the victorious tatelary genii.

Among the spectators (at the performance witnessed by Mrs. Bridges at Leh) were six deities, represented by six Lāmas scated on a bench with umbrellas over their bends. They had incense swung before them by attendant priests.

This curious dramatic performance is paralleled in India by the Hindū drama called Prabodha-candrodaya, 'Rise of the moon of true knowledge,' in which we have Faith, Volition, Opinion, Imagination, Contemplation, Devotion, Quietude, Friendship, &c., on one side; Error, Self-conceit, Hypocrisy, Love, Passion, Anger, Avarice, on the other. The two sets of characters are, of course, opposed to each other, the object of the play being to show how the orthodox faith of the Hindus became victorious over the erroneous doctrine of the Buddha—the Buddhists and other heretical sects being represented as adherents of the losing side.

Then—to take a parallel nearer home—we find similar religious dramas acted in England not so very long ago (about the time of Henry VIII). For example, in the old English morality play, called 'Every-man,' some of the dramatis personse on the one side are—God, Death, Every-man, Fellowship, Kindred, Good-deeds, Knowledge, Confession, Beauty, Strength, Discretion; while on the other are personifications of the opposite qualities. Then, again, in 'Lusty Juventus,' we have a medley of Good Counsel, Knowledge, Satan, Hypocrisy, Fellowship, Abominable Living, God's Merciful Promises.

And here with reference to the supposed contest continually going on between good and evil, and the participation of human beings in this terrible struggle, we may note that the mystical thunderbolt called Dorje (p. 322) is not the only implement of spiritual warfare employed by the Lāmas against the demons. Another important weapon is the Phurbu or 'nail,' described as triangular and wedge-shaped, with the thin end very sharp-pointed, and with the head of Tamdin (a particular Dragshed - Haya-griva, noted for his power) emerging from the broad end and surmounted by a half-thunderbolt for a handle.

According to Schlagintweit, this weapon is often made of cardboard, on which mystical sentences (Dhāraṇīs) in

See the account of the female demons called Tannas at p. 457 of these Lectures.

Sanskrit are inscribed, some against the demons of the South, some against those of the East, and some against those of the South-east. In case of illness a Lāma goes round the house turning the point of the Phurbu in all directions and uttering magical spells.

Most of the Dhārams end with the syllables Hām phat, the potency of which in scaring evil demons is irresistible. Many charms begin with Ah Tamdin.

Those Phurbus are considered most efficacious which are inscribed with mystical syllables and words composed by either the Dalui Lāma or Panchen Lāma. These are sold for large sums. It is said (Schlagintweit, 260) that such Phurbus form an important article of trade for the Mongolian pilgrims returning from Tibet.

I was fortunate enough to meet with a remarkable specimen of a magical weapon of this kind (called Phur-pa by Jäschke) made of metal, and shaped like a dagger with three edges, one for each of the three classes of demons inhabiting the three quarters. The handle is composed of a Dorje (p. 322), and is surmounted by carvings of the heads of the three most powerful Dragsheds. I here give a representation of it.



¹ The shape is not quite the same as that of the Phurbu, but there can be no doubt of its being a kindred weapon. I purchased my specimen at Dārjiling, and was assured that it came from Tibet, and was used by the Tibetaus in the same way as the Phurbu.

It may be easily understood that among a people, steeped in superstition, a man armed with such a weapon as this—composed of the heads of three potent genii, a divine thunderbolt and a triple-edged dagger would be regarded as a match for the whole demonhost.

In Burma the tattooing of mystical squares, triangles and cabalistic diagrams and figures on various parts of the body, seems to be regarded as a sufficient substitute for the use of magical weapons, and is held to be highly efficacious,

Obviously we may contrast the Christian armoury described by S. Paul (Ephes. vi. 11), 'the shield of faith and the sword of the Spirit.' We might also contrast the words of Christ, 'Rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rather rejoice, because your names are written in heaven' (S. Luke x. 20).

Domestic Rites and Usages.

I now pass on to domestic rites and usages, which are as numerous and important in Buddhist countries as in India. It is said, indeed, that in Tibet and Mongolia no one is so poor as not to possess an altar in his dwelling on which he daily lays his offerings, and before which he performs devotions.

In Ceylon and Burma certain ceremonies take place soon after the birth of a child. Mr. Scott, describing those in Burma, says that a fortnight after birth a fortunate day and hour is fixed by an astrologer for the naming of the infant. A feast is prepared, and all the friends and relations of the family are invited. 'The child's head is usually washed for the first time on this day,' and some one suggests a name.

The name actually given appears to be a matter of choice, but this is not so. The consonants of the language are divided into groups, which are assigned to the days of the week, Sunday having all the vowels to itself.

'It is an invariable rule in all respectable families that the child's name must begin with one of the letters belonging to the day on which it was born, but within these limits any name may be chosen.' A common belief is that, according to the day of the week (or rather the constellation representing that day) on which a child is born, so will its character be.

In this way every person's probable characteristics may be inferred. For example, a man born on a Monday is likely to be jealous; on Tuesday, honest; on Wednesday, hot-tempered—but soon appeased—this characteristic being intensified under the influence of Rāhu!.

Then, again, if born on a Thursday, a man will probably be mild; on Friday, talkntive; on Saturday, ill-tempered and quarrelsome; on Sunday, parsimonious. Saturday is a bad day for everything. Not only has every day its special character and its fixed letters, but there is also (according to Mr. Scott) a particular animal assigned to symbolize it—for example, a guinea-pig stands for Friday; a dragon for Saturday; a tiger for Monday—and red or yellow wax candles are made in

See 'Brahmanism and Hindúism,' p. 345-

the forms of these animals to be offered at the Pagoda by the pious. Each worshipper offers the creaturecandle representing his birth-day.

Then a careful note is made of the exact hour of birth, with the important object of drawing up the child's horoscope. This may be delayed till the fifth or sixth year, and a Brāhman astrologer may be called in for the purpose. He records the year, the month, the day and hour at which the child was born; the name given to it and the planet in the ascendant at the moment. All this is scratched neatly on a palmleaf with a metal style. On the other side are a number of cabalistic squares and numbers from which future calculations may be made.

A person born on Monday remains under the influence of the moon for fifteen years. Then he passes under Mars for eight years. At the age of twenty-three Mercury presides over him, and so on through all the planets to the end of his life, which may be protracted to 108 years.

Rahu, and especially Saturn, have a particularly sinister influence. A man does most of the stupid and wicked things in his life while he is in Saturn's house. Other details will be found in 'Shway Yoe,'

The horoscope is carefully kept by the parents until the child is old enough to take care of it himself, and thenceforward it is guarded as a valuable possession.

All these Buddhist customs have their counterpart in the ceremonies of Brahmanism and Hinduism.

For example, the Hindus have their birth-ceremonies (Jāta-karman), and their name-giving ceremony (Namakaraṇa¹), and the latter is a solemn religious act fraught with momentous consequences in its bearing on a child's future. Hence Hindū boys are generally called after some god, or the name indicates that the child is the god's servant. Horoscopes, too, are as important in India as in Buddhist countries².

In India, too, all Brahman boys go through the ceremony of tensure and cutting off the hair.

Among the Buddhists of Burma a boy is sent to the monastery school at about the age of eight. Before he can become a novice he has to undergo the hair-abscission ceremony, followed by shaving every fort-night (as before described). But those who afterwards elect to lead a secular life wear long hair, to wash which is regarded as a kind of religious ceremonial, and only to be performed about once a month, partly, says Mr. Scott, because the washing of a Burman's luxuriant hair takes a long time, and partly because too frequent ablutions 'would disturb and irritate the good genius who dwells in the head and protects the man,'

It is considered unlacky to wash the head on a Monday, Friday, or Saturday; and 'parents sending their boy to a monastery must remember not to cut his bair off on a Monday, or on a Friday, or on his birth-day,'

It is noticeable that a kind of baptism is practised in Tibet and Mongolia. It is usual to sprinkle

See my work on Brahmanism and Hinduism, pp. 357, 358, 370, etc.

See the translation of a horoscope given in Brähmanism and Hinduism, p. 373.

children with conscerated water, or even to immerse them entirely on the third or tenth day after birth. This is called Khrus-sol (according to Jäschke).

The priest consecrates the water by reciting some formula, while candles and incense are burning. He then dips the child three times, blesses it, and gives it a name. After performing the ceremony, he draws up the infant's horoscope.

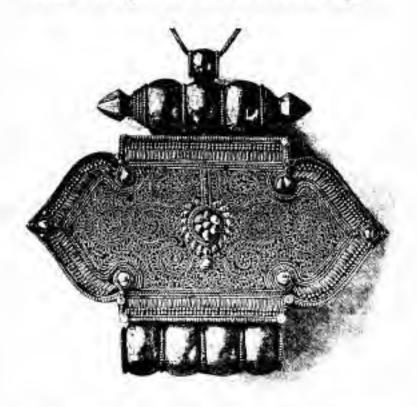
Then, so soon as the child can walk and talk, a second ceremony takes place, when prayers are said for its happy life, and an amulet or little bag is hung round its neck, filled with spells and charms against evil spirits and diseases.

The use of amule's (Sanskrit kava@a), charms and spells in Northern Buddhist countries is universal.

At Darjiling I noticed that among the crowds of persons who frequented the bazanr—many of whom were travellers from Tibet, Nepāl, Bhutan, and Sikkim—almost every one were an amulet, or a string of amulets round the neck. Most of these annulets are simply ornamental boxes or receptacles for supposed relics of saints, or for little images, or pictures, or for prayer-formularies, worn like breast-plates or phylacteries. They are composed of wood, bone, and not infrequently of beautifully-worked filigree silver, embossed and ornamented with turquoise. The shape is sometimes square, sometimes circular or curved, and brought round to a point '. I purchased several specimens, but the vendor of any analet in actual use in-

According to Schlagintweit, those amulets which are curved round to a point are intended to represent the leaf of the sacred fig-tree.

variably removed the contents before consenting to part with it. Here is a specimen of one of exceptionally beautiful design which was given to me by Mr. Sarat Chandra Das. It was taken from the neck of a woman in the bazaar, but not purchased without much difficulty.



We pass on next to the Buddhist marriage-coremony, This in Ceylon, Burma, Tibet, Mongolia, and indeed in all Buddhist countries, is properly a purely civil contract witnessed only by parents and guardians. We have already pointed out, that true Buddhism considers celibacy to be the only sure means of attaining real sanctity of character. Consistently with this idea, it has not prescribed any religious ceremony to be performed by monks or priests, as a condition of the validity of marriage.

Hence among Buddhists the ceremony of marriage is very simple, and has no religious character, or at any rate no complicated religious observances connected with it, as among the Hindus. In fact the celibate monks of true Buddhism would be much scandalized if they were asked to take part in the celebration of a wedding, or even to ratify it by their presence.

The principal ceremony consists in a feast given by the bridegroom or his parents, to which all the relations, friends, and neighbours are invited. Nevertheless, in most Buddhist countries in the present day the monks manage to have some remunerative work to do in connexion with weddings; for their business is to fix the most anspicious days for the performance of the ceremony, in return for which they receive offerings of various kinds. We know that in India astrology is a chief factor in all marriage-arrangements. Similarly in most Buddhist countries no wedding can take place till the astrologer, who is usually a monk-priest, has been

^{&#}x27; In this it did good service, at least for a time; for the cost of nurriage-ceremonies among the Hindus often cripples the resources of a family for years. The marriage of the poorest persons sometimes entails expenses in gifts to the Brahmans, etc., to the amount of goorupees.

^{*} Mr. Scott points out in his 'Burman' that this is especially the

consulted as to lucky and unlucky combinations, and the benign or laleful aspects of planets and stars. For example, in Burma, Saturdays and Thursdays are pronounced unlucky days, and it would be the height of imprudence to marry in certain months of the year. Then, again, a woman born on a Friday would be guilty of utter folly if she married a man born on a Monday, seeing that one or other would soon die³; and so on through a long list of auspicious and inauspicious potentialities.

It should, however, be set down to the credit of Buddhism that wives and daughters are not imprisoned in Zanānas, as among Hindūs and Mnhammadans. I was present at an evening-party given by a rich native of Ceylon, when the ladies of the family were introduced to the European guests, and conversed freely with the rest of the company. Nor is the marriage of mere boys and girls insisted on in Buddhist countries as in India. The bridegroom is seldom of a less age than eighteen or nineteen.

Then, again, not only births and marriages, but illnesses and death are in the present day a source of revenue to the Buddhist monkhood.

First, as to sickness.

In Ceylon, when any one is dangerously ill, the monk-priest is summoned from the neighbouring Vihara, after first sending offerings of flowers, oil, and food. Then a temporary preaching-place is erected near the house, and all the relatives and friends, and if possible

^{*} Scott's ' Burman,' p. 125.

the sick man bimself, listen to the reading of the Law (Bana) for about six bours. The part especially read and intoned is the Ratna-valiya section of the Pirit (see p. 317). After the Bana a number of offerings are given to the reciting priest, including a piece of calico, one end of which is held by the priest, and the other by the sick man. Then the priest pronounces a benediction, and says words to the following effect:—'By reverence do the wise secure health, by almsgiving do they lay up treasures for themselves'.'

When the sick man is likely to die the priest repeats the Three-refuge formula (p. 78), the five commandments (p. 126), and the Sati-patthana Sutta (p. 49).

In Burma, if an epidemic happens to break out in any village, the people begin by painting the supposed figure of an evil spirit on a common earthenware waterpot, and then solemnly smashing it to pieces at sunset with a heavy stick? Then as soon as it gets dark all the villagers shout, yell, shriek, and make every kind of deafening din, with the hope of frightening away the evil spirit who has caused the disease. This process is continued for three nights, and if no good result follows the monk-priests are called in from the monastery. They recite the ten precepts, chant the Law upand down the road, and intone a particular sermon of the Buddha, by the preaching of which he once drove

My authority for this is Mr. J. F. Dickson's pumplifet called Notes and illustrations of Buddhism,' etc.

² Scott's Burman, i. 282.

away a pestilence. These means are, of course, not effective unless abundant alms and gifts are bestowed upon the monastery.

According to Koeppen and Huc the art of medicine in Northern Buddhist countries is practised exclusively by the Lamas. The theory is that there are 140 different maladies, and that most of these are caused by devils. The monk-priests are the sole doctors, and a sick person can only be cured by them. One process is simple. It begins by the Lama doctor writing the name of a remedy upon a morsel of paper, moistening it with saliva, and rolling it into a pill. The patient takes the paper pellet with as much faith as if he were swallowing the veritable drug. Many Mongols believe that 'it is precisely the same, whether you swallow a drug or its written appellation.' Then, 'if the patient be poor, the devil is a little one, and may be dislodged by a few prayers; but, if he be rich, the case is different; fine clothes, handsome boots, or even a good horse must be presented, or he will not consent to turn out."

A very effective medicine may be composed of the bones of some pious Lama ground into a powder. This may be given alone or in combination with other substances.

It appears to be essential that the prayers recited on these occasions should be accompanied by terrific noises. M. Huc relates a story of an old woman—the aunt of a certain chief—who was one day attacked by intermittent fever. The Lama, of course, announced that a devil had possession of her body; and so in the evening he and eight other Lamas began operations for its expulsion. First they made a little figure or manikin of dried herbs, which they called the devil of intermittent This they stuck upright in the tent of the sick woman. Then at eleven o'clock at night the Lamas ranged themselves at the back of the tent, armed with bells, tambourines, conch-shells, and other noisy instruments. Nine members of the family closed the circle in front, crouching on the ground, while the old woman remained seated on her beels in front of the manikin. Next, 'at a given signal, the orchestra performed an overture capable of scuring away the most imperturbable and obstinate devil, while all the secular assistants beat time with their hands to the hubbub of the instruments and the howling of the prayers. When this demoniacal music was over, the chief Lama began his exorcisms, scattering millet seeds around as be proceeded; sometimes speaking low, sometimes in stentorian tones. Then, appearing to throw himself into a passion, he addressed animated appeals, with violent gesticulation, to the manikin.' Finally, after further incantations, he gave a signal; the Lamas thundered out a noisy chorus, the instruments added to the din, and the members of the family rushing out in file, made the circuit of the tent, striking it frantically with stakes, and uttering terrific cries. Finally, the chief Lama and his assistants, after joining in the yells, set fire to the manikin. This ended the ceremony; the demon being compelled to beat a retreat.

Mr. Sarat Chandra Das has given an account of a somewhat similar ceremony in Tibet performed by some Lamas to cure him of a sickness. An image representing the patient, and supposed to resemble him, was constructed, and a suit of his clothes placed in front of it, together with portions of his usual food and drink. Two Lāmas then muttered mystic sentences, ringing a bell, waving a Dorje (see p. 323 of these Lectures), and twisting their fingers and lands into the mysterious shapes called Mudrā (p. 241). Next they broke out into alternate exhortations and threats, and at the conclusion of the ceremony the officiating priests supplicated the lord of death (Yama) to accept the image in place of the moribund man.

On another occasion, when Mr. Sarat Chandra Dūs was seriously ill in Tibet, an effective method of curing his disease was proposed to him, and, with his consent, actually carried out. This mainly consisted in the ransoming of fish-life. A certain Lāma started off for a fisherman's village, and in a short time returned in a high state of satisfaction. He had saved the lives of five hundred fishes for the benefit of the sick man. The merit of this deed was credited to the patient on his repeating the following prayer:—

'By virtue of my having ransomed the lives of these animals, let health, longevity, prosperity, and happiness perpetually accrue to me,'

In the same way in Burma, in times of great heat and drought, when the ponds and tanks appear to be on the point of drying up, it is held to be a work of enormous merit to rescue fish, put them in jars, and transport them alive to the rivers. (See Scott's 'Burman,' ii. 43.)

Similarly a bird-catcher will sell live birds to pious persons, that they may gain merit by releasing them. We pass on, in the next place, to the usages and ceremonies common at death.

If a man's soul is to be separated from his body properly and peacefully, so as not to hurt the survivors, and in a manner likely to cause a happy re-birth for himself, alms must be bestowed on the monk-priests, and their presence must be invited for the repetition of prayers. In Ceylon and Burma monks go to the houses of mourners and repeat portions of the Pirit (see p. 317).

In Tibet the priest not only recites prayers but compresses the skull till it appears to crack, or clse the hair is torn off and a little incision is made, to enable the dying man's soul to escape. The priest then settles what method of burial is to be followed, and the place, day and hour, all of which depend on astrological combinations, known only to him.

The method of disposing of a dead body differs in all Buddhist countries according to station, condition, rank, and wealth.

'In Ceylon the bodies of monks are all burnt, and the cremation ceremonies are carried out under decorated arches or canopies, which are never removed, but left to crumble away.

In Burma the cremation of a monk distinguished for sanctity is an affair of great state and ceremonial. The body (see Mr. Scott's 'Burman,' ii. 331) is first embalmed, and next tightly wrapped in white cloth, which is varnished and afterwards covered with gold-leaf. The corpse thus gilded is placed in an unclosed inner coffin, and left exposed to view for a considerable time. When fastened down, the inner coffin is covered with gold-leaf, like the body. An outer sarcophagus is then prepared, and painted to represent scenes from the lives of the Buddha. This is placed in a building erected for the purpose, and there the body lies in state for several months, while a constant line of pilgrimworshippers pass in and out. In process of time, when enough money for the expenses has been collected, a grand cremation takes place under a lofty canopy, which on special occasions may be fifty or sixty feet high. The calcined bones are then reverentially collected, and either buried near the temple or pounded and made up into a paste, with which an image of the Buddha is constructed for worship in the monastery.

In Tibet the bodies of the Grand Lämas are generally embalmed and preserved in monuments or Stūpas. Other Lāmas and monks distinguished for sanctity are burnt, and their ashes are either distributed as relies, or preserved in idols or in small Dāgabas. Kings, princes, and great men are also burnt, and of course with much ceremony and repetition of prayers. Then for a long time afterwards prayers continue to be recited by the priests, the object being to propitiate Yama, god of Death, and to deliver the deceased from the possible purgatorial torments of one of the hells. It is said that this repetition of prayers is prolonged, in the case of the rich, for seven weeks, and in the case of princes, for a whole year.

Mr. J. Ware Edgar, C. S. I., in his interesting Report of his visit to Sikkim in 1873, gives a description of the remarkable funeral ceremonies performed on the occasion of the death of the Rājā of Sikkim's sister (see p. 62), which I here abbreviate:—

The Raja's sister had died a few days after his return to Choombi. The body had been buried at Choombi, but her clothes had been sent to Toomlong, and her saul was supposed to accompany them. There a lay-figure meant to represent her, dressed in her costome as a non. and wearing a gilt mitre and a long white veil, was placed on a kind of throne to the right of the great altar in the principal chapel. Before the figure was a table, on which were different kinds of food. On another table were various things which had belonged to her, while on a third, ros little brass lamps were arranged in rows. Some days afterwards the lay-figure of the nun was taken to Pemyangchi. There, for three days the figure was seated before the altar, and the monks chanted the litanies for her soul, which had accompanied her clothes from Choombi. On the third day towards evening the teacup of the nun was freshly filled with ten and all the monks solemnly drunk ten with her. The manks chanted the litanies, and the Head Lama went through some elaborate aeremonies. At about nine o'clock the chanting censed, and the Lama made a long speech to the soul of the num, in which he told her that all that could be done to make her journey to another world easy, had been done, and that now she would have to no alone and numeristed to appear before the King and Judge of the dead.

You will have to leave your robes, your mitre, and your veil," said he, 'and clad in the black garment of your sine, or in the shining garment of your good deeds, you will be shown the mirror of the just King. Your gold and silver, your rank, your good name will not help you, when your good deeds are weighed against your evil deeds, in the scales of the King. If you have done ill, you will be punished; but if your sine are found to be lighter than your good works, your reward will be great indeed."

When the Lama had finished his address, some of the monks took down the lay-figure and undressed it, while others formed a procession and conducted the soul of the nun into the darkness outside the monastery, with a discordant noise of couch-shells, thigh-bone trumpets, Tibetan flutes, gongs, cymbals, tambourines, and drums.

In Japan small portions of the calcined remains (often not larger than peas) are preserved in globularglass shrines, and then duly honoured and worshipped.

The method of disposing of the dead bodies of the

laity and of the common people is generally much more simple. In most Buddhist countries laymen are buried, and the priests lead the processions to the grave. In Ceylon, the laity are certainly, as a rule, buried and not burnt.

In Burma rich laymon are also generally buried, and, according to Mr. Scott, the funeral is a grand affair.

The body is swathed in new white cotton cloth, leaving the face uncovered. A piece of gold or silver is placed between the teeth to serve as ferry-money over the Buddhist Styx—the terrible river of death which all deceased persons are compelled to pass. This river is clearly the counterpart of the Vaitarani of the Hindus (see 'Brahmanism and Hinduism,' p. 297).

If the dead man's family is poor, a copper coin or even a betel nut will suffice. Next the monks are sent for, their immediate presence being necessary to keep off the evil spirits who always swarm near a corpse. After an interval the body is placed in a coffin, which is sometimes gilded and placed on a bier under a canopy. When the right day arrives for the funeral, a long procession is formed, with a number of priests in proportion to the amount of alms bestowed, and a crowd of relations, friends, and neighbours. Occasionally those who carry the bier stop and go through a sort of solemn dance, while mournful tunes are played by the musicians and funeral dirges are sung. The body is finally buried in a cemetery to the west of the town or village, A funeral must never go to the north or to the east. The ceremony concludes by alms to the priests, who in

return intone the commandments and other portions of the Law in Päli. After the funeral, great festivities go on in the family-abode for the benefit of the crowds who come to offer condolence. Then the presence of the priests is again needed, and has to be paid for by almsto the monastery, or the evil spirits, who are sure to hang about, cannot be got rid of. In some parts of Burma the cremation of rich laymen is not uncommon, and the ashes are either deposited in Dagabas—that is, in small Stūpas or Pagodas —or are pounded into paste and made into miniature Stūpas (p. 506) or into small images of the Buddha for worship at the domestic altar.

In Tibet and Mongolia the corpses of the laity, especially of the poor, are often exposed in the fields, in deserts, or on mountain tops, or rocks, or in lonely ravines, or sometimes in open places enclosed for the purpose. Occasionally they are covered with a thin layer of earth or loose stones. Usually they are devoured by vultures, dogs, and other animals.

It seems that in Lhassa certain dogs are kept for that purpose ². A class of professional men exist there, whose business it is to cut up dead bodies, and throw the flesh piecemeal to dogs and vultures. Even the bones are sometimes pounded, and the dust, being mixed with flour, is given to be devoured. The strange thing is, that this kind of burial is thought desirable, and even honourable. To be eaten up by sacred dogs after death

This is mentioned by Hue as well as by Koeppen.

¹ The Digales of laymen have no umbrellas at the top (res p. 505). This privilege is only accorded to the mankhood (Scott's 'Barman').

is productive of great merit, and leads to re-birth in bigher forms. Dogs are the mausoleums of Lhassa.

According to M. Huc, a common funeral ceremony among the Mongols consists in carrying the corpse to the summit of a mountain, or to the bottom of a ravine. The body is walled up in a sort of kilu of a pyramidal form, with a small door at the bottom, and an opening at the top to maintain a current of air, and allow the smoke to escape. During the combustion the Lāmas recite prayers. When the corpse is consumed, the kiln is demolished. Then the bones are collected and carried to the Grand Lāma, who reduces them to a powder, and, after adding an equal quantity of wheaten flour, kneads the whole carefully, and, with his own hands, fashions a number of cakes of various sizes. These are afterwards placed in a pyramidal Stūpa, which has been built beforehand in some auspicious place.

The soil of the famous monastery of the Five Towers in the province of Shan Si, is said to be so holy that those interred there are sure to effect a good transmigration. In the deserts of Tartary, Mongols are frequently seen carrying on their shoulders the bones of their kindred, and journeying to the Five Towers—there to purchase, almost at its weight in gold, a little surface of ground whereon to erect a small Stūpa. Some of them undertake a toilsome journey of a whole year's duration, to reach this holy spot (see p. 435).

Burial in rivers, which is highly prized by the Hindus, is not in favour among Buddhists. Only very poor people allow their dead to be thrown into rivers, though this is the only kind of Buddhist burial mentioned by Alberüni (Sachau, ii. 169). Buddhism, from the first, repudiated the Hindū funeral ceremonies called Śrāddhas, which are still a great incubus on the people. The poorest man in India, if he be of high caste, cannot perform a Śrāddha for a relation for a less sum than forty rupees, given in fees to the priests. Buddhism did good service in delivering the people from this burden, but in Northern countries it established something similar in the Bardo ceremony (p. 334).

Formularies of Prayer.

With regard to prayer-formularies, there is in modern times a good deal of difference between Southern and Northern Buddhist countries. We have seen that the three-refuge formulary was the sole prayer of early Buddhists. Certain orthodox men whom I met in Ceylon, maintained to me that this is the only legitimate form of prayer that ought to be used even in the present day. It is certainly a form which is accepted and employed by all Buddhists of whatever nationality.

Tsong Khapa, it is said, established at Lhāssa an annual prayer-congregation called Monlam Chenpo (see p. 386). But the most common prayer used in Tibet is a mere formulary, the constant repetition of which is one of the most amazing instances of the tyranny of superstition to be found in any part of the world.

It consists of the six-syllabled sentence, Om manipadme Hum, 'Om! the Jewel in the Lotus! Hum!'

This prayer, or rather mystical sentence, is supposed

to have been composed by Padma-pani (Avalokitesvara), and to have reference to his own manifestation as the Patron-Saint of Tibet! It is sometimes called the Mani or 'Jewel' prayer, and, if brevity is a valuable quality, its excellence is undeniable, since it consists of merely two Sanskrit words, between two mystical, untranslatable anspicious ejaculations, On and Hum'.

Doubtless the prayer really owes its origin to the close connexion which sprang up between Northern Buddhism and Saivism. The worshippers of Siva have always used (compare p. 240) similar mystical sentences and syllables called Dhäranis, to which a kind of miraculous efficacy is attributed. In all probability an occult meaning underlies the 'Jewel-lotus' formula, and my own belief is that the majority of those who repeat it are ignorantly doing homage to the self-generative power supposed to inhere in the universo—a power pointed at by the popular Sankhyn theory of the union of Prakriti and Purusha, and by the universal worship of the Linga and Yoni throughout India. No thoughtful person can have travelled much in India without being impressed with this.

³ He is sometimes represented scated on a Lotus, or boro from a Lotus.

³ Om is borrowed from the Hindus. It is their most sacred cyllable, symbolical of their triad of gods, Brahma, Vishou, and Siva, denoted by the three mystical letter A, U, M (see my 'Brahmanism,' p. 402). When imported into Buddhism it may possibly symbolize the Buddhist triad. Om is sometimes translated by Hail! Hüm, as a particle of solemn ascent, is sometimes translated by Amen! I prefer to treat both Om and Hüm as untranslatable ejeculations.

^{*} I had formed this opinion long before I saw the same view hinted at in one of Koeppen's notes (see my 'Brähmanism and Hinduism,'

At all events, whatever be its origin and meaning. no other prayer used by human beings in any quarter of the globe is repeated so often. Every Tibetan believes it to be a panacea for all evil, a compendium of all knowledge, a treasury of all wisdom, a summary of all religion. But if you ask Northern Buddhists to give you the reason for this belief, very few are able to give an intelligible reply. According to the most learned doctors of philosophy who are to be found in Tibetan monasteries, it is certainly addressed to their patron deity Avalokitesvara, and the real secret of its efficacy lies in the fact, that each one of its six syllables has a potent influence on some one of the six Gatis or courses of being-that is to say, on some one of the six kinds of transmigration or transformation through which every living individual has to pass (see p. 121) 1.

The oftener, therefore, this mystical formula is repeated the shorter will be an individual's course (gati) through some of these six forms of existence, every one of which involves misery or evil. Or it may be that by repeating it he will be able to escape some of the six existences altogether.

Strange indeed as it may appear to us, it is impossible to shake the faith of a Lamistic Buddhist in the

p. 33). It is certainly remarkable that the name Mani is applied to the male organ, and the female is compared to a lotus-blossom in the Kama-sketrus. I fully believe the formula to have a phallic menning, because Tibetan Buddhism is andoubtedly connected with Saivism.

¹ Some think, however, that the six syllables owe their efficacy to their symbolizing the six Paramitas or transcendent virtues.

absolutely infallible efficacy of his six favourite mystic syllables. He repeats them, not at all as if he were praying in a Christian sense, but as if he were a farmer intent on planting the very best seed in the most productive soil, and watering it incessantly according to the most scientific principles of irrigation. A bountiful harvest is absolutely certain to reward his efforts.

It need not, therefore, surprise us if these six syllables are murmured morning, noon, and night, by every man, woman, and child, wherever the Lamistic Hierarchy has extended. And, if not repeated by the voice, an incessant stream of repetition—an incessant scattering of the six mystic seeds—is kept going by the hand.

The words are written or printed on roll within roll of paper and inscribed in cylinders, which, when made to revolve either by educated monks or by illiterate laymen, have the same efficiency as if they were actually said or repeated. The revolutions are credited as so much prayer-merit, or, to speak more scientifically, as so much prayer-force, accumulated and stored up for the benefit of the person who revolves them.

The cylinder is generally made of metal, the prayer being engraved on the outside, as well as written on paper and inserted inside. It is held in the right hand and whirled round, like a child's toy, by means of a handle in a particular direction (with the sun). If made to revolve the other way, its rotations will be set down to the debtor rather than the creditor side of the owner's account. Here is a drawing of one of several hand-cylinders (commonly called prayer-wheels or prayer-mills: Tibetan, Chos-kor or Chos-kyi or Khor-lo), obtained by me at Darjiling:—



Then, again, the words of the prayer are written or printed millions and millions of times on rolls or strips of paper, and enclosed in much larger barrel-like cylinders, which are set up in temples, chapels, monasteries, corridors, passages, houses, villages, by the road side, and in every possible corner, for the convenience of the mass of the people who are too ignorant to read, and too indolent to engage in continuous oral repetition.

It sometimes happens that quarrels arise from rival claims in regard to the use of such prayer-cylinders. In illustration of this an amusing story is told by the French missionaries:—

³ Dr. Schlagintweit mentions (p. 121) that when Baron Schilling visited a certain convent be found the Linux occupied in preparing roo million copies of Om mani palme Hum to be inserted in a prayer-cylinder. He also states that the inscription relating to the foundation of the momentary of Hemis in Ludik (see p. 433 of these Lectures) records the acting up of 300,000 prayer-cylinders along the walls and passages of the momentary.

One day when they happened to be passing a praying-machine, set up near a menastery, they saw two Lamas engaged in a violent quarrel; and, as it appeared, all on account of their zeal for their prayers, The fact was that one Lama had come, and, having set the barrel in motion for his own benefit, was retiring modestly and complacently to his own abode, when happening to turn his head to enjoy the spectacle of the wheel's pious revolutions, he saw the other Lama stop it, and set it whirling again for himself. Indignant, of course, at this unwarrantable interference with his own devotions, he ran back; and in his turn put a stop to his rival's piety, and both of them continued this kind of demonstration for some time, till at last losing patience they proceeded to menaces, and then to blows, when an old Lama came out of a neighbouring cell, and brought the difficulty to a peaceful termination by himself twirling the prayer-barrel for the benefit of both parties.

On the occasion of my visiting Darjiling in 1884, I was desirous of judging for myself of the method of using these remarkable instruments of religion. I therefore, soon after my arrival, walked to a Buddhist temple near the town. There I found several large barrel-like cylinders set up close together in a row at the entrance, so that no one might pass in without giving them at least one twirl, or by a rapid sweep of his hand might set them all twirling at once. Inside the entrance-portico a shrivelled and exceptionally hideous old woman was seated on the ground. In her left hand she held a small portable prayer-cylinder,

which she kept in perpetual revolution. In her right hand was a cord connected with a huge barrel-like cylinder, which with some exertion she made to rotate on its axis by help of a crank, while she kept muttering Om mani pamme Hānı (so she pronounced it) with amazing rapidity. In this way she completed at least sixty oral repetitions every minute, without reckoning the infinite number of rotatory repetitions accomplished simultaneously by her two bands. And all this was done with an appearance of apathy and mental vacuity in her withered face, which was so distressing and melancholy to behold, that the spectacle will never be effaced from my memory. In truth the venerable dame seemed to be sublimely unconscious that any effort of thought or concentration of either mind or heart was needed to make prayer of any value at all.

And the men of Tibet are quite as much slaves to this superstition as the women. A friend of mine when staying at Dārjiling had some conversation on serious subjects with an apparently sensible native, and observed with surprise that all the while he was engaged in talking with the Buddhist, the latter continued diligently whirling a prayer-cylinder with great velocity. My friend, being unacquainted with Tibetan customs, came away from his colloquy under the impression that Buddhists regard Christians as dangerous lunatics possessed with evil spirits, which require specially active measures in the way of exoreism. It did not occur to him that the Buddhist was merely intent on redeeming every instant of time for the purpose of storing up merit by prayer. And the hold which this extraordinary superstition has upon the population is still more forcibly impressed on the traveller who penetrates into the regions beyond Därjiling. He may there see immense prayer-cylinders set up like mills, and kept in incessant revolution, not by the will or hand of man, but by the blind, unconscious force of wind and water.

It is even said that great mechanical ingenuity is displayed by the monks in some parts of Tibet, their inventive powers being stimulated by a burning desire to economize time and labour in the production of prayer-merit by machinery.

An intricate arrangement of huge wheels and other wheels within wheels, like the works of a clock, is connected with rows of cylinders and made to revolve rapidly by means of heavy weights. An infinite number of prayers are repeated in this manner by a single monk, who takes a minute or two to wind up the complicated spiritual machinery, and then hastens to help his brothers in industrial occupations—the whole fraternity feeling that the ingenious contrivance of praying by clock-work enables them to promote the common weal by making the most of both worlds. The story goes that, in times of special need and emergency, additional weights are attached to the machinery, and, of course, increased cogency given to the rotatory prayers. It is to be hoped that when European inventions find their way across the Himalayas, steam-power may not be pressed into the service of these gross superstitions.

The use of prayer-wheels of various kinds is also common in Japan, as described in Sir Edward Reed's work. But praying by machinery is not all. Beneficial results are believed to accrue through the carving of the all-powerful six syllables on every conceivable object.

The traveller, as he walks along, sees the mystic words impressed on the stones at his feet, on rocks, doors, monuments, and trees. Indeed, rich and zealous Buddhists maintain at their own expense, companies of Lamas for the sole object of propagating the Mani-padme formula. These strange missionaries may occasionally be encountered, chisel and hammer in hand, traversing field, hill, dale, and desert, their only mission being to engrave the sacred six syllables on every rock in their path (Huc, ii. 194).

Absolutely incalculable is the grand total of Manipadmes thus placed to the credit of the world of living beings during the short space of twenty-four hours. Yet, at the end of the New Year's festival in Tibet, the chief Lāma will sometimes pretend to proclaim the exact sum of mystic syllables supposed to have been repeated during its continuance, amounting perhaps to billions upon billions, for the consolation of all those faithful Buddhists who, oppressed by the evils of life, are seeking for some antidote.

But the 'jewel-lotus' is not the only antidote. There are other short prayer-formularies, such as Om Vajra-pāṇi-Hūm (addressed to the Bodhi-sattva Vajra-pāṇi, p. 201), and other still more mystical ejaculations (such as Om ah Hūm); and magical sentences, called Dhāranī, and profoundly significant monosyllables, such as Ram, Phat, Hrim, Hrīm, Rim, Rīm, Hrīs.

And here in connexion with the ubiquity of prayer-

formularies, we must not omit to notice the Prayingwalls, that is, the long stone walls or banks called (from the 'jewel-lotus' prayer inscribed upon them) Mani', or in the provincial dialect Man Dang (variously Mandong, Mendong).

These remarkable stone-structures, peculiar to Lamism, are creeted by the side of high-roads, and in
frequented thoroughfares, with the simple object of
aiding in the accumulation of prayer-merit. Some are
only a few feet long, six feet high, and from six to
twelve feet broad; others have been met with nearly
1000 yards long, with pyramidal Stūpas² or Čaityas
(in Tibetan Chortens) at each end. Inserted in these
walls are slabs on which the six-syllabled, and other
prayer-formulas, and sometimes images of saints, are
carved and dedicated as votive offerings. Passing
travellers acquire merit by keeping them on their left
side ', so that they may follow the letters of the inscription without necessarily repeating the words '.

In the same connexion we may advert to Prayingflags and Praying-staffs. And I may mention that, while staying at Dürjiling, I visited a village to which a monastery is attached, and, on approaching the spot, was surprised to see the whole neighbourhood studded with poles from which long flags were flying. On the tops

The Mani-padme prayer is itself for shortness often called Mani-

Stüpas and Čaityas are explained at p. 504.

^{&#}x27; So say's Schlagintweit, but he adds that in some places passers by keep them to the right. Mr. Sarat Chandra Das also mentions this.

According to Sir Richard Temple (Journal, p. 198) travellers walk first on one side and then on the other.

of the poles were carious ornaments like caps, made of coloured cloth with flounces. I naturally supposed that I had arrived on a gala day, and that at least a great Lama or other high functionary was expected, perhaps to lay the first stone of some new building connected with the monastery. On inquiry, however, I ascertained that there was nothing unusual about the appearance of the village, which was merely praying, according to custom, by means of its flag-staffs. Every time the wind, which happened to be blowing fresh, extended the long flags, a vast number of prayers were credited to the inhabitants who were themselves all absent, and probably hard at work either in the fields or at Dārjilfog.

I managed to obtain facsimiles of some of the flags. On them are inscribed various versions of the inevitable Mani-padme formulary, together with figures of the 'flying-horse' (Lungta, strictly rLun-rta, 'wind-horse') and other symbols, such as those of the Norbu gem² and of the Phurbu—which are held to be peculiarly efficacious in warding off evil spirits or neutralizing the diseases inflicted by them. Indeed in most cases these flags are regarded by the peasantry as talismans or charms to protect the village from the malice of mischievous ghosts and demons, believed to haunt the atmosphere and swarm everywhere around,

Here are some of the mystic formularies inscribed on

* The gent called Norbu is another of the seven treasures.

Schlagintweit (p. 253) says this is the horse which constitutes one of the seven treasures (see p. 528 of these Lectures). It brings good fortune to the man who keeps it flying on a flag.

my flags. They resemble Saiva Mantras and Dhāraṇis—that is, mystical words or sentences used as spells:—

Om mani padme Hûm Hring, Om Vajra-pāṇi Hûm, Om & Hūm, Om Vag-išvarī Mūm, Sarva-siddbi-phala Hūm, Om moni muni mahā-muni, Šākya-muni svāhā, Om vajra-sattva Hūm, Hulu hulu, Rulu rulu, Hūm Phat, etc. (Compare my Brāhmanism, etc. p. 197).

One flag in my possession has representations of four animals at the four corners, viz. a Tiger, Lion, Eagle, and Dragon —supposed to act as guards against evil spirits. It also has an inscription in Tibetan which was translated for me by Mr. Sarat Chandra Das, thus:—

Reverence be to the Buddhas and Bodhi-sattvas! Thus hath it been heard by me—once on a time when the adorable Sükya-Buddha was seated on a marble throne amid the gods of the Trayastriusa heaven, Indra, the Prince of Gods, arrived there, after being completely defeated by the demons (Asaras). Sociag the Buddha, and throwing himself at his feet, he thus reverentially addressed him:—"Oh, my Lord, we the gods of the Trayastriusa (heaven) have suffered a complete defeat at the hands of the demons; instruct us, what are we to do? how are we to triumph over our enemies?" To this the adorable one replied:—"O lord of gods, take this mystical formula called Gyatshar gyi tsemoi Panggyan, which, when repeated, will make you uncomparable. I, too, in my former existence of a Bodhi-sattva found it effections in securing victory."

It is of course a work of great merit to erect prayerflags. They form a conspicuous feature in every landscape throughout Tibet, fluttering on hills and in valleys, by the roadside, and on the river bank, on walls and on the tops of houses, in streets, squares, and gardens.

¹ Dr. Schlagintweit says that a Dharani to the following effect is often written on the flag; 'Tiger, Lion, Eagle, and Dragon, may they on-operate Sarva-du-du-hom! ('Tibetan Buddhism,' p. 255).

Then, again, the duty of a constant repetition of prayer-formulæ and mystical sentences has led Northern Buddhists to employ Rosaries, which were used both by Hindas and Buddhists long before they came into vogue in Europe. Without these necessary aids to devotion the long rounds of repetition could not be accurately completed. In Northern Buddhist countries rosaries ought to consist of 108 heads, which in Tibet are said to represent the 108 t volumes of the Kanjur. The same number of heads is used by the worshippers of Vishau, who use the rosary to aid them in repeating any one of the names of Vishau Soo times, the eight additional heads marking each century of repetitions.

The commonest Buddhist resaries are made of wood, or pebbles, or berries, or bone *; the more costly, of turquoise, coral, amber, or silver, or even of pearls and gems. If a resary made of the bones of some holy Lama can be procured, it is of course prized above all others. Sometimes a Dorje is appended, Northern Buddhist worshippers hold their resaries (like Roman Catholics) in the right hand, and move on the beads with the left, and they will do this while talking together or even quarrelling. In China and Japan Buddhist resaries are often arranged in two rings. They sometimes consist of enormous beads with relies in the central bead.

Be it observed, however, that the prayer-formularies

¹ The number 108 seems sacred, as the sole of Buddha's foot is said to have that number of marks upon it.

Secure of the Buddhist countries are satisfied with 30 or 40 beads.

of Buddhists are not always a mere unintelligible string of words and syllables, muttered, iterated, and reiterated with the aid of reseries. Their prayers sometimes contain lofty sentiments. For instance, the two vagabond mendicant monks seen by me at Därjiling (described at p. 267) went about chanting the following —

Reverence to all the noble Father-Lamas! I address this to the feet of being our patron saint. I, Milaraspa', sing it. If the soul be white (collightened), it must be white inside and outside. I am born in consequence of the works of this world. My cartily father is a sower of the seed of sin. My mother is the soil which receives the seed of sin. The child is myself tied to the father by the cord of sin. When you think of your earthly father, think also of your Lama (spiritual father). Your earthly father is the source of your sin. Your Lama frees you from sin.

But this song, which was repeated over and over again, invariably concluded by a repetition of the inevitable six-syllabled formula. This they repeated very rapidly, pronouncing it as usual, 'Om mani-pamme Hum,' and adding the mystical syllable Hrīs. Their chanting was accompanied by an incessont agitation of their Damaru or sacred drum, which I was able to purchase. It is shaped like two hemispheres, joined on their convex sides, and is encircled by sacred shells. It is sounded by means of buttons attached to two pendulous strips of leather. The sound made by these drums is out of all proportion to their size. It may be heard at a great distance, and is thought to be highly efficacious in frightening away evil spirits, who dislike loud noises

This is a great Tibetan soint, anthor of a hundred thousand songs.

² Translated for me by Mr. Sarat Chandra Das, who was my companion during part of my sojourn at Darjiling.

of all kinds. Here is an exact representation of the sacred drum now in my possession :--



Again, Dr. Eitel (Lectures, iii.) mentions a manual of daily prayer used by Northern Buddhists, which shows that striking words are sometimes chanted, though they may be in Sanskrit, and therefore unintelligible to those who repeat them. For instance, the following:—

'May all the Buddhas abide in me, instruct and enlighten me with knowledge and perfection, free me, deliver me, cleanse me, purify me; and may the whole universe be set free (Sarva-tathāgatā mām samāvasantu buddhyā siddhyā bodhaya vibodhaya moćaya vimočaya sodhaya visodhaya samantam moćaya)!'

Before, therefore, concluding this Lecture we must acknowledge, in fairness to the inhabitants of Tibet, that much of the spirit of religion may be mingled with their superstitions. The words of their prayers are not merely repeated by machinery, written on paper, and inscribed on rocks and stones. The voices of men and women, if not their thoughts, often go heartily with uttered prayers. The note of prayer is raised at all times and seasons—in the morning, mid-day, and evening, in private and in public, at home or abroad, in the midst of labour and idleness, in lying down and rising up, in moving about and keeping still, on the march and on the battle-field, on mournful occasions, and in the midst of joy and laughter. Nor is any one ashamed of praying aloud or praying together in the open streets and squares of crowded towns.

'There exists,' says the French Missionary (ii. 194),
'a very touching custom at Lhassa. In the evening,
just as the day is verging on its decline, all the Tibetans
stop business and meet together, men, women, and
children, according to their sex and age, in the principal parts of the town and in the public squares. As
soon as groups are formed, every one kneels down, and
they begin slowly and in undertones to chaut prayers.

*The religious concerts produced by these numerous assemblages create throughout the town a solemn harmony, which operates forcibly on the soul. The first time we witnessed this spectacle, we could not help drawing a painful comparison between this pagan town, where all prayed together, and the cities of Europe, where people would blush to make the sign of the cross in public.

LECTURE XIV.

Sacred Places.

It was only to be expected, that Buddhism, closely connected as it was with Brühmanism and Hindüism, and yet in some respects opposed to those systems, should have certain secred places and hallowed regions, some of which were identical with those of Brühmanism and Hindüism, and some peculiarly its own.

In the Maha-parinibhana-sutta (V. 16-22, Rhys Davids), we have the following declaration:—

"There are four places which the believing man should visit as a pilgrim with feelings of reverence and are. The place at which be can say, "Here the Tathagata (one of the names of Buddha, see p. 23) was born." The place at which he can say, "Here the Tathagata attained to perfect insight and enlightenment." The place at which he can say, "Here the Law was first preached by the Tathagata." The place at which he can say, "Here the Tathagata passed finally away in that after passing away which leaves nothing whatever behind" (see p. 142, note, and p. 477).

*And they who die, while with believing heart they journey on such pilgrimages, shall be reborn, in the happy realms of heaven.'

The Chinese traveller, Fā-hien, names the same four sacred places (Chap. xxxi.), and says that the situation of the four great Stūpas (see p. 504) has been fixed, namely, (1) where the Buddha was born, (2) where he attained wisdom, (3) where he began to turn the wheel of his Law, (4) where he attained Pari-nirvāṇa (p. 142). Compare engraving of sculpture opposite p. 477.

Elsewhere Fä-hien mentions two other sacrod spots the place where the Buddha discomfited the advocates of erroneous dectrines!, and the place where he descended after ascending to the Trayastripsa beaven (see p. 414 of this volume), to preach the Law to his mother (Legge's Fä-hien, 68).

These places are all situated within the area of the secred land of Buddhism (see map opposite p. 21);—that is to say, the land which was the scene of the Buddha's itineration for forty-five years—a region about 300 miles long, by nearly 200 broad, lying in Gangetic India, within the modern provinces of Oudh and Behar (Bihār for Vihāra), or the ancient kingdoms of Kosala and Magadha, and having Śrāvastī and Buddha-Gayā for its limit towards the north and south respectively.

It will be interesting to note a few particulars in regard to these and other sacred spots scattered throughout this region, in the following order: —Kapilavastu, Buddha-Gayā, Sārnāth near Benares, Rāja-gṛiha, Srāvastī (often written Śrāvastī), Vaisālī, Kausāmbi, Nālanda, Saňkāsya, Sūkeṭa (Ajūdhyā), Kanyā-kubja (Kanauj), Pāṭali-putra (Patnā), Kesariya, Kusi-nagara. The map opposite p. 21 will make these clear.

To begin with the Buddha's birth-place (see p. 21).

Kapila-vastu.

Kapila-vastu (in Pāli, Kapila-vatthu) was long searched for by archæologists in vain, but is now identified by

¹ Hionen Thong says that this place is near Proyaga (the modern Allahabad), and that Asaka built a Stupa there. (Beal, i, 231.)

General Sir A. Cunningham and Mr. Carlleyle with Bhuila, a village surrounded by buried brickwork in the Basti district under the Nepal mountains, about twentyfive miles north-east from Faizābād, twelve north-west from Basti, and one hundred and twenty north of Benares. Both Fa-hien (Legge, 67) and Hiouen Thrang describe the neighbouring Lumbini (Lavani) garden, where the Buddha was born from the right side of his mother (see p. 23, and engraving opposite p. 477). They also mention the Arrow-fountain where Gautama contended with others of his tribe in a shooting-match. The legend is (p. 24) that he gained the victory by shooting an arrow which passed through the target, buried itself in the ground, and caused a clear spring of water to flow forth (Legge, 65-67 : Beal, ii. 23, 24). This mane Sara-Kūpa, 'arrow-fountain,' has now been corrupted into Sar-Kuia (or Sar-Kuhiya), and the spot has been identified (Cunningham's 'Reports of Survey,' xii. 188).

It might have been expected that so sacred a place as Kapila-vastu—the birth-place of Buddha and the scene of his education and youthful exploits—would have been a favourite place of pilgrimage for Buddhists through all time; but we learn from the two Chinese travellers, that even in their day (from the fourth to the seventh century) the whole neighbourhood was a desert and the town in ruins (Beal, i. 50; ii. 14). The reason probably is that Hindūism gained the ascendancy over Buddhism in certain localities, and that when this happened the Brabmans took pains to obliterate all traces of the rival creed. In later times Muhammadan invasions contributed to the same result.

Buddha-Gayā.

This was the place where the Buddha obtained perfect knowledge and enlightenment after his sexennial course of fasting and meditation (see p. 31 of this volume). It is situated six or seven miles from the town of Gaya, and about sixty miles from Patnā and Bankipur. It is of all Buddhist sacred places the most sacred, and abounds in profoundly interesting memorials of early Buddhism.

Of course it was only to be expected that memorial structures intended to mark important epochs in the life of the extinct Buddha, and calculated to foster feelings of reverence in the minds of his followers, should have been erected at this and various other holy spots of ground consecrated by the presence and acts of Gautama on great occasions. And of all such Buddhist monuments the ancient pyramidal temple at Buddha-Gaya, which I visited in 1876 and 1884, is the most striking and full of interest. Probably a monument of some kind was erected there not very long after the Buddha's death, and Hionen Thsang (see p. 399) mentions the temple built there by Aśoku. temple which I saw on the occasion of my first visit was probably not built till the middle of the second century, but was erected on the foundation of Asoka's temple, the ruins of which are traceable under the present one. The materials consist of bluish bricks, plastered with lime. Hiouen Theang states that in his

General Sir A. Cunningham puts the date at about A.D. 150.



ASCISST BURELIET TROPES OF ALTHOUGH LIACL, OF IT APPLICATE IN 1880.

Fresh dead the major of the sectional control of the pair of Africa, people of the spential different Medicals.

[16] The second of the section of the second of the second

39 t

time it had eleven stories and an altitude of about 165 feet. It also had nickes in each story, with a golden statue of Buddha in each nicke. The whole was crowned with the representation of an Amalaka fruit (Emblie myrobalan) in gilt copper (Cunningham's Report, i. 5). The Burmese probably restored the temple between 1035 and 1078 a.b. Though fidling into decay in 1876, its appearance struck me as exceedingly imposing,—even more so than that of the grand pyramidal towers, built over the entrances to the great South Indian temples! The annexed engraving of this ancient monument as it appeared in 1880, before its restoration, is from a photograph by Mr. Beglar, taken on the spot, and enlarged by Mr. Austen.

The original object of its crection seems to have been simply and solely to serve as a monument, and not as a Dagaha or receptacle for relics. Very soon, however, monuments of this kind were made to enshrine images, and were used as temples and places of worship. On inquiry I found that the ancient image or images of Buddha, which once occupied the shrine in the ancient Buddha-Gayā temple, had been destroyed or carried off at different times, and that another stone image, believed to have been carved in the eighth century, had been recently substituted for it. It is remarkable that

^{*} See the account given in 'Brilimmism and Hindinsm,' p. 442.

Many images and sculptures were abstracted by the Burraese, but many never reached Burna, for they accidentally fell into the Ganges in the process of being transported there. The colosed image denied outside the temple is now in the Calcutta Museum (see the engraving opposite to p. 466).

during the process of restoring the so-called 'diamond throne,' on which the statues were placed, a mass of fragments of coral, supplier, cornelian, crystal, ruby, pearl, ivory, and gold, but no diamond, was found compacted or cemented together in front of it',

At the back of the raised terrace which surrounded the ancient temple was a Pipal or sacred fig-tree, fabled to be the very tree under which Gautama sat during his course of profound meditation ending in Buddhahood (see p. 31). Its vitality was on the wane, for its decaying branches drooped over the parapet as if they sought, like those of a neighbouring Banyan tree, to gain new life by rooting themselves in the ground beneath. Some Buddhist pilgrims happened, at the moment of my visit, to be worshipping at the temple, deputed by the King of Burma to present offerings. I observed that they had brought packets of gold-leaf, and had gilded the stone steps that surrounded the tree. Having performed this act of homage, they sat near muttering their prayer-formularies. No doubt they believed it to be the very Bodhi-tree of Gautama's time, the stem of which had been miraculously preserved, though, had it been really so, the stem would have been about twenty-three centuries old. Considering the well-known properties of the Pipal tree, it is possible that the worshippers were, after all, paying honour to the descendant of the original tree, the fact, no doubt, being that as each tree began to decay a new one was produced, by the dropping of seeds into the old roots and the springing up of fresh

Mr. Beglar gave me specimens of the fragments, which I have still.



ASSESSE MEDIUM REMEATE AT MCHERIA CAST, AS INSTRUMED IN 1881.

scions. Probably most of the sacred trees in the neighbourhood of Buddhist temples throughout India, Ceylon, and Burma were originally raised from seeds brought from the ancient Buddha-Gayā tree.

It is a received tradition that a shoot from this tree was taken by the Missionary Mahendra, son of Asoka, in the third century n.c. to Ceylon, and planted at Anuradha-pura, where its descendant still flourishes.

When I again visited Buddha-Gaya in 1884, I found that the old pyramidal temple had been restored according (as is conjectured) to Hionen Thrang's description of the Vihara of his day.

It is said that the late Burmese government, not very long ago, spent about thirty thousand rupces in building a wall round the temple and making excavations with a view to its restoration. Then our government, about 1881 or 1882, undertook the work, and I believe at least a lakh of rupces has been spent in completing it. I give a representation of the restored temple (as it appeared in 1884), from a photograph taken by Mr. Beglar, and enlarged by Mr. Austen. Its present height is 176 feet, as it has several tiers of the usual umbrella-like ornament, tapering to a point at the summit.

The reconstruction of the temple led of course to the removal of the sacred Bodhi-tree, but an effort was made to preserve the tree by transplanting it to a neighbouring garden. No sooner was this done than parties of pilgrims from Burma and Ceylon, in their pious desire to maintain the vitality of the venerated tree, covered the stem with gold-leaf, and, laringing

⁴ The ambrella is symbolical of supremacy, See p. 523;

Eau de Cologne and other scents, poured them over the roots, at the same time manuring them with the contents of boxes of sardines steeped in oil, choice biscuits, and other delicacies. Of course, the result was the speedy destruction of the tree, root and branch. To compensate for its loss, a new Pipal tree was planted behind the restored temple by Sir A. Cunningham in 1885. Another near the temple appeared to be in a flourishing condition in 1884, and I observed that both Hindû and Buddhist pilgrims met together there as worshippers of the same sacred object.

The idol-shrine, under the principal tower of the restored temple, consists of a small vaulted stone-chamber lighted only by the door. My first act, on arriving at Buddha-Gāya in 1884, was to descend to this interesting spot. At the further end is the principal statue of Buddha, seated, in the 'witness-attitude' (see p. 480)—on an alter-like throne having five pilasters, and supposed to represent the original Bodhi-manda. The pedestal of the statue is ornamented with diamond-shaped carvings, and sculptures of two elephants and two lions.

Inside the shrine, at the moment of my visit, were five Burmese pilgrims from Mandelay. They were apparently monks, as all were habited in yellow dresses. Each man bowed down before the image, with hands joined in reverence, occasionally touching the ground with his forehead, and going through a course of prayerrepetition by help of a rosary. After worshipping for some time, they deposited a quantity of offerings, of a

¹ The lion is often associated with Buddha, who is called Säkyasipha (see p. 23), and whose throne is therefore called a Sinhäson.

somewhat miscellaneous description, in front of the image. I noticed among other things, rice, fruit, vegetables, flowers of the Bel-tree, tin boxes filled with surdines, Huntley and Palmer's biscuits, bottles of the genuine Maria Farina's Eau de Cologne for watering the sacred-trees, and a large number of packets of gold-leaf. I left the shrine for two or three hours, and on returning found that the pilgrims had crowned their act of worship by gilding the image with the contents of these packets, reserving a supply for covering the other images in the vicinity of the temple. The cost of the whole process must have been considerable,

At the back of the great Buddha-Gayā temple, I found a stone tablet for offerings, recently brought and fixed horizontally in the ground by another pilgrim who was from Colombo in Ceylon. It have an inscription indicating that the slab had been placed there as a votive offering by a person calling himself Guṇa-ratua Muddali Rājā of Kolamba-pur. The date carved on it (Buddha-vasse 2427) shows that the Buddhists of Ceylon are no believers in the researches of modern scholars. They still reckon from B.C. 543 for the supposed Nirvāṇa of Buddha.

At a little distance in front of the great Temple, but on the right side, are the two smaller temples called Tārā-devī and Vāgīšvarī. In the latter is a circular stone with nine circles of complicated ornaments. This is called a Vajrāsana, from the thunderbolt ornament in the second circle, but it is not the true Bodhi-manda.

I may mention here that a portion of the original Asoka stone-railing, with an inscription, lotus-ornaments and carvings, was discovered in a fair state of preservation by Sir A. Cunningham, and is now to be seen in situ. The Buddha's walking place was uncarthed by Mr. Beglar. The massive new brick railing which now encloses the temple has been well constructed after an ancient pattern, and ornamented with numerous carvings representing scenes in the lives of the Buddha (p. 111). The paved quadrangle sets the whole off to great advantage. Indeed, the present appearance of the square and the sacred area of ground adjoining—strewn with ruins of the Stupas erected by Ašoka and others—and according to the legend by the gods Indra and Brahmā—is one of the most striking sights in all India, and must be seen to be appreciated.

In truth, Buddha-Gayā is a kind of Buddhist Jerusalem, abounding in associations of thrilling interest, not only to the followers of Buddha, but to all who see in that spot the central focus whence radiated a system which for centuries has permeated the religious thought of the most populous regions of Eastern Asia, and influenced the creed of a majority of the human race.

Another remarkable characteristic of this spot is that it was converted into a kind of Buddhist Necropolis, teeming with the remains of generations of the Buddha's adherents contained in relic-receptacles called Stūpas (pp. 503-506), some of which have been brought to light, while countless others still remain to be uncarthed.

The fact was that immense numbers of pilgrims from all parts of India and the outlying countries once through in crowds to Buddha-Gayā, and nearly every pilgrim brought with him a Stūpa or relic-shrine of some kind, according to his means, and deposited it as a votive offering in this hallowed region, either with the object of acquiring religious merit for himself, or of promoting the welfare of the deceased in other states of being. Often it was inscribed with the usual Buddhist formula, Ye Dharmā, etc. (see p. 104), and sometimes bore a date and the name of the reigning king. Generally the votive Stūpa contained the relics of deceased relatives—perhaps the ashes of a father or mother, or pieces of bone, or a small fragment of a single bone placed in an earthen vessel or casket of some other material, and buried in the interior of the Stūpa.

Relies, however, were not always forthcoming, and so the votive Stupas were frequently more cenotaphs or models in clay or stone of actual Stupus erected in other places. Often they were beautifully carved and ornamented with rows on rows of images of the Buddha, I obtained some beautiful specimens for the Indian Institute at Oxford, a drawing of one of which will be given (see p. 505). Layers on layers of these have been exhumed during the process of the excavations. They are of every variety of size, from three inches to several feet high, and of every variety of material, from terra cotta and clay turned on a potter's wheel to elaborately sculptured brick and stone. All the upper layers are now gone (those made of clay and pottery having naturally crumbled to pieces), but the lowest are still in situ, and furnish specimens of all ages from the second century to the tenth or twelfth. I noticed hundreds lying about on the ground in 1884.

A sacred tank, mentioned by Hionen Thrang, is situated three or four hundred yards to the left of the Buddha-Gayā temple. I found, on visiting it, that this hallowed pool is quite as much venerated by Hindūs as by pilgrims from Buddhist countries.

Indeed, I was much struck by the evidence which Buddha-Gava affords of the inter-relationship between Buddhism and Hinduism-especially that form of the latter called Vaishnavism. For instance, on one side of the temple I noticed the tembs of the Mahants, or Heads of the neighbouring Hindu monastery, who are buried there in a sitting posture. Near these again are shrines of the five Pandava heroes (who take the place of the five Buddhas), and a shrine containing the supposed impression of the two feet of Vishnu. The upper portion of a small Buddhist Stupa has been sawn off and inverted, and Vishm's footsteps carved on the smooth surface. This certainly symbolizes in a remarkable manner the merging of Buddhism in Vaishnavism, and bears out Dr. Sachau's assertion that in Alberoni's time Vishnu-worship was dominant in India.

Theo, again, on the right of the entrance to the principal temple is a raised platform of carth, on which are images of Vishou, Siva. Parvati, and Ganesa. Here I saw a Sraddha ceremony in the act of being performed by some Hindus—just arrived from the neighbouring town of Gaya. They were repeating their mantras,

This will be evident to any one who examines it attentively. The socket-hole of the uniforella-organization may be easily detected.

The form of ritual observed was tike that I witnessed at Gaya, and described in my 'Brithmanism and Hindüism,' p. 310.

offering their Pindas, and putting the finishing stroke to the funeral services (previously performed by them at the Vishnu-pad temple at Gayā), under the shadow of a Pipal tree, held as sacred by them as by Buddhists.

To give an exhaustive account of the objects crowded together at this fountain-head of Buddhism would be impossible. The following abbreviated version of the Rev. S. Beal's translation (ii. 115) of Hiouen Theang's description, throws great light on the state of Buddhism in the seventh century:—

Going south-west from Mount Pragbodhi, we came to the Badhitree. It is surrounded by a brick wall, and is about good pures round. Within the wall the sacred traves buick one musther in all directions. In one place there are Stripes, in another place Vibrais. In the middle of the enclosure is the Bodhi-tree, under which is the discoont throne miled Bodhi-manda. On this the Buildha set and attained the boly path of perfect wisdom. When the carth is shaken, this spot alone is unmoved. In old days, when Buddha was alive, the Bodhi-tree-which is a Pippola or sacred fig-tree-was several hundred feet high. Although it has often been injured by catting, it is still forty or fifty feet high. The leaves never wither either in winter or summer, but always reason shining and glistening, except. on every successive Nirvapa-day, when the leaves fade, and then in a moment revive as before. On this day thousands and ten thousands assemble from different quarters, and bothe the roots with scented water and perfumed milk. King Asoka, before he was converted, tried to destroy the tree by force, and after him king Smithka tried again, but the roots sprang up as full of life as ever.

To the east of the Bodhistree, there is a Vihara about 160 or 170 feet high, built of blue tiles covered with chanam; all the nickes in the different stories holding golden ligares. The four sides of the building are envered with armamental work. The whole is surmounted by a gibbel copper Amalaka fruit. To the right and left of the gate are nickes; in the left is a figure of Avglokiteivara Bullisattva and in the right a ligare of Maitreya. On the site of the present Vibara, Ašoka at first built a small Vibara. Alterwands a

Brābmau, who became a convert to Buddhism, reconstructed it on a larger scale.

To the north of the Bulli-tree is the place where Buddha walked up and down, about 70 pages or so long. When he had obtained enlightenment, he remained perfectly quiet for seven days. Then rising, he walked up and down during seven days to the north of the tree. Not far to the south of the tree is a Stans about 100 feet high, built by King Asoka. To the cast of the tree is the place (marked by two Stapas) where Mara tempted Gautama to become a Universal Monarch. To the north-west is a Villana in which is an image of Kasyapa Buddha, noted for its miraculous qualities. Occasionally it emits a glorious light, and the old records say, that if a man, netuated by sincere faith, walks round it seven times, he obtains the power of knowing the place and condition of his previous hirths. Outside the south gate is a large tank, about 700 paces round, the water of which is clear and pure as a mirror. To the east of this is the lake of the Snake-king, Mucalinda. On the west bank is a small Vihāra. Formerly, when Tathāgata acquired complets enlightenment, he sat here for seven days in perfect composure, and ecstatic contemplation, while Mucalinda protected him with his folds wound seven times round his body. (Compare the frontispiace.)

By the side of the river, not far off, is the place where Buddha received the rice-milk, and where two morehants offered some wheat-flour and honey from their travelling-store (p. 40 of this volume).

Near this a Stopa marks the spot where the four Kings presented Buddha with four guiden rishes. The Lord declined such costly offerings. Then the four Kings, costing away the golden vessels, offered silver ones; and afterwards vessels of crystal, logis-lazuli, cornelian, amber, ruby, and so on in succession; but the Lord of the World would accept more of them. Lastly, the four Kings offered stone vessels.

Near this spot the Buddha worked various wonders to convert those who were capable of conversion. For example, it was here that the Buddha overcame the fiery snake-demon (see p. 46 of this volume). In the middle of the night the Naga vomited forth fire and smoke, and the chamber seemed to be filled with fiery flames; but the Buddha having forced the fiery dragon into his alms-bowl, came forth next day holding it in his hand, and showed it to the unbelievers. To the south of Macalinda's tank is a Stape, which indicates the spot where Kāsyapa, having embarked in a best to save Buddha during an inaudation, saw the Lord of the World walking on the water as on land.

Sarnath near Benares.

The city of Benares (Banaras, properly Varanast) is the most sacred place of Brahmanism¹, and is certainly the second most holy place of Buddhism. For it was from this centre that the stream of Buddhist teaching first flowed, and in the days of Asoka and of his immediate successors, Buddhism must have vied with Brahmanism in the number of its shrines and sacred objects collected there.

We have already seen that memorial Stüpas and temples, not intended to contain relies, were reared at various holy spots of ground, consecrated by the presence of Gautama on special occasions. The immense ruined Stüpa—once a tower-like monument—at a spot now called Sarnāth (Sāranga-nāth), three or four miles from the modern city of Benares, is a memorial of this kind. It is all that remains of the celebrated structure erected

⁵ See my 'Brahmanism and Hinduism,' p. 434-

That is, 'the lord of deer,' Sarniga is a kind of deer, and the Buddha was probably called so because he is fabled to have wandered about as a deer in this very place in one of his former births (see p. 111 of this volume). The legend is that he was born eleven times as a deer, and on this account a deer is one of the sacred symbols of Buddhism. We learn from General Sir A. Conningham (i. 105) that the name Sărnith properly belongs to a temple dedicated to Šiva mear the Buddhist monument, and the epithet 'Lord of deer,' is equally applicable to the god Siva, who is often represented in the act of holding up a deer in his hand.

at the spot in the Mriga-dava or deer-park, once called Isi-patana (for Sanskrit Rishi-patana), where Gautama first turned the wheel of the Law (Dharma-ćakra)—that is, where he preached his first sermon (p. 42). It was to this place that Buddhist pilgrims once flocked, and here vast numbers of votive relic-shrines and Stūpas were deposited, as at Buddha-Gaya.

I visited this ancient ruin, in company with the late Mr. Sherring, in 1876, and enjoyed the advantage of his guidance in inspecting it, as well as all that remains of the monastic buildings and other adjacent ruins, including the octagonal tower called Chaukandi, about half a mile distant. In his book on Benares, Mr. Sherring has followed General Sir A. Cunningham, who describes the principal monument—now of a bee-hive shape, and called Dhamek—as 93 feet in diameter at the base, 292 feet in circumference, and 128 feet above the general level of the soil. The lower part—to a height of 43 feet—is built of stone, and all the upper part of bricks. There are eight projecting faces with empty niches, which once held statues.

An old man who was in charge of the ruins when we examined them, lighted a candle, and took us into the horizontal tunnel-like gallery which the General had excavated some years before, in the hope that relies or memorials of some kind might be found buried in the interior. A shaft or well had been previously sunk from the summit, and at the depth of 101 feet a slab

The name Dhamek may possibly be a corruption of Dhammacakka (Dharma-cakra).

was discovered, inscribed with the well-known Buddhist formula 'Ye dharmā,' etc. (p. 104); but the search for relics proved unsuccessful. The Stūpa, in fact, turned out to be merely memorial, like that at Buddha-Gayā.

Probably some monumental Stūpa existed here from the earliest times, and certainly from Ašoka's time. The present Stūpa was seen by Hionen Thsang, who has described it in rather a confused manner (Beal, ii. 45). Hence it must be as old as about the ninth century. Fā-hien saw a Stūpa of some kind there in the fifth century (p. 387).

About fifty yards from the Stupa, Sir A. Cunningham found the interesting sculpture given at p. 477.

Rāja-griha.

Rāja-griha (Pāli, Rāja-gaha) is the modern Rāj-gūr, The old city had the epithet Giri-vrāja, 'surrounded by hills'.' It was the first metropolis or mother-city of Buddhism, and the original capital of the powerful kingdom of Magadha, when under the rule of the Kings Bimbi-sāra (p. 48) and his son Ajāta-šatru, who were contemporaries and friends of Gautama, and converted

^{&#}x27;Fā-hien says that the old city was girdled by five hills. These hills are now called Baibhār (on which are five Jain temples), Vipula, Batna, Udaya, and Sons-giri. A long account of the place will be found in Conningham's 'Ancient Geography of India,' pp. 462-468, and in his 'Archæological Report,' i. 20. Blimbi-sāra scens to have built the town, which was afterwards improved by Ajāta-satra, and the site of the new portion being not quite identical, the new town was called 'new Bāja-griba.' Legge's 'Fā-hien,' p. 81. There are several hot springs in this locality.

by him to Buddhism¹. The sacred character of the place is attested by the rains of vast numbers of Buddhist Stūpas and Vihāras which once existed here. Unhappily Brāhmans and Musulmāns have used the materials for their temples, tombs, and mosques.

It was here that Gautama first studied under the Brāhmans Āļāra and Uddaka (p. 29), and here he first imbibed the philosophical ideas which afterwards coloured his teaching. It is not surprising, therefore, that at a later period of his career he was fond of returning to Rāja-griha for retirement during Vassa; his two favourite resorts being the Bambu grove (Velu-vana, p. 48) and the hill called Vulture-peak (Gridhra-kūṭa, Legge's Fā-hien, 81, 83), both in the neighbourhood of the city.

It was here, too, that several interesting incidents in the life of Buddha occurred. For example, it was here in a cavern that the Buddha often meditated. It was here that he often preached and taught; and it was here, or in the neighbourhood of the city, that the god Sakra (Indra) once appeared to Buddha, bringing a musician from heaven to entertain him, and afterwards testing his knowledge by forty-two questions. These the god traced with his finger on the rock, and the impression of them, according to Fä-hien, was to be seen

Ajāta-satru seems first to have sided with Buddha's enemy Devadatta.

It may be mentioned here that any place or bonse in which the Buddha resided for a time was afterwards called Gundha-kuṭī (probably from the fragrance of the perfumed offerings always to be found in it). Hence the Bambu grove at Rāja-griha, and the Jeta-vana at Srāvastī (p. 407), were both Gundha-kuṭis.

there in his time, and a monastery was built on the spot. With reference to this legend we may note that the answers to the forty-two questions are supposed to be contained in a celebrated Tibetan work called the 'Forty-two points on which the Buddha gave instruction', the importance of which is proved by its being translated into several languages.

It was in this neighbourhood, too, that Buddha's two chief disciples—Sariputra and Maudgalyayana (Pali, Moggallana, p. 47)—had their noted meeting with Asvajit (Pali, Assaji), already mentioned (p. 104). Here, also, a Jaina ascetic made a pit of fire and poisoned the rice, and then invited Buddha to eat. Lastly, it was here that many of Deva-datta's plots against the Buddha's life (see p. 52) were carried on. The story of these is so interesting that I abridge it from the Sacred Books of the East (vol. xx. p. 238):—

Now at that time the Veneralle One was scated prouching the Law and surrounded by a great multitude, including the king and his retime. And Deva-datta rose from his seat, and said, 'The Venerable One is now aged, he has accomplished a long journey, and his term of life is nearly run. Let the Venerable One now dwell at case and give up the Sangha to me, I will be its leader.' Then said the Buddha, 'I would not give over the Sangha, even to Sariputta and Meggallana; how much less then to so evil-living a person as you.'

Then Deva-datta thought: 'The Venerable One denies me before the king, and calls me "evil-living," and exalts Sariputta and Moggalline.' With these thoughts in his mind he departed, angryand displeased, and went to Ajana-satta and said, 'Do you, prince,

A magnificent edition of this work in Tibetan, Mongol, Manchu, and Chinese came into the possession of the French Missionneses (Huc, ii. 74).

kill your father, and become Rājā; and I will kill the Veneralde One and become the Buddles.' And prince Ajāta-sattu, taking a dagger, entered his royal father's chamber. And the Rājā Bimbi-sāra said, 'Why do you want to kill me, O prince I if you want the kingdom, let it be thine.' And he handed it over to Ajāta-sattu. Then Devadatts said, 'Give orders, O king, to your men, that I may deprive the Samana Gotama of life.' And Ajāta-sattu did so. Then sixteen men were sent to kill Gotama. They went, and returned and said. 'We cannot kill him. Great is the power of the Veneralde One.'

Next Deya-datta climbed up the Vulture's Peak, and harled down a mighty rock on the Venerable One. But two mountain peaks came together and stopped that rock. [Fa-hien says that it hart one of his toes. Legge, p. 83.] Now at that time there was at hispa-griba an elephant named Nälägiri, flerce and a man-slayer. And Deva-datta caused the elephant to be let loose against Gotama. But the Venerable One infused a sense of love into the elephant. And the elephant extended his trunk and took up the dust from off the feet of the Venerable One and sprinkled it over his own head, and retired bowing backwards, gazing upon the Venerable One.

It may be noted here that the hell to which Deva-datta was condemned for his attempts upon the Buddha's life, is thus described by Burmese authorities:—

The impious Deva-datta, a consin and brother-in-law of the Buddha, suffers terrible panishment in Hell. His feet are sunk ankle-deep in burning mark. His head is incosed with a red hot metal cap down to the labe of the rars. Two large red-hot lars transfix him from back to front, two herizontally from right to left, and one impales him from head to foot. (Shway Yoe's 'Burnan,' i. 121.)

It should be mentioned in connexion with Rāja-griha that Ajāta-šatru built a grand Stūpa there, over a portion of the Buddha's ashes, soon after his cremation.

Another fact which enhances the interest of this place is the propinquity of the celebrated Satta-panni cave (p. 55), where the Buddhist brotherhood first assembled after their leader's death.

Śrāvastī.

Śrāvasti (Pāli, Sāvatthī), sometimes spelt Śrāvasti, has been identified by General Cunningham with a place now called Sāhet-Māhet, about fifty-eight miles north of Ajūdhyā in Ondh. The town is said to derive its name from the fact that it was built by a certain King Śrāvasta. Other native authorities derive it from a Rishi named Sāvattha, who is said to have resided there. It was certainly the ancient capital of Kosala (Oudh), and was ruled over by King Prasena-jit (Pāli, Pasenadi), who was Gautama's contemporary. Moreover, it was the Buddha's favourite place of retreat during the rainy seasons (p. 48 of this volume), about half of his Vassas having been spent there in the Jeta-vana monastery built for him by the wealthy merchant Anātha-piṇḍlika (Anepidu), sometimes called Su-datta.

Doubtless on this account Sravasti was once much resorted to by the Buddha's followers, and ultimately

became an important seat of Buddhist learning.

The celebrated monastery, the ruins of which still exist, was erected in the garden (vana) of Prince Jeta, who parted with the land to Su-datta on condition that he would cover it with gold coins. This was done, till eighteen krores of coins had been spread out like a

Hero, therefore, there was a Gandha-kutl (see note, p. 404).

^{*} Fa-hier says, * Here lived Buddha for a longer time than at any other place, and on that account, perhaps, was called Dharma-pattana (Beal's * Records,* ii. r). It was at this place that the Brahmacorius killed a courtesan, and accused Buddha of adultery and murder (see Legge, p. 59; Beal, ii. 8).

pavement on the ground. Both Fa-hien and Hionen Thsang mention this incident, and the former states that the monastery was seven stories high ¹. The pavement of coins is represented in one of the sculptures belonging to the Stūpa of Bharhut (Cunningham, pp. 84-87), as well as on one of the pillars of Ašoka's railing at Buddha-Gayā.

Sravasti was the place where, according to Fa-hien, the first sandal-wood image of Buddha was set up in a monastery by King Prasena-jit (see p. 471)*. A colossal erect figure of the Buddha was found here in a temple excavated by Sir A. Cunningham, but this was of stone.

With regard to the celebrated sandal-wood image, Fā-hien (p. 57) relates a strange legend of its preservation by a miracle:—

"The kings and people of the countries around vied with one another in their offerings (to the image). Hanging up about it silken canopies, scattering flowers, borning incease, and lighting lumps. It happened that a rat, carrying in its month the wick of a lamp, set one of the canopies on fire, which caught the Vihūra, and the seven stones were all consumed. The kings and people were all very sad, supposing that the sandal-wood image had been hurned; but lot when a small Vihūra to the cust was opened, there was seen the original image!"

Fā-hien goes on to describe another miracle :-

"To the north-west of the Vihara there is a grove called "The getting of Eyes." Formerly there were five hundred blind men, who lived here; Buddha preached his Law to them, and they all got back their eyesight. Full of joy they stuck their staves in the carth, and

¹ Legge, pp. 57, 59; Beal, ii. 5.

Another statue, claiming to be the genuine sandal-wood image, was at Kauśāmbī (see p. 412).

did reverence. The staves immediately began to grow, and formed a grove' (Legge, pp. 58, 59).

Hiouen Throng states that in his time the towns and monasteries about Sravasti were mostly in ruins. He, too, gives an interesting account of a miraculous incident which occurred there:—

To the north-east of the Jeta-vann garden is the place where the Buddha washed a sick Monk, who lived spart by himself in a solitary place. The Lord of the World seeing him inquired, 'What is your affliction?' He answered, 'In former days, my disposition being a careless one, I never looked on any sick man with pity, and now when I am sick, no one looks on me,' Thereupon the Buddha said to him, 'My sea! I will look on you,' and touching him with his hand, he healed the sickness. Then leading him forth, he washed his body, and gave him new clothes, and said, 'From this time forward be diligent and exert yourself.' Hearing this, the penitent monk, moved by gratitude and tilled with joy, followed the Buddha and became his disciple. (Founded on Beal, ii, g. abridged.)

Vaisāli.

Vaišālī (in Pāli Vesālī, now Besārh) lies twenty miles north of Hāji-pur, on the left bank of the Ganges, and twenty-seven north-east of Patnā. This town (the city of the Liéchavis) is celebrated as the scene of the second Council (p. 57). Near it, at a place called Bakhra, is a celebrated ancient pillar surmounted by a lion (see Cunningham, i. 59). Vaišālī, however, is chiefly noted as one of the places where Gautama often preached and taught, and where he stopped on his way to Kusinārā, the place of his death. His usual residence was in a Vihāra, described by Fā-hien as double-galleried, and in a garden presented to him by the courtesan Amba-pālī, whom he converted and induced to live a virtuous life.

He also resided for the fifth year of his teaching in a building called the Kūtāgāra[†] hall.

Hiouen Thsang speaks of the town and of the objects of interest round it thus (Beal, ii. 66-75):—

Both heretics and believers are found here living together. There are several hundred monasteries (Soughanasse) which are mostly dilapidated. There are also several Deva temples, occupied by sectaries of different kinds. The followers of the Nirgranthus (i.e. of the Jains) are very numerous.

To the north is a Stupa which indicates the place where Tathiguta stopped and took leave of the Licchavis, on his way to Kusi-magara to die. Wishing him to quit the world, Mara (compare p. 41) came to Buddha and said, 'You have now dwell sufficiently long in the world. These whom you have saved from the circling streams of transmigration are as numerous as the sand.' The Buddha replied, 'No, those who are saved are as the grains of dust on my nail; those who are not saved are like the grains of dust on the whole earth. Nevertheless, after three months I shall die.' Mara hearing this was rejoiced, and departed.

Both within and without the city of Vaisals and all round it, the sacred vertiges are so numerous, that it would be difficult to recount them all. To the north-west in a Stüpa at the spot where Buddha dwelt when he recited the history of his former birth (Jülaka) as a Cakra-vartin or Universal Monarch (compare p. 423) possessed of the seven treasures. To the south-cast is a great Stüpa, marking the place where the convecation of the seven hatstred arges and saints was held, one handred and ten years after the Nivana of Buddha, to compel the monks who had broken the laws of Buddha to obey them.

It appears that the Liéchavis of Vaisāli obtained a large quantity of the relies of the Buddha's body, and built a Stūpa over them.

According to Fä-hien they also erected a Stupe over

¹ A kuţāgāra is properly any building with a peaked roof (kūţa) or pinnacle.

half the relies of the burnt body of Ānanda (see p. 47 of this volume), the other being deposited near Eujagriba. His narrative runs as follows:—

When Ananda was going from Magadha to Voistli, wishing his Pari-nirvana to take place there, king Ajata-satra heard of his intention, and set out with his retinue to follow him.

The Liéchavis, too, when they heard that Amanda was coming to their city, went out to meet him. In this way both parties arrived together at the river, and Amanda, thinking to himself that he ought to please both, burnt his own body in the middle of the river, and thus attained Pari-nirvāna in a flery ecstacy of Samadhi. Then his body was divided into two, so that each got one half as a sacred relic (Legge, pp. 75-77).

Kausambi,

Kaušāmbī (in Pūli Kosāmbī), now Kosam¹, on the river Jumnā, about thirty miles from Allahābād, was once a place ballowed by many Brāhmanical associations, and is mentioned in the Rāmāyaṇa. It was the capital of the Kaušāmba country, and is said to have been founded by Kušāmba, tenth in descent from Purūravas. Without doubt it was one of the most ancient cities of India. It was also the city of King Udayana, whose story is alluded to by the greatest of all Sanskrit poets, Kālidāsa, in his 'Cloud-Messenger'.' Furthermore, Kaušāmbī is the city in which the scene of the Sanskrit drama Ratnāvalī was laid's.

The Buddha resided there in the sixth and ninth

Cunningham (i. 301) gives a full account of the place.

The story is fully narrated in the second and third books of the Katha-sarit-sigara of Soma Deva. See my 'Indian Wisdom,' p. 511-King Udayana is said to have been a contemporary of the Buddha.

² See my 'Indian Wisdom,' p. 486.

years of his Buddhahood, and probably visited the place at other times. This was the chief cause of its reputation in connexion with Buddhism. But it also derived its sacred character from the fact that it contained the celebrated sandal-wood image¹ of the Buddha, believed to have been carved during his life-time, by a sculptor sent by Moggallana (see last line, p. 414) at King Udayana's request, to the Trayastrinsa heaven, when the Buddha was there preaching the Law to his mother (see p. 207).

In a village near at hand Sir A. Cunningham (i. 308) found two sculptured pillars, and the pedestal of a statue inscribed with the 'Ye dharmā' formula (see p. 104). A great monolith was also discovered there. In Fā-hien's time a Vihāra existed at the spot where the Buddha had explained the Law (Legge, p. 96). Hiouen Thsang mentions that a lofty Stūpa, 200 feet high, was erected by Asoka near at hand.

There was also a cavern in which the Buddha had left his shadow impressed on the rock. He also speaks of ten monasteries all in ruins,

Nālanda.

Nālanda² was the greatest seat of Buddhist learning in India. It has been identified by Sir A. Cunningham with the village of Baragaon, about seven miles north of

¹ See Hionen Thung's account of it, p. 471. Another similar image belonged to King Prasenajit at Sravanti, see pp. 408, 471.

¹ The name is said to have been derived from that of a Naga, who lived in a neighbouring tank. See the description in two Chinese-Buddhist inscriptions found at Buddha-Gaya. R. A. S. Journal, vol. xiii.

Raja-griha, about thirty miles south-east of the modern Patnā, and about forty miles from Buddha-Gayā. Sir Alexander states that Baragaon possesses immense ruins and more numerous specimens of sculpture than any other place visited by him. According to Hionen Thsang, the Buddha preached the Law there for three months. The vast extent and importance of the monastery (Sanghārāma) or monasteries at Nālanda have been already alluded to (p. 169). Fa-hien, however, does not mention them, which seems to indicate that they were built subsequently to A.D. 425. Hiouen Thsang, who travelled in the seventh century, is said to have resided there for five years as a student. Ten thousand monks, renowned for their learning, lived and studied in six magnificent buildings. The following is an extract from the later Chinese traveller's description of it (Beal, ii. 70) :--

The manks of Nahanda, to the number of several thousands, are men of the highest ability. Their conduct is pure and unblamable, although the rules of the monastery are severe. The day is not sufficient for asking and answering profound questions. From morning till night the monks engage in discussion; the old and the young mutually helping one mother. Those who cannot discuss questions out of the Tripitaka are little esteemed, and are obliged to hide themselves for shame. Hence learned men from different cities come here in multitudes to settle their doubts; and thence the streams of their wealous appeal for and wide. For this resease some persons usurp the name of Nalanda students, and in going to und fro receive bosour in consequence.

If men from other quarters desire to enter and take part in the discussions, the keeper of the gate proposes some hard questions; those who are mable to answer have to retire. One must have studied deeply both old and new books, before gaining admission. Those students who come as strangers, have to show their ability by

hard discussion; those who fail compared with those who succeed are as seven or eight to ten.

Sankāiya.

Sankasya, now called Sankisa, about fifty miles north-west of Kanouj, was identified by Sir A. Cunningham in 1842. It was evidently once a large town with many remarkable monuments, and ought to be reckoned among the most sacred places of Buddhism. Hionen Thsang describes it under the name Kie-pi-tha (Kapitha).

It is said that the Buddha's mother died seven days after his birth (see p. 24 of this volume), and was thus deprived of the advantage of hearing the Law from her son's lips. To compensate her for this loss, the Buddha ascended by his own supernatural power in three steps to the Trayastrinsa heaven of Indra (p. 207), to which his mother had been transported, and there recited the Law for three months for her benefit. His return to earth seems to have been a more difficult matter; for his descent was not effected without the help of a ladder with three parallel flights of steps, made for him by the god Indra.

Fa-hien describes this miraculous incident in the following manner (Legge, 48, abridged):—

Sankāsya is the place where Buddha came down after ascending to the Trayastriusu heaven, and there preaching his Law for three months for his mother's benefit. Buddha had ascended there by his supernatural power, without the knowledge of his disciples; but seven days before his return, Amuruddha, by his own supernatural vision, naw him in heaven, and requested Moggallana (see p. 47 of this volume) to ascend to Indra's heaven to inquire after 'the Worldhonoured one.' Moggallana did so, and returned with the inform-

ation that in seven days the Buddha would return. Then the kings of eight countries with their people, not having seen Buddha for a long time, were all engerly looking up for him to return. But the female mendicant Utpala thought in her heart, To-day, the kings, with their ministers and people, are all going to meet Buddha. I am but a woman; how shall I succeed in being the first to see him? Then Buddha, by his supernatural power, changed her into the appearance of a Universal Emperor, so that she was the foremost of all to meet and to do reverence to him.

At his descent three flights of steps were created. Buddha descended on the middle flight, composed of the seven precious substances; Mahā-Brahmā, king of the Brahmā heavens (see p. 211 of this volume), came down by a flight of silver steps on the right side, and Sakra (Indra), lord of the thirty-three divinities (p. 207), descended by steps of gold on the left side, holding a campy made of the seven precious substances. An immunerable multitude of gods followed. No sconer had the Baddha come down than all three flights disappeared in the ground, except seven steps, which continued to be visible.

Afterwards King Aioks, being easer to ascertain where their ends rested, sent men to find out by digging. They due down till they reached a yellow spring, but could not discover the bottom of the steps. Hence the king felt an increase of devotion, and built a Vihāra over the steps, with a standing image of Buddha sixteen cubits high. Behind the Vihāra he erected a stone pillar, about fifty cubits high, with a lion on the top of it. A dispute arose between some heretics and the Buddhist monks about the ownership of the place, and the former agreed to give up their claim if any supernatural sign occurred; upon which the lion on the column gave a great rear.

Fā-hien adds that a Stūpa was erected on the spot where Buddha descended; another where the female mendicant caught the first sight of Buddha at his descent.

The basement of King Asoka's pillar was found by General Cunningham in 1876. On a previous occasion

⁴ This Utpala must be the same as Utpala-varna (see p. 48 of this valume).

he discovered the capital of the ancient pillar surmounted by an elephant, which may have been mistaken by Fa-hien for a lion (see Cunningham, i. 274).

Hionen Throng, in his account of the three ladders (Beal, i. 202), says that they were arranged side by side from north to south, so that those who descended might have their faces to the east, and that the flight by which Indra descended was of crystal (not of gold), while that used by Brahma was of silver, and the Buddha's steps were of gold (or of the seven precious substances, of which gold was one). This indicated the superiority of Buddha over the two gods who accompanied him.

In harmony with these ideas Indra and Brahmā are sometimes represented in Buddhistic sculptures standing one on each side of the Buddha, and protecting him. They were also present at his birth (see p. 483 and

engraving opposite p. 477).

Hiouen Thsang adds that some centuries before his time the ladders still existed in their original position; but, when he visited the spot, they had sunk into the earth, and disappeared. Sańkāsya, however, was still much frequented. A magnificent image of the Buddha was preserved in a large monastery there, and 1000 priests were studying the doctrines of the Sammatiya, a school of the Hina-yāna, in four monasteries. Furthermore, many 'myriads' of pious laymen lived in the neighbourhood.

The story of Buddha's descent from heaven by help of golden steps is commonly believed both in Ceylon and Burma to the present day. The legend, as current in Ceylon, is given by Spence Hardy (Manual, p. 311).

It appears that when Buddha was about to return to earth from the god Indra's heaven, the god reflected that, although Buddha had ascended in three steps, his descent ought to be celebrated with special honours. He therefore caused a ladder of gold to extend from the Mountain Meru (see p. 206 of the present Lectures) to Sankāsya, 80,000 Yojanas in length. The steps were alternately of gold, silver, coral, ruby, emerald and other gems. At the right side of the ladder he created another, also of gold, by which Indra, blowing the conch, descended, accompanied by his own gods; and on the left another ladder of silver, by which Brahma and the Brahmā gods (p. 210) descended, holding umbrellas over the Buddha. The three flights of steps appeared to the people of the earth like three minbows. When Buddha commenced his descent all the worlds were illuminated by the light from his body.

With this extravagant myth-believed in as a historical fact by most Buddhists-we may contrast the simple narrative of Jacob's dream in Genesis xxviii.

Nevertheless the legend is curious, and I was greatly pleased by discovering in the Indian Section of the South Kensington Museum, a small bronze model of the triple ladder, lately dug up at Moulmein. Mr. Purdon Clarke, C.I.E., the present Keeper, kindly had the model photographed, and presented me with a drawing of it. This I have had engraved, and here give.

A Yojana is variously estimated at 4 or 5 or 9 English miles.



It will be observed that an image of the Buddha is represented above the ladder, as if seated in Indra's heaven, and as if engaged in the act of teaching there; while the earth is typically represented below in the shape of a square platform, with four small Buddhist temples, one at each of the four quarters of the compass (compare p. 85).

A ruder representation of the ladder occurs in the sculptures of the Bharhut Stūpa (Cunningham, p. 92). The General found an imperfect representation of it carved in soap-stone at Sankisa in 1876 (Report, xi. 26).

Sāketa.

Sāketa is a name of the ancient city Ayodhyā (now Ajūdhyā) described in Valnūki's great epic the Rāmā-yaṇa, and believed to have been founded by Manu, the progenitor of the human race. This renowned city, which was a great centre of Brūhmanism, was also, no doubt, at one time a considerable centre of Buddhism. At all events, the identification of certain Buddhist sites there has been made clear by Sir A. Cunningham, who considers Sāketa to be the same as the Pi-so-kia (Višākhā) of Hiouen Theorem and the Shū-che or Shū-khe of Fū-hien. The former found twenty monasteries there, and 3000 priests studying the Little Vehicle according to the Sammatīya school; also fifty Deva temples and very many heretics.

In one of the monasteries resided the Arhat Devasarma, who wrote a treatise called the Vijaana-kayasastra in defence of the doctrine of the non-existence of any Ego or personal self. A Stupe, 200 feet high, was built by Asoka in the place where Buddha is supposed to have preached and taught during six years.

Both Fä-hien and Hiouen Thrang mention the legend that he one day threw on the ground a twig he had used to clean his teeth (danta-kāshṭha), which sprouted and grew into a miraculous tree seven cubits high, at which height it always remained. The Brāhmans became jealous of the miracle and sometimes cut the tree down, sometimes uprooted it, but it always grew again and remained at the same height. Here also is the place where the four Buddhas (p. 400) walked and sat (Legge, pp. 54, 55; Beal, i. 240).

Kunyā-kubja (Kanouj).

Kanyā-kubja is the Sanskrit name for the ancient city of Kanouj (often spelt Kanoj), once the capital of Northern India, and said to be the oldest city in India, next to Ayodhyā.

When Hiouen Thsang visited this place it was the capital of the celebrated monarch Harsha-vardhana, also called Silāditya (see p. 167 of this volume), whose kingdom extended from Kashmīr to Assam and from the river Narbadā to Nepāl. When he carried off a toothrelic of the Buddha from Kashmīr, his procession back to his capital was attended by a large number of tributary kings. Hiouen Thsang, in describing the piety of this great monarch, says of him, that 'he sought to plant the tree of religious merit to such an extent that he forgot to sleep and to eat.' He goes on to state as follows:—

King Siladitys forbade the slaughter of any living thing as food on pain of death. He built several thousand Stopas, each about 100 feet high. Then in all the highways of the towns and villages throughout India he creeted hospices, and stationed physicians there with medicines for travellers and the poor persons round about. On all spots where there were hely traces of Buddha, he built monasteries. Once in five years he held the great assembly called Mokaha. Then

^{&#}x27;Hieuen Thung states that this name, which means a 'humpbacked virgin,' is derived from the fact that an old sage (Rishi), who possessed supernatural powers, cursed ninety-nine daughters of king Brahma-datta for refusing to marry him, and made them deformed (Beal, i. 209). A different legend is given in my Sanskrit-English Dictionary.

every year he assembled the monks, and bestowed on them the four kinds of alms (food, drink, medicine, clathing). He urdered them to carry on discussions, and himself judged of their arguments. He rewarded the good and numished the wicked. He promoted the men of talent, and degraded evil men. Wherever he moved he dwelt in a travellingpalace, and provided choice ments for men of all sorts of religion. Of these the Buddhist priests would be perhaps a thousand; the Brahmans five hundred . He divided each day into three portions. During the first he occupied biaself on matters of government; during the second be practised himself in religious devotion (Beal, L 214).

Notwithstanding Hiouen Thsang's description of various Stupas, monasteries and monuments seen by him, General Sir A. Cunningham was not able to identify any of the existing ruins in the neighbourhood of Kanoui, 'so completely has almost every trace of Hindu occupation been obliterated by the Musalmans' (Report, i. 284).

Fa-hien mentions a Stupa near the town, built on the spot where the Buddha preached a discourse on the bitterness and vanity of life,' comparing it to 'a bubble

or foam on water '(Legge, 54).

Pātali-putra.

Patali-putra (now Patna) seems to have existed as a village at a very early period. Its ancient name was Kusuma-pura. It was enlarged and practically founded about the time of the Buddha's death by Ajāta-šatru s,

This is very instructive in regard to the numerical proportion between Brahmans and Buddhists at this place.

According to Cunningham, about B.C. 450.

who did not, however, remove there from his own capital city Rāja-griha. One of his successors, the great King Ašoka, the well-known patron of Buddhism (p. 66), converted Pāṭali-putra into the metropolis of the kingdom of Magadha, and it theuceforward became an important centre of Buddhism. Sir A. Cunningham states that it continued flourishing as the capital of the great Gupta kingdom during the fourth and fifth centuries of the Christian era.

Fü-hien relates a tradition that King Asoka's palace in the city was built by genii (spirits), who brought great rocks and constructed chambers by heaping them together. He describes a monastery belonging to the Great Vehicle, and a temple belonging to the Little Vehicle, in the neighbourhood of the city, and gives an account of a Buddhist procession of four-wheeled cars and images which took place once a year. Each car was twenty-two feet or more high, and had five stories, with niches on four sides, in which were placed images of the Buddha and the Bodhi-sattyas, along with images of the gods (devas). They were made to look like moving pagodas (or Dāgabas). The Hindūs, as we know, have similar car-processions to this day, when the images of Krishna are dragged through the streets of towns and villages.

Fa-hien mentions the interesting fact that the nobles of the country had founded hospitals in the city to which destitute, crippled, and diseased persons might repair, and receive advice, food, and medicines suited to their cases, gratuitously. He adds that Ašoka, wishing to build 84,000 Stūpas in place of the eight originally constructed over the Buddha's ashes, built the first Stūpa and a pillar near Pātali-putra.

Near it he says was an impression of the Buddha's foot, over which a temple with a door towards the north had been erected (Legge, pp. 77–80; Beal, i. Iv-lviii). The position of the Stupa and column has been discovered by Sir A. Cunningham (xi. 157, 158).

Kesariya.

Kesariya is a large village about thirty miles distant from Vaisali (Besarh). It is chiefly remarkable for a mound of ruined brick-work, 62 feet in height, supporting a solid brick Stūpa (nearly 68½ feet in diameter), which is also partly in ruins. The people call it the Stūpa of the Čakravartī (Universal Monarch) Veņa, father of King Prithu. In Maau, VII. 41; IX. 66, 67, King Veņa is described as an arrogant monarch who resisted the authority of the Brahmans. Probably he favoured the Buddhists. At any rate the Buddhists assert that the remarkable Stūpa at this place was built to mark the spot where Gautama Buddha preached a discourse, in which he described one of his previous births as a Ćakravartī king.

Not far from the Stupa a small mound has been excavated, and the head and shoulders of a colossal statue of Buddha brought to light (Cunningham, i. 67).

One for each of the 84,000 elements of the body (p. 499). The real number of Stapas was 84, but, as usual, three ciphers have been added.

Kusi-nagara.

Kuśi-nagara (in Pāli Kusi-nārā) was the place where the Buddha died, or—to speak more correctly—passed away in Pari-nirvāņa (see pp. 48, 49, 140). It was long searched for in vain, but has recently been identified by Sir A. Cunningham with the modern Kasia, eighty miles east of Kapila-vastu, and 120 miles N.N.E. of Benares.

Neither Fä-hien nor Hiouen Thrang say much about Kusi-nagara, except that it was deserted and had few inhabitants; but the latter's allusion to the Buddha's passing away out of the world at this place, and his account of the subsequent assembling of the first council at Rāja-griha by order of the great Kāsyapa (pp. 47, 55), is so interesting and curious that I here give an abstract of his narrative, based on Mr. Beal's translation (ii. 161):—

Once when the great Kasyapa was seated in meditation, suddenly a bright light burst forth, and the earth shook. Then, exerting his faculty of supernatural vision, he saw the Lord Buddha passing away into Pari-nirvana between two trees. Forthwith he ordered his followers to accompany him to the city of Kusi-nagara. On the way there they met a Brahman, who on being asked whence he came, replied, 'From Kusi-nagara, where I saw your master entering into Nirvana. A vast multiurde of heavenly beings were around him.'

Käsyapa having heard these words said, 'The sun of wisdom has extinguished his mys. The world is new in darkness. The illustrious guide—the King of the Law—has left us; the whole world is empty and afflicted. Men and gods are left without a guide.' Accordingly, he proceeded to the two trees, and looking on Buddha, offered worship. But certain careless manks said one to another, with satisfaction, 'Tathigata has gone to rest. This is good for us; for now, if we transgress, who is there to reprove us?' Then Kāsyapa was deeply moved, and resolved to secure obedience to the teaching of Buddha.

Addressing the assembled multitude, he suid, 'We night to collect the Law. Those who have kept it without failure, whose powers of discrimination are clear, such persons may form the assembly. Those

who are only learners must depart to their homes."

On this they went away, and only gap men were left, including Ananda. But the great Kasyapa excluded Ananda as being yet a learner. Addressing him, he said, 'You are not yet free from defect; you, too, must leave the assembly. You were a personal attendant on Buddha, you loved him much, and are, therefore, not free from the ties of affection.'

So Ananda retired to a desert place. Wearied out, he desired to lie down. Scarcely had his head reached the pillow, when lot he obtained the condition of an Arbat. Then he returned to the door of the assembly. But Kasyapa said to him, 'Have you got rid of all ties! If so, prove it; exercise your apiritual power and enter without the door being opened.' Then Ananda entered through the key-hole, and having paid reverence to the assembled manks, as down.

This power of reducing the body to the size of an atom, so as to be able to pass through so minute an aperture as a key-hole, was one of the supernatural faculties supposed to belong to perfected saints or Arhats (compare pp. 133, 245 of these Lectures).

The consideration of Buddhist Sacred Places might lead us on to various hallowed spots in other Buddhist countries, for example, Anuradha-pura, Adam's Peak and Kelani in Ceylon; the site of the great pagoda at Rangoon, and of that near Mandalay in Buruna; the site of the Buddha's foot-print (Phra Bat) in Siam; the snows of Kinchinjunga in Sikkim; the city of Lhassa and its monasteries in Tibet; Kuren in Mongolia; but all these, and other places, have either been incidentally mentioned in previous Lectures or will be more fully noticed hereafter.

LECTURE XV.

Monasteries and Temples.

Buddhist monasteries deserve a fuller notice than the incidental allusions we have made to them in previous Lectures.

The duty of dwelling under trees, and not in houses, according to the example set by all the Buddhas (see p. 136), and especially by Gautama Buddha himself, during his long course of meditation (see p. 31), was in theory supposed to be binding on all true monks. 'The root of a tree for an abode' was one of 'the four Resources,' of which every monk was allowed to avail himself, and the enumeration of which formed part of the admission-ceremonies (see p. 80).

At the same time certain dispensations or indulgences were specially granted at those ceremonies, one of which was permission to live in covered residences, when not itinerating. The five kinds of dwellings permissible under varying circumstances are described in Culla-vagga (VI. 1, 2). They are Vihāras (monasteries), Addhayogas (i.e. houses of a peculiar shape), storied dwellings (prāsāda), mansions (harmya), and caves (see note, p. 81 of this volume).

It is clear that any painful exposure of the body to

It is difficult to understand exactly what these Addhayoga, Prashda and Harmya were. In some Buildhist countries storied houses are considered objectionable, as no one likes to submit to the indiguity of having the feet of another person above his head.

the violent storms of India was incompatible with one of the principles of Buddhism, which, though it taught self-denial and self-sacrifice of a particular kind, deprecated all personal self-inflicted pain and austerity.

Yet it appears (from Mahā-vagga, III.15) that at the time of his first residence at Rāja-griba (see p. 29 of these Lectures), the Buddha had not yet instituted 'the Retreat' during the rains (Vassa). Hence the monks were in the habit of going on their travels alike during winter, summer, and the rainy season.

The people complained of this, and said that the monks in walking about during wet weather were unable to avoid crushing vegetable life and treading on minute living things. Thereupon the Buddha prescribed that the monks were to keep "Vassa," and refrain from peregrination during the rains.

Soon afterwards, when the Buddha had left Rajagriha and had taken up his abode during Vassa in the
Jeta-vana garden at Savatthi (see p. 407), a wealthy
and pious layman (Upāsaka) who had built a monastery
(Vihāra) for the monks, sent to invite them to reside in
it, saying that he wished to hear them recite the Law
and to bestow gifts upon them. The Buddha permitted
them to go, but required them to return in seven days.
He gave the same permission when another rich and
pious layman had provided other residences and conveniences for the monks, such as a storied house, a
mansion, a store-room, a cave, a refectory, a bathing
room, a well-house, a pavilion, a park, etc.

On the other hand, when, on a particular occasion, a monk wished to keep Vassa in a cattle-pen (Mahavagga, III. 12) the Buddha permitted him to do so. So, again, on another occasion he allowed a man to keep Vassa in a caravan, and on a third occasion in a covered boat or ship. But it is recorded that he prohibited Vassa from being kept in the open air, or in the hollow of trees' (see Mahā-vagga, III. 12, 3).

It is evident from all this, that even in the early days of Buddhism, rich laymen were in the habit of seeking to acquire religious merit by providing comfortable habitations for the monks; and although at first the use of such luxuries was only permitted in the rainy season, this restriction was soon removed, and a residence in covered dwellings became usual at all seasons of the year.

Then, as Buddhism spread, kings, princes, and rich men competed with each other for the privilege of erecting vast monasteries—sometimes called Vihāras², sometimes Sanghārāmas—to which temples, libraries, and schools were generally attached, and in which dwelt wealthy communities of monks, who were allowed to hold property in land.

The founding of extensive and important institutions of this kind was, of course, an exceptional proceeding. As a general rule, collections of monastic dwellings were of a simple and unostentatious character. In various parts of India are to be seen in the present day ancient Buddhist cave-monasteries now untenanted, some of

¹ The objection to the hollow of trees was that spirits, ghosts, and goblins often took up their abode there.

The term Vihārs was afterwards usually applied to temples, or to buildings combining temple and monastery in one.

them—such as the caves of Barabar—as old as the third century s.c.

I myself visited those at Elora (Elura), twelve miles from Aurangabad in the Nizam's territory, as well as others at Nasik, Karle, and other places. The Elora caves are possibly as old as the third century 1, and with the adjoining Brahmanical and Jain caves of later date, extend for one mile and a quarter along the scarp of an elevated plateau. The three groups of caves rival each other in the beauty and interest of their sculptures, and together constitute one of the wonders of Indiatheir position side by side proving that the adherents of the three systems lived together in harmony. Among the Buddhist caves are beautiful 'Caityas' or halls for general worship (see p. 450), refectories for commensality, and cells without number for the habitation of the monks. All the excavations had become partially filled up; but the visit of the Prince of Wales in 1876 stimulated the Nizam's government to clear away the dust and rubbish of centuries.

Then, besides cave-monasteries, the ruins of extensive monastic establishments built of brick, stone, or other less durable materials, are scattered everywhere throughout India.

Those of the vast monastery of Nālanda near Rājagriha, and others at various other sacred places, have been already described (see p. 412).

Turning next to the monastic structures of modern Buddhist countries, and beginning with Ceylon, we find

^{*} Some authorities place them in the sixth century of our cra.

that in that island, as Spence Hardy has pointed out, and as I myself observed during my sojourn there, the residences of the monks are of very simple construction, and often extremely mean in appearance. They are called Pān-sālās (Paṇṇa-sālā = Sanskrit Parṇa-sālā) because supposed to be made of leaves. In general, however, they are constructed of wattle filled up with mud, the roof being covered with straw, or with the platted leaves of the cocoa-nut. They are always dirty and always abound in cobwebs.

A monastery which I saw near Kandy consisted of an oblong rectangular court-yard, surrounded in the interior by a kind of roofed cloister or veraudals, out of which opened the monks' cells, lighted only from the sky above the court. The interior walls of both cloister and cells were begrimed with patches of dirt and masses of cobwebs, which are never touched for fear of breaking the first Buddhist commandment, 'kill not' (p. 126).

Of course there are monasteries of a better and more imposing type, such as that attached to the Māligāwa temple of the sacred eye-tooth on the Kandy lake (see p. 454).

In Burma the ordinary residences of the monks appear to be simple in character, like those in Ceylon. In Siam, on the contrary, they are sometimes elaborate, and often have richly-covered entrances. At the same time the Siamese monks (according to Mr. Alabaster) are in the habit of itinerating a good deal, only remaining in their monasteries during the three months of rains, when residence there is imperative.

Speaking of the larger and more imposing monasteries (Kyoung) in Burma, Mr. Scott says (I give his account in an abbreviated form)!—

The monasteries are built of teak, or, sometimes in Mandalay and Lower Burma, of brick. The shape is always oblong, and the inhalited portion is raised on posts and nillars, eight or ten feet above the ground. They are, like all the other houses in the country, only one story high; for if it is an indignity to a layman to have anyone's feet over his head, it is much more so to a member of the brotherhood. The space between the ground and the floor is always kept open, and is never used except by the monustery school-boys. A flight of steps of stone or wood leads up to the versudah, which extends along the north and south sides, and frequently all round. From the raised floor thus reached, rises the building, with tier upon tier of massive roofs (in diminishing stages), giving the appearance of many stories when there is only one. The accommodation is simple. It consists in the main of a central hall divided into two portions, one level with the verandah where the scholars are taught, and most of the duties of the monastery carried on, and the other a dais, raised about two feet. above the level of the rest of the building. Seated upon this, the monks are accustomed to receive visitors, and at the back, against the wall, are arranged the images of Buddha, a large one usually standing in the centre on a kind of altar, with condles, flowers, praying flags, and other offerings placed before it. On shelves alongside are a number of smaller figures of gold, silver, alabaster, clay or wood, according to the popularity of the monastery, and the religious character of the neighbourhood. Occasionally there are dormitories for the marks. but as a rule they sleep in the central hall, where the mats which form their beds may be seen rolled up against the wall. The whole area of the extensive compound in which the monastery stands is enclose'

This is curiously illustrated in a recent letter from a resident in Burma to the Editor of the Times newspaper, in which it is stated that about six months after King Thechaw had been deported, some of his things were exhibited by us in the lower rooms of the Rangoon Museum, to the great disgust of his Burmese admirers, who asked, how we dared place their king's things in a lower room where people could walk above them?

by a beavy teak fence with massive posts and mile, seven or eight feet high. The laity, when they enter, take off their choes and carry them in their hands. This rule applies to the highest in the land.

The daily life of the manks inhabiting monasteries of this kind in Burma has been already described (see pp. 311-314 of these Lectures).

If we now pass to northern Buddhist countries we shall find that, as a general rule, the dwellings of monks are insignificant tenements of poor construction, attached to or built round small chapels or shrines. Sometimes the monks live in the rooms built over such chapels.

Sir Richard Temple (Journal, ii. 207) visited a socalled monastery at Pemyangchi (in Sikkim), which consisted of a single building with two stories. In the upper some of the monks resided, and a chapel formed the lower.

The temple-monastery I myself visited in British Sikkim, near Därjiling, is similar. The exterior appearance might be compared to that of some small Dissenting chapel in an English village. The thatched roof, which once gave it a picturesque appearance, has recently been removed, and a roof of modern construction substituted. The shrine or temple is on the ground floor, while the upper floor is the abode of the attendant priests, and seems also to serve as a store-room with cupboards for their equipments. The contents of the ground-floor temple, with its altar at the further end and shelves for the sacred books on one side, are very indistinctly seen, being only lighted up by a 'dim religious light,' when the door is kept wide open. I noticed three images on the altar,

The case is different when large numbers of monks congregate in particular places. In some districts of Ladak, Mongolia and Tibet, monasteries (or Lamaseries as they are sometimes called) have been erected, which for vastness, magnificence, and grandeur of situation amid splendid scenery, are unequalled in any part of the world.

According to strict rule, retired localities should be chosen. Hence large monastic establishments are often found in solitary places ¹ and elevated situations; for instance, in Ladak those at Lama Yurru and Hemis are more than 11,000 feet above the sea, and that at Hanle is 14,000 feet. They resemble romantic castles towering upwards in the midst of rocks, crags, and snowy mountains.

Another monastery at Kdang (Kyelang), in the British Tibetan province of Labūl (contiguous to Ladāk), stands on the spur of a mountain, at an elevation of 12,000 feet, and is approached through grand ravines and glaciers, so that occasionally, after snow-storms, those who pass to and fro are buried in avalanches.

The outer walls of large monasteries of this kind in secluded situations are generally lofty. Often they are made of stone or brick, plastered with mud and surmounted with little pinnacles and poles, on which are prayer-flags. Within the walls are cells for the monks, the abode of the Head or Abbot, a room for holding books, a temple, an assembly-hall, a refectory, store-houses, receptacles for musical instruments, masks,

It is for this reason that in the Tibetan language they are collid. Gurpa.

staves, etc.; the buildings being often arranged in rows, and always intermixed with Stupas (see p. 504) and monuments. The walls of the vestibules and of the great hall are usually ornamented with fresco-paintings, representing subjects from the Buddhist Jatakas (p.111). Generally there are corridors or covered cloisters lined with prayer-wheels, or open walks paved with stone, called in Sanskrit Cankramana (Pāli, Cankamana), for the monks to perambulate up and down in meditation. These are supposed to be constructed after the pattern of the stone walking-places used by the Buddha himself (see p. 400).

In the monastery at Kilang the roof of the great hall is supported by massive beams garnished with belts, swords, yaks' tails, huge and terrible masks, and all sorts of odds and ends. On one side is a huge prayingwheel, on each revolution of which a bell is struck. A dim subdued light pervades the entire hall, exaggerating the ghastly hideousness of the figures?

To take as another instance—the monastery or Lamasery of Kunbum (or Kumbum) north of Tibet, celebrated as the birth-place of Tsong Khapa (p. 277), and situated, according to M. Huc, on a mountain intersected by a broad and deep ravine:—

On either side of the ravine, and up the slopes of the mountain, rise, in amphitheatrical curves, the white dwellings of the Lamas, each with its little tervace and enclosing wall, while here and there above them 'tower the temples, with their gilt roofs glittering with a thousand colours.' The houses of the superior monks are distinguished by pennants, floating above small hexagonal turrets, while

So described in a pamphlet on Buddhist Monasteries in Lahoul, by Moravian Missionary.

those of the ordinary monks are simple cells. On all sides mystical sentences, in the Tibetan character, meet the eye (see p. 381), some inscribed on doors, some on walls and stones, or on linen flags fixed on poles.

Almost everywhere are conical vessels, in which incense and odoriferous wood are burning; while numbers of Lamas circulate through the streets of the monastery in their red and yellow dresses—grave in their deportment, and, although under no obligation to silence, speaking little, and that little in a low voice.

This Lamasery of Kunbum enjoys so great a reputation, that the worshippers of Buddha make pilgrimages to it from all parts of Mongolia, Tartary, and Tibet, and on the occasion of great festivals the confluence of strangers is immense. It is much frequented by Eastern Tibetans.

Near Kunbum is a much smaller monastery, devoted to the study of medicine. It is at the foot of a rocky mountain, on the beights of which dwell certain contemplative monks. M. Hue saw one of these hermits, who never communicated with the outer world except for food, which he drew up to his rocky cell by the help of a bag tied to a long rope (ii. 73).

Some mention should also be made of the monasteries at Kuku khotun, 'the blue city' in Tartary. That town contains no less than five great Lämaseries and fifteen affiliated monasteries, with a grand total of 20,000 Lämas dwelling in them. The chief monastery is that of the 'Five Towers'—not to be confounded with one of the same name in the Chinese province of Shan si.

This latter is a celebrated place for burials (see p-370), and pilgrims may there be edified by a sight of the Buddha's shadow impressed on a rock. Another example of a monastery in a remote situation is that of Kurun or Kuren (see p. 295), situated on the slope of a mountain in Mongolia. In this celebrated monastery of the Grand Läma Täranätha 30,000 Lämas (according to M. Hue) are lodged and supported.

The plain at the foot of the mountain is constantly covered with tents of various sizes for the convenience of pilgrims. Hither throng the worshippers of Buddha from the most remote countries.

Viewed from a distance, the white cells of the Lamas, built on the declivity in horizontal lines one above the other, resemble the steps of an enormous altar, of which the temple of the Turnsitha Lama appears to constitute (in Roman Cutholic phraseology) 'the tabernacle.' In this country Turnsitha is the saint par excellence, and there is not a Tartar Khalka who does not take a pride in calling himself his disciple.

Passing on now to Tibet, we find that in its principal provinces the number of monastic institutions connected with its two respective capitals of Lhassa and Tashi Lunpo, is more than a thousand, with 491,242 Lamas. This is the estimate of the latest traveller!

According to Huc, more than thirty large monasteries may be reckened in the neighbourhood of Lhassa alone.

Adverting for a moment to Lhassa itself, we may note that this 'city of the gods'—the chief town of the province of U, situated on the Ki-éhu river —had in 1854 about 15,000 inhabitants within a circumference of two-and-a-half miles. According to a Chinese proverb, its chief inmates have always been 'priests, women, and dogs.' Koeppen affirms that Lhassa has always been a greater nest of monk-priests than Rome has ever been.

¹ Mr. Sarat Chandra Düs gives the mmes of 1026 monasteries. Keeppen makes 3000 monasteries and 84,000 Lümas.

A small river flowing into the Tsanpo or Brahma-putra.

Doubtless its population is now increased, and includes a considerable proportion of laymen; yet, in all likelihood, at least two-thirds of the inhabitants are monks; and it cannot be too often repeated that, according to the true theory of Buddhism, the only raison d'être of the laity is to wait upon the monkhood.

Moreover, Lhāssa, next to Benares and Mecca, is, perhaps, the most frequented place of pilgrimage upon earth. Scarcely a day passes on which the streets do not overflow with crowds of pilgrims—some from every quarter of Tibet, some from Bhutān and other Himālayan regions, some from all parts of Mongolia. All meet here to worship the incarnated representative of the Bodhisattva (Avalokitešvara) manifested in the Dalai Lāma—to receive his blessing, his consecrated pills, and his prayer-papers (see p. 331 of these Lectures). The residence of this Lāmistic Pope is at Potala.

In fact Potala on the north-west side of Lbassa is what the Vatican is to Rome. It existed in ancient times as a palace, but was rebuilt and converted into a palace-monastery by the celebrated fifth Dalai Lāma Navang Lobsang, A.D. 1617-1682 (p. 292 of this volume), and from that time forward became the residence of all the Dalai Lāmas, who had before lived either at Scra or at Brepung (Dapung, see p. 442).

In its striking and unique position, it is even more imposing than the Vatican.

Imagine a lofty structure erected on an isolated hill1,

The hill is called Potala, and the palace-monastery is named after it. Koppen says it has three peaks, but the illustration in Mark-

rising abruptly from the plain with three long summits or eminences, and watered at the base by the Ki-chu river, which flows into the great Tsanpo. The south-western ridge is the so-called Iron-hill, on which is a monastery where Tsong Khapa himself is said to have taught. The north-eastern bears the name of the Phagmo hill, while the highest is the hill of Potala, with its palacemonastery towering in four stories to the height of about 367 feet, and ending in a cupola covered with plates of pure gold.

From this vantage ground the incarnated Bodhisattva looks down on the crowds of pilgrims approaching to worship him, or kneeling at the foot of the hill. The buildings grouped in the vicinity are said to contain 10,000 rooms, for the accommodation of as many monks. Countless are the statues of Buddha, with other idols and images of saints, not to mention obelisks and pyramidal monuments, which meet the eye everywhere. All sacred objects are manufactured out of gold, silver, or copper, according to the wealth of those who have brought them as offerings. Two ascending avenues lead up from Lhāssa to Potala, which are constantly througed with foreign pilgrims, troops of Lāmas in official vest-

ham's account of Manning's journey (p. 256) shows three long summits rather than peaks. The hill is called Buddha-la by Huc (ii. 140), but Koeppen (ii. 341) is more correct in stating that Potals is the name of a sen-port on the river Indus, called Pattals by the Greeks, and now Tatta. There is a tradition that this Potals was the original home of the Sakya tribe (see p. 21 of this volume).

^{&#}x27; Koeppen translates this by the German saw, but says it may also mean 'Hintero Berg.'

ments, higher Lamas and courtiers in full uniform. Yet we are told that a solemn religious silence prevails, for the thoughts of all are fixed in meditation.

I have already given an abstract of Mr. Sarat Chandra Dās' narrative of his visit to Potala, and his presentation to the Dalai Lāma on June 10, 1882 (see p. 331 of these Lectures). I now add an account of Mr. Thomas Manning's interview with the Dalai Lāma on December 17, 1811. No European, except Mr. Manning', has ever set eyes on a Dalai Lāma, and no other Englishman has ever seen Lhāssa (for M. Hue was misinformed; Moorcroft was never there):—

We rode to the foot of the mountain on which the palace is built, arout of which, rafler, it seems to grow; but having ascended a few paces to a platform, were obliged to dismount. From here to the hall where the Grand Liana receives visitors is a long and tedious ascent. It consists of about four hundred steps, partly atone steps in the rocky mountain, and the rest mere ladders from story to story in the palace. Besides this, from interval to interval along the mountain, wherever the ascent is easy, there are stretches interspersed, where the path continues for several paces together without steps. At length we arrived at the large platform on which is built the hall of reception. There we rested awhile, arranged the presents, and conferred with the Liana's Chinese interpreter.

The Ti-mu-fu was in the hall with the Grand Lima. I was not informed of this until I entered, which occasioned me some confusion. I did not know how much ceremony to go through with one, before I began with the other. I made the due obsistance, touching the ground three times with my head to the Grand Lima, and once to the Ti-mu-fu. I presented my gifts, delivering the coin and the hand-some silk scarf with my own hands into the hands of the Grand Lima. I then took off my hat, and hambly gave him my clean-shaven head to

Messes, Huc and Gabet failed in their attempt to obtain an interview with the Daki Lama of 1846.

lay his hands upon. The ceremony of presentation being over, the Mumhi and I sat down on two cushiers not far from the Lama's throne, and had tea brought to us. It was most excellent, and I meant to have emptied the cup, but it was whipped away suddenly, before I was aware of it. The Lama's beautiful and interesting face and manner engrassed almost all my attention. He was at that time about seven years old; and had the simple and unaffected manners of a well-educated princely child. His face was, I thought portically and affectingly beautiful. He was of a gay and cheerful disposition; his beautiful month perpetually unbending into a graceful smile, which illuminated his whole countenance. Sometimes, particularly when he had looked at me, his smile approached to a gentle laugh. No doubt my grim heard and spectacles somewhat excited his risibility. He inquired whether I had not met with molestation and difficulties on the road; to which I promptly returned the proper suswer. A present of dried fruit was brought and set before me, and then we withdrew. (Mr. Clements Markham's Tibet, p. 264, abridged.)

As to the monasteries grouped around this Vatican of Lamistic Buddhism, we may make special mention of four, noting a few particulars.

To begin with the oldest monastery, that of Lā brang, said to mean 'abode of Lāmas', 'which was built by King Srong Tsan Gampo (see p. 271 of this volume), and founded in the seventh century. This ancient institution is in the very centre of Lhāsta, and is regarded as the centre of the whole country. All the main roads of Tibet converge towards it. Doubtless the area of the monastery has been enlarged by occasional additions in the course of one thousand years, but not since it was partly rebuilt and restored in the seventeenth century. Its magnificent temple (Cho Khang) is the St. Peter's of Lāmism (see p. 459).

[.] It may also mean temple of Lhassa and 'abode of gods,' in which case La would be for Lha.

The immense number of monks inhabiting this monastery is proved by the fact that a huge cauldron is shown which holds more than 1200 gallons of tea for the Lämas who perform the daily services.

The other three monasteries near Potala and La brang, according to Koeppen, are devoted to the study of magic and the art of exorcising. We may take them in the following order:—

First, at a short distance north of Lā brang, stands the monastery Ramoche, 'the great enclosure,' which was the other ancient monastery built by Srong Tsan Gampo, or by one of his wives (see p. 271). It is now a great school of exorcism, and has a celebrated temple (see pp. 462, 463), containing the celebrated image of the Buddha, and also one of Nanda, Gautama's step-brother and disciple. Those who study here may gain the degree of 'Doctor of Magic,'

Next comes the monastery of Morn (or Muru or Meru), close to the city. It is noted for its order and cleanliness, and for its printing-press. Like the last, it contains a school for instruction in magic.

Then, at a short distance east of La brang (according to Koeppen), is the monastery of Gar Ma Khian—the mother monastery of soothsayers, fortune-tellers, and exorcisers (Chos-kyong, see p. 266).

Let us next turn to the three ancient 'mothermonasteries' of the Yellow sect—Galdan, Sera, and Dapung.

Galdan (or Gahdan), the 'heaven of contented beings' (Sanskrit Tushita, see pp. 207, 213)—the oldest monastery of the Yellow sect—is situated on the hill of the

same name, about thirty miles east of Lhassa. As already stated (pp. 278, 294), it was founded by Tsong Khapa A.D. 1409. It is three-quarters of a mile in circumference, and has 3300 menks.

Sera, 'the golden,' founded by Tsong Khapa (p. 278), or by one of his disciples immediately after his death, lies about three miles north of Lhässa, on a declivity of a hill, over which passes the road leading to Mongolia, It has 5500 monks, and numerous temples, towers, and houses curving round like an amphitheatre. On the hills above the town are rows of cells of contemplative monks and recluses.

Sera has three great temples several stories high, the halls of which are richly gilded. In one temple the staff of Gautama Buddha is preserved.

Brepung, Brebung, Prebung), 'rice-heap,' so called from the shape of the hill, was also founded by Tsong Khapa three years before Sera, and is situated four miles west of the city of Lhassa. It has 7700 monks. The great temple in the middle is surrounded by four small ones. One of these four belongs to the exorcisers and professors of magical arts, of whom there are nearly three hundred. In the centre of the monastery is a residence for the Dalai Lāma, when he pays his annual visit. Numbers of foreigners study here, especially Mongolians. In front of the monastery stands a Stūpa, which contains the bones of the fourth Dalai Lāma, Jon Tan Yam Thso, who was of a Mongolian family.

Hue says 'four leagues;' Koeppen 'drei meilen,' which is incorrect.

Mr. Edgar (Report, p. 41) mentions four other monasteries of the Yellow sect around Lhässa, Chemiling, Tengiling, Chechuling, and Kenduling. The last is said to be the residence of the Regent (p. 286 of these Lectures). Sarat Chandra Das gives a long list of menasteries, some containing 5000 monks (e.g. Rnam rgyal grvatsang, Gongdkar rDorjegdan, etc.) and some 7000.

We have next to describe the great monastery of the second Grand Läma of Tibetan Buddhism—I mean that at Tashi Lunpo, also belonging to the Yellow sect.

Taski Lunpo, near Skigatse, is the seat of government of the Taski Lama or Panchen Lama (see p. 284 of these Lectures), and the second metropolis of Lamistic Buddhism. Our knowledge of this celebrated place is derived from the record of the journeys of Mr. Bogle and Captain Turner, as well as from the narratives of Indian explorers.

According to some of these authorities, Tashi Lunpo is situated about 140 English miles in a nearly westerly direction from Lhässa. It is built on a level plain enclosed on all sides by rocky hills, through which a small river (the Painam) rushes into the great Tsanpo (Brahma-putra). The monastery is said to have been built by the first Dalai Läma, Gedun grub pa, in 1445 (see p. 291 of these Lectures), though the final seat of the Da'ai Lämas was at Lhässa.

According to Koeppen four roads meet at Tashi

These are also mentioned by Sarat Chandra Das and by Markham (p. 130, note 3), and again, differently spelt, at p. 264, note 1.

Lunpo; one leading to Lhāssa, one to Ladāk, one to Nepāl, and one to Bhutān.

Near at hand, on the north-cast side of the Tashi Lunpo monastery, on a rocky eminence protecting it from the cold winds, stands the fort of Shigatse (also written Shigatze), which, with its surrounding houses, forms the capital of the province of Tsang, just as Lhassa constitutes that of the province of U.

Our fellow countryman, Mr. Bogle, commissioned by Warren Hastings to open communications between Bengal and Tibet, arrived at Tashi Lunpo in 1774. His description of it is to the following effect. I give it abbreviated (from Mr. Clements Markham's Tibet):—

We passed by the foot of Tashi Lumpo, which is built on the lower declivity of a steep hill. The roof of the palace is all of copper-gilt. The building is of dark-coloured brick. The houses of the town rise one above another. Four churches with gilt ornaments are mixed with them. Altogether the town presents a princely appearance. Many of the courts are spacious, flagged with stone, and have galleries running round them. The alleys, which are likewise paved, are narrow. The palace is appropriated to the Lama and his officers, to temples, granaties, wavelanses, etc. The rest of the town is entirely inhabited by presets, who are in number about four thousand.

The following is the substance of Mr. Bogle's account of his interview with the Tashi Lāma on November 8, 1774 (abbreviated from Markham's Tibet):—

In the afternoon I had my first audience of the Tashi Lama. He is about forty years of age, of low stature, and inclining to be fat. His complexion is fairer than that of most Tibetaus, and his arms are as white as those of a European; his hair, which is jet black, is cut very short; his eyes are small and black. The expression of his countenance is smiling and good-humouved. He was upon his throne, formed

of wood carved and gilt, with some cushiona above it, upon which he sat with his lego folded under him. He was dressed in a mitra-shaped cap of yellow broadcloth, with long bors lined with red satiu, a yellow cloth jacket without sleeves, and a satio mantle of the same colourthrown over his shoulders. On one side of him stood his physician, with a bundle of perfumed sandal-wood rods burning in his hand; on the other stood his cup-hearer. I laid the Governor's presents before him, delivering the letter and the pearl necklace into his own hands, together with a white handkerchief on my own part, according to the custom of the country. He received me in the most engaging manner. I was seated on a high stool covered with a carpet. Plates of boiled mutton, boiled ries, dried fruits, sweetmeats, angar, bundles of ten, dried slicop's carcases, etc., were set before me and my companion, Mr. Hamilton. The Lima drank two or three dishes of tea with us, but without saying any grace, noked us once or twice to ent, and on our retiring threw white handkershiels over our nacks. After two or three visits, he need to receive on williand any ceremony, his head micovered, and dressed only in the large red partitions worn by all full monks, red boots, a yellow cluth vest, with his arms hare, and a piece of coarse vellow cloth thrown across his shoulders. He sat sometimes in a chair, sometimes on a bench covered with tiger-skins, and nobody but the cup-bearer present. Sometimes he would walk with me about the room, explain the pictures, or make some remarks upon the colour of my eyes, etc. For, although venerated as Gul's vicegerent through all the castern countries of Asia, and endowed with a portion of omniscience and with many other divine attributes, he throws uside in conversation all the awful part of his character, accommodates himself to the weakness of mortals, endeavours to make himself loved rather than feared, and behaves with the greatest affability to everybody, particularly to strangers.

In 1783, when Tashi Lunpo was visited by Captain Turner, the monastery consisted of 400 houses, many of which were built of stone and marble, and at least two stories high. They contained about 3700 monks (now 3800). Around the houses were gilded temples, pinnacles, pyramidal monuments (Stūpas), and above all the palace of the Tashi Lāma, forming a striking spectacle.

Captain Turner had a remarkable interview with the Grand Lāma at the neighbouring monastery of Terpaling, on December 4, 1783. He found the princely child, then aged eighteen months, seated on a throne, with his father and mother standing on the left hand. Having been informed that, although unable to speak, he could understand, Captain Turner intimated to him 'that the Governor-General, on receiving news of his decease, had been overwhelmed with sorrow, and continued to lament his absence from the world until the cloud was dispelled by his re-appearance. The Governor hoped that he might long continue to illumine the world by his presence.'

The infant looked steadfastly at the British envoy, and appeared to be listening to his words with deep attention, while he repeatedly nodded his head, as if he understood every syllable. He was silent and sodate, and conducted himself with astonishing dignity. Captain Turner thought him one of the handsomest children he had ever seen. It seems that he grew up to be an able and devout ruler, gratifying the Tibetans by his presence for many years, and living to a good old age.

Tashi Lunpo was not visited by the French missionaries, but M. Hue informs us (ii. 157) that in 1846 the then Panchen Lima was 60 years of age, and still vigorous. M. Hue was told that he was of Indian origin, and that he had declared of himself that his first incarnation had taken place in India some thousands of years before.

Mr. Sarat Chandra D\u00e4s, from whose notes of a journey in Tibet so many extracts have been already given, writes thus of his arrival at Tashi Lunpo on the 9th of December, 1881 (the extract is not given literally, and is abbreviated):—

In the afternoon we arrived at Tashi Lanpo. In front of Unwestern entrance I noticed two Chortens (that is, 'Caityas or Stūpas,' see p. 504 of these Lectures), one very large, with a gilt spire, and the other small. On entering the grand monastery, I mustered all my knowledge of Buddhist ceremonies and monkish etiquette, that I might not be criticised by the passing monks as one unacquainted with the duties of the wearers of the stored costone. I walked slowly and with gravity, but secretly observing everything around me. There were a few yake under the charge of there or four herdsmen, waiting probably for the return of some of their number from within the monastery. Some monks, riding on undes, passed as from north to south. A few parties with heavy grain packages on their backs were entering the monastery along with us. The rays of the son, now slanting on the gilded spirer of houses and toods in the monastery, presented a very imagnificent view to the eye.

While residing in the mounstery I saw people busily engaged in out-door work, such as collecting fuel and tending sattle. In fact, this was the busiest part of the year, when the Tibetans remain on the move for the purpose of buying and selling, at a time when the intensely cold winds wither up the vegetation, freeze the streams, harden the soil, and dry up the skin. The monks, like the lay-people, are remarkable for their habit of early rising. No monk within the walls of the monastery rose later than five in the morning, and the asual time for getting up was four a.m. Those who slept later, without any special cause, were subject to correction. At three in the morning the great trumpet summons all the monks to the religious service in the congregation hall. Whoever fails to attend is punished next morning. No register is kept, yet the officer who superintends the discipline can tell what monk out of two thousand has absented himself on any particular day. I was the only man who slept up to six in the marning. The monks used often to remark that, were I a regular mank of the monnetery, the superintendent's birch would have stript my body of its flesh.

About six miles from Tashi Lunpo, and on the road

leading from it in a south-westerly direction towards the monastery of Sakya (see below), is the monastery of Narthang, whence issued one of the three copies of the Kanjur (p. 272) brought to Europe by Brian Hodgson,

We have now to notice the two most important monasteries of the Red sect.

First, Sum ye (Sam yas) is on the great river Tsanpo, about forty miles from Lhassa, in a south-easterly direction. It was the first monastery founded in the eighth century by Padma-sambhava, after King Khri Srong De Tsan's restoration of Buddhism (pp. 271, 272). It is the metropolitan monastery of the Red-capped monks and Urgyanpa sect. Sam ye was visited by the Indian explorer Nain Singh in 1874, on his final journey to Lhassa', and by Sarat Chandra Das in 1882. Many of its images are of gold, and it possesses an extensive library. Padma-sambhava was a master of Indian Yoga and magic. He is fabled to have worked many miracles—such as filling empty jars with divine water—at Som ye. He undertook to expel all evil demons from Tibet, but was opposed by the Bon priests.

The other chief monastery of the Red sect is that of Sakya (Saskya), situated about fifty-five miles from Tashi Lanpo, on the road leading in a south-westerly direction towards Nepal. It has four great sanctuaries and a celebrated library, and is surrounded by a large town, with temples and houses mostly painted red (p. 273).

A For his services as an explorer and surveyor Nain Singh enjoys a Government pension, and has been awarded the gold medal of the Geographical Society. Sarat Chandra Das has been made a C.I.E.

It should be noted that in all the large monasteries of Northern Buddhist countries, varied assortments of vestments, robes, costumes, and masks are kept for use in the religious dances, masquerades, and dramatic performances which are a characteristic of Northern Buddhism. Indeed, some of the richer monasteries possess extensive wardrobes of great value, and the monks in their masquerading dances change their costumes very frequently and with great rapidity (see pp. 347-350).

Note, too, that the libraries of such monasteries generally contain large and valuable collections of books. The 108 volumes of the northern canon called Kanjur, with the commentaries called Tanjur (see p. 272), constitute a library in themselves. In addition to these, there are vast numbers of other treatises written to elucidate the mysteries of Northern Buddhism, most of which are still a terra incognita to European scholars. It is well known that in mediaval times some Buddhist monasteries became seats of learning, which might have vied with the most learned Universities established at that period in Europe.

Temples.

Although temples have been already adverted to as forming an important feature in all monasteries, and often an actual part of the edifice constituting the monastery; it will be worth while to devote a short space of time to their separate consideration.

In the earliest days of Buddhism neither temples nor halls nor rooms for meeting together (sangha-griha) were much needed. The monk recited the Law in the open air or in the houses of the laity. It was only when

t

collections of monks crystallized into regularly organized communities, and a kind of congregational recitation of the Law became a part of every day's duty, that the monks required places of assembly like churches for the performance of religious services.

Such places of meeting were often, like the cells for the monks, excavated out of rocks. And, since relicshrines called Caityas (as well as Stūpas, see p. 504) were erected at the further extremity of the excavated hall, the hall itself was generally called a Caitya.

The two principal rock-excavated Caitya-halls visited by me were at Elora (also spelt Ellora and Elura) and at Karle (Karli). I was also much interested in a smaller one at the Nasik caves. In their interior structure they are all strikingly like ancient Christian churches.

The Elora Caitya forms one of the series of caves already mentioned (p. 169). It is probably as old as the sixth century of our era, and is of an elongated horseshoe shape, with a massive ribbed roof arched like that of a cathedral, supported on twenty-night octagonal columns, over which runs a carious frieze, having on it a carved representation of a buffalo-hunt and boar-chase. There is a nave with side-aisles about 86 feet long by 43 broad. Moreover, over the entrance, supported by two square columns, is a gallery which may have served for a choir or for a band of musicians. A lofty solid Dagaba, in shape like a massive dome resting on a cylindrical base, stands at the further end of the nave, the aisles being continued round it, so that worshippers may circumambulate the apse. The front of this immense relic-receptacle is hollowed out to receive a colossal

sedent figure of the Buddha, about 17 feet high 1, with the Bodhi-tree carved in an arch above his head. Two images of attendants are in an erect attitude, one on each side, but are not so prominent as to draw off the eye from the immense central figure.

The Brāhmans have now appropriated this cave, and dedicated it to Višva-karma, the supposed patron deity of builders and carpenters. I was told that carpenters come from all parts of the country to worship the image in its Brāhmanical character. As a token of honour, they smear it with red paint.

I noticed a remarkable sculpture carved out of the rock near this cave-temple. It represented worshippers praying to Padma-pani to be delivered from fire, from sword, from captivity, from wild beasts, from snakes, and from the skeleton Death who is seen approaching.

The Caitya cave at Kārle, near Poona, which I visited in 1876, is in all its dimensions and arrangements similar to the Viśva-karma cave at Elorā, but is still larger, finer, and more imposing. It has a nave and side aisles, terminating in an apse, round which the aisle is carried. The whole is about 124 feet long by 45½ feet broad and 46 feet in height. There are fifteen pillars on each side, separating the nave from the aisles, and under the dome of the apse is the Dāgaba (or Ćaitya)—a two-storied cylindrical drum, surmounted by a Tee ornament (p. 456), on which is a wooden umbrella. There is a cavity in the Dāgaba for relics, though none are now to be found there.

¹ My authority for all these details is Dr. Burgess' Report.

This wonderful excavation at Karle is one of the most magnificent monuments of ancient Buddhism, and one of the most interesting examples of early Buddhistic art to be seen anywhere in India. And, more than this, it is probably one of the most striking places of congregational worship to be seen anywhere in the world.

Of course these rock-excavated churches soon developed into temples (Vihāras) built of stone or brick, some of which were of a monumental character, like that at Buddha-Gayā, already described (see p. 390), while others were unpretending structures near villages, where the laity could repeat their prayers or make offerings. Others, again, formed the most important edifice among the group of buildings constituting a monastery.

The village temples might more suitably be called chapels. All have some features in common. At the further end of a dimly-lighted room is an altar of stone or wood. On this are placed the idols, and around them are arranged vases and cups, in which the offerings of the laity are deposited. The larger edifices have vestibules, and at the entrance are generally rude images of the four great kings (p. 206), who are supposed to be the guardians of Buddhism (p. 206), while inside there are sculptures, frescoes, and pictures illustrative of the various births and transmigrations of the Buddhas and Bodhi-sattvas. In the precincts is always to be found a Bodhi-tree (Bo-tree, p. 519), if the climate and soil will admit of its being reared. The greater number of sacred structures, however, even those of a more important kind and more entitled to be called temples, are mere square or oblong rectangular buildings, without architectural design or ornamentation,

In Ceylon I visited a temple of this kind on the shore of the Kandy lake. It consisted of a large bare room or small hall, at the further end of which was a curtain concealing a highly venerated image of the Buddha. The attendant drew aside the curtain and showed us the image, which had representations of rays of light issuing from all parts of his body, as well as five rays emerging from the crown of his head. In the enclosure or 'compound' of the temple, was a bell-shaped Dagaba or relic-shrine of solid brick-work, covered with Chunam, and having a receptable for lights in front of it. Close at hand was the usual sacred Pipal-tree.

At Kelani, about eight miles from Colombo, is a larger and much more important temple which I also visited. Those who make pilgrimages to this temple gain great stores of merit. It contains a colossal recumbent image of the Buddha, thirty-six feet long, lying on his right side, and representing the founder of Buddhism when about to pass into Pari-nirvana (see p. 50). The image is protected by a screen, in the centre of which is a figure of the King of Serpents, while at the sides are gigantic images of the temple-guardians. Around the interior are fresco paintings of various incidents in the previous lives of the Buddha. There are also images of the Hindu gods Vishņu, Siva, and Ganesa (see p. 206). In the garden of the temple are residences for the monks, a cloister-like enclosure, a room with a good printing press, and an immense Pipal-tree.

A still more important temple is that called the

Dalada Māligāwa or temple of the sacred eye-tooth, at Kandy in Ceylon. This is a very picturesque structure, situated on the margin of the lake close to the town. It has no surrounding walls, and is easily accessible to all comers. Steps lead up to a kind of open corridor, in which is the main entrance, and the walls of which are decorated with coloured frescoes of the eight principal hells—the supposed abode of cvil-doers undergoing purgatorial torments during one of their states of existence (see p. 120)^c.

Some are represented in the act of being cut in pieces by demons, or fixed on red-het iron spikes, or torn asunder with glowing tongs, or sawn in two with saws, or crushed between rocks, or consumed by flames entering the apertures of their bodies. The European visitor inquires with amazement how it is that a system so mild, merciful, and tolerant, should have invented the horrible tortures here exhibited. The explanation is not difficult, and his astonishment ceases when he is reminded that Buddhism, recognizing no moral Governor of the Universe, is compelled to resort to such artifices for the coercion and intimidation of evil-doers.

In the interior of the building is the shrine, in which is preserved behind iron bars, the golden Dāgaba or receptacle of one of the Buddha's eye-teeth (see p. 500). On each side are images, and when I visited the shrine, the whole chamber was redolent with the fragrance of masses of flowers—chiefly jasmine—recently deposited before them as offerings.

¹ Copies of these were made for me by a Sinbalese artist.

Behind the building I found an open quadrangle with cells for the monks, and a residence for the Head of the monastery. Not far from the entrance was a spacious library, where I was greeted by a number of youthful monks, dressed in simple toga-like vestments, but with their right shoulders left bare. Some were engaged in writing. I therefore asked for a specimen of their penmanship. Upon which they wrote down for me on palm leaves, in the Sinhalese character, forty-eight epithets of the Buddha, such as the following :-God of the gods, Indra of Indras, Brahma of Brahmas, the Almighty, Omniscient, Existing in his own Law, Lord of the Law, Saviour of all, Conqueror, King of doctrine, Ocean of grace, Treasury, Jewel, Sun, Moon, Stars, Lotus, Ambrosia of the World, the Five-eyed one, the Bull, Elephant, Lion among men, stronger than the strongest, mightier than the mightiest, more merciful than the most merciful, more meritorious than the most meritorious, more beautiful than the most beautiful, etc.

The temples in Burma are commonly called 'pagodas,' a word corrupted from the Pāli Dāgaba (Sanskrit Dhātu-garbha), 'receptacle of the (sacred) elements' or relics of the body. They are also called Dagohn. According to Mr. Scott ('Burman,' i. 184), the number of temples in Burma far exceeds those in Ceylon or Tibet or China. No village so poor as to be without its 'neatly kept shrine, with the remains of others mouldering away around it; no hill so steep as to be without its glittering gold or snow-white spire rising up to guard the place; no work of merit so richly paid as the building of a pagoda.' Some are of simple con-

struction, others elaborate; but of all the temples the great Rangoon pagoda is the grandest and most crowded with worshippers and pilgrims.

The peculiar sacredness and popularity of this wonderful structure (said to have been founded 588 B.C.). arises from its containing relics of Gautama and his three predecessors, that is, eight hairs from Gautama's head, the staff of Kasyapa, the robe of Kanaka-muni, and the drinking-cup of Kraku-échanda (see p. 135 of these Lectures). The stately pile stands upon a mound -partly natural, partly artificial-cut into two rectangular terraces one above the other, the upper being 166 feet above the ground, and each side facing one of the cardinal points of the compass. The ascent is by very dilapidated steps, some of stone, some of sun-dried bricks, worn almost into a slope by the bare feet of myriads of worshippers.' None but Europeans may ascend with covered feet. The stairs lead to a 'broad, open flagged space, which runs all round the pagoda, and is left free for worshippers. From the centre of this springs, from an octagonal plinth, the 'profusely gilt solid brick pagoda,' which has a circumference of 1355 feet, and rises to a height of about 328, 'or nearly as high as St. Paul's cathedral,' On the summit is 'the Tee,' a gilt umbrella-shaped ornament with many tiers of rings, on each of which hang multitudes of gold and silver jewelled bells.' It was 'placed there at a cost of not much less than £50,0001. At the foot of the pagoda are four chapels, having colossal figures of Buddha

In this description I have chiefly followed Mr. Scott.

at the sides, and their gilded interiors darkened by the vapour of thousands of burning tapers. 'Hundreds of Gautamas,' large and small, white and black, gilded and plain, sitting, standing, and reclining, surround the larger images. It is said that the great pagoda has been thrice covered with gold-leaf.

There is a still higher pagoda (332 feet high) at Pegu, and the most aucient of all is at Arakan.

Passing to Northern Buddhist countries, we find that the temples are generally simple, and not to be compared with the grand pagedas of Burma.

For example, at Tassiding in Sikkim, Sir Richard Temple (Journal, ii, 204) found that the two principal temples were chapel-like structures with 'avershadowing umbrella-shaped roofs, thatched with split bamboos." The walls were of rough stone, the upper half being painted red. The interiors, which were dimly lighted, had two stories, the walls being covered with coloured frescoes illustrating the punishments in the various hells, 'some of which would be suitable for illustrations of Dante's Inferno.' The ends opposite to the entrance were filled with images. In other parts of the chapels were praying-machines, and on shelves the remnants of a library of sacred Buddhist manuscripts. Sir Richard attended a religious service in one of these chapels, which consisted of a series of chants and invocations to a female demon called Tanma, represented by a hideous lay figure dressed in robes. According to tradition, it was the malevolent action of the twelve Tanmas in bringing pestilences on the Tibetans, that led them to send for Padma-sambhava, who introduced

the debased Buddhism subsequently prevalent in Tibet (Note by Capt. R. C. Temple).

According to Dr. Schlagintweit (p. 189) and Koeppen the generality of temples in Mongolia and Tibet consist of one large square or rectangular room, with an entrance-hall or vestibule, which in Mongolia looks to the south and in Tibet to the east. 'The inside surface is whitewashed or covered with a kind of plaster,' and decorated with paintings representing episodes taken from the life of the Buddhas, or with pictures of gods and goddesses of terrible aspect, Generally images of the four great kings are placed here as guardians of the sanctuary (p. 206 of this volume). Sometimes there are side chambers, which may be compared to transepts, and give the building the form of a cross. These chambers often have shelves for the sacred books, wrapped in silk. In the corners are tables for images of the deities, religious dresses, musical instruments, etc. Other articles required for the daily service are hung up on wooden pegs along the walls. Benches for the Lamas are placed in the hall of the temple.

The altar at the further extremity rises in steps made of wood, beautifully carved and richly ornamented. Upon these are arranged images of the Buddhas and Bodhi-sattvas, and especially the chief idol representing Gautama Buddha in some of his forms and attitudes. Here also are vessels for offerings, bells, Dorjes (p. 323), and other utensils used in religious worship. Among the latter may be seen the mirror (Melong, see p. 463) used in the ceremony described at p. 335. There is

also a vase with peacock's feathers, and a sacred book is never wanting.

The vessels for offerings are of brass, and like teacups. They are usually filled with barley, butter, and perfumes, and in summer with flowers. Near at hand is a Chorten (p. 380) containing relies, and having a niche with the image of a Buddha or Bodhi-sattva, to whom the temple may perhaps be dedicated.

Finally, in the entrance-vestibule, at both sides of the door, as well as in the interior, stand rows of large and small prayer-cylinders, which are perpetually kept revolving by the attendant Lāmas.

Of course the temples at the great centres of Tibetan Buddhism in and near Lhāssa, Tashi Lunpo, and other important places, are far more imposing. Indeed, for magnificence, few religious edifices in any part of the world can compare with them.

The great temple (called Cho Khang) in the monastery of Lā brang at Lhāssa is a kind of centre of the Lāmistic Church. It is the first and oldest temple, and, as before stated (p. 440), the St. Peter's of Lāmism ¹.

The facade of this vast structure looks to the east, and in front of it is a square place, with a kind of obelisk or monolith, commemorating the victory of the Tibetans over the Chinese in the ninth century, as well as more recent treaties of peace and friendship between the two countries. The main building is three stories high. Before the entrance stands a lofty flag-pole, forty

This description is based on Koeppen, ii, 234, and on the narrative of Sorat Chandra Das' journey in 1881, 1882.

feet high, and not far off is a poplar, said to have sprung 'from the consecrated hair of Buddha.' The portice of the temple consists of a colonnade of six thick wooden columns. The walls of the portice are covered with rude paintings, representing scenes in the biography of Gautama Buddha. In the middle are folding doors adorned with bronze carvings in relief. Through these is the entrance into the front hall, over which is the first story. In the wall opposite to the entrance is a second door, on each side of which stand two colossal statues of the four great kings (see pp. 23, 51, 53, 54 of this volume).

This second door leads into the interior of the building. On entering, the visitor finds himself in a vast temple, shaped like a basilica, divided by rows of columns into three naves and two transepts. The broad central nave is lighted from above by transparent oil-cloth instead of glass. This is the only light which finds its way into the temple, as there are no side windows. On the outside of the two secondary naves is a row of small chapels, fourteen on one side and fourteen on the other. The two transepts form the back-ground of the great hall, and are separated from the naves by a silver lattice-work. Here, at the ordinary services, are the seats of the inferior monks. From the west transept a staircase leads to another pillared transept, which forms the vestibule of the

³ Sarat Chandra Das mentions a fing-pole forty feet high, on which are some inscriptions, two tufts of yak hair, and several yak and sheep-horns.' Possibly this may be the obelisk mentioned by Koeppen.

sanctuary. In the middle of the sanctuary, which is square in form, is the altar for offerings. Beyond the altar, at the west side of the sanctuary, and therefore in the furthest recess of the whole building, is a quadrangular niche. In front of this niche on the left is the throne of the Dalai Lāma, very lofty, richly adorned and furnished with five cushions, as is customary in the case of Grand Lāmas. On one side of the Dalai Lāma's throne is a similar throne for the Panchen Lāma, and then, in regular order, the thrones of the Khutuktus and other Avatāra Lāmas. The Khanpos and the whole non-Avatāra mankhood have seats in the transept.

Opposite to the throne of the Dalai Lama, on the right of the niche, is the chair of the Regent, which is less elevated than the thrones of the Avatara Lamas. Behind are the seats of the four ministers, which again are less elevated than those of the non-Avatara Lamas. At the west end of the niche is the high altar, which rises in numerous steps. On the upper steps are small images of deified saints, in massive gold or silver. On the lower ones, as on all Buddhist altars, are lamps, incense-holders, bowls for offerings, etc. On the highest elevation, behind silver and golden lattice-work, is the celebrated image of Gautama Buddha richly gilded. This image is said to have been constructed in Magadha during the lifetime of the Buddha. Others hold it to be self-produced; and another tradition ascribes its origin to the god Višva-karma, who, instructed by Indra, constructed it with equal parts of five metals and five precious stones. Besides this highest object of

worship, the temple contains countless images and pictures of Buddhas and Bodhi-sattvas (such as Dipamkara, Amitābha, Maitreya, the eleven-faced Avalo-kitesvara, Mañju-sti, etc.), besides gods and goddesses, and historical personages, such as Tsong Khapa, who have benefited the Lämistic church (among them being a statue of Hiouen Thsang), as well as relies, and gold and silver vessels, which are exhibited every year at the beginning of the third month.

Mr. Sarat Chandra Däs, who, in his 'Narrative,' records his visit to the great Lhässa temple, informs us
that when he was there, five thousand oil-burners were
lighted in the court of the temple, and those before the
principal image were all of gold. He found some of the
subordinate chapels infested by mice, which are never
touched, because supposed to be metamorphosed monks.
He observed some Buddhists from Nepäl chanting
Sanskrit hymns, and others engaged in circumambulation, while the muttering of Om Mani padme Hüm
(p. 372) was incessant.

Mr. Sarat Claudra Dās also describes a visit he paid to the famous shrine of Ramočke, before adverted to (see p. 441). I give his description in an abbreviated form:—

Our equipment was as usual a bundle of incense-sticks, clarified butter, and a few scarves. Our road turned westward by the side of a long Mandong (see p. 380). I left it to my right-hand side, seeing that to have kept it on my left would have been heretical. A few handred

One of these is the terrific goddess Paldan (p. 491), worshipped by all Tibetans and Mongols, and identified with the goddess Kall,

paces brought us to the gate of the famous temple of Hamoche, erected by the wife of King Srong Tsan Gampo, the first Chinese princess who introduced Buddhism into Tibet. It is a lofty edifice, flat-roofed, and three stories high, surrounded by a stone wall, with a high and wide porch. About thirty manks were solemnly seated to perform a religious service, on two sides of a row of pillars which supported the roof. The image brought by the Nepälese princess, lay midway between the pillars. It was grand-looking; and, though its face was gilded, its antiquity was manifest. In the northern lobby of the temple was a vast collection of ancient relics, such as shields, spears, drams, arrows, salves, long knives, trampets, etc. In a room to the left of the entrance, enclosed by iron lattice-work, were a few images considered especially sacred. We were also shown a brass mirror, called Melong, said to be possessed of wonderful properties.

The history of the shrine, according to the same traveller, is this:—The princess being thoroughly versed in astrology, found that there was a spot close to the new-built city of Lhassa which was connected with the lower regions of terment. On that plot of ground she erected the shrine of Ramoche, on the chief altar of which she placed the famous statue of Buddha, brought from China. In this way she hoped to intercept the passage (gati) of wicked people to a life in one of the hells (see p. 121). Whoever, at the time of death, was brought to this sanctuary, could only be born again in the worlds of either men or gods.

Finally we come to the temple at the second great Metropolis of Buddhism :—

Mr. Bogle (Markham's Tibet, p. 100) describes the temple in the monastery at Tashi Lunpo as simply a long room or gallery containing thirteen gigantic figures made of copper gilt, all in a sedent attitude, with their legs folded under them. He found them all draped, with jewelled crowns and necklaces of coral, pearls, and other stones. The thrones on which they sat were also of copper gilt, and adorned with turquoises and cornelians. Behind them were a variety of conch-shells, set in silver, ostrich-eggs, cocoa-nuts, and other articles. At each end of the gallery was a large collection of books deposited in pigeon-holes. Mr. Bogle was present when the Tashi Lāma himself entered the temple, and, as he passed along, sprinkled rice upon the images. This was a kind of consecration-ceremony.

As an instance of the tolerant character of Buddhism and its readiness to accommodate itself to the indigenous creeds of the countries into which it was introduced, we may note, in conclusion, that in Japan may be seen Buddhist and Shinto temples side by side or even occasionally combined in one building. Buddhism in fact adopted Shintoism in Japan just as it adopted Shamanism in Tibet. It took the deities and demi-gods of Shintoism and turned them into Bodhi-sattvas¹.

The subject of Monasteries and Temples naturally leads us to that of images and image-worship; but this and the whole subject of 'Sacred Objects' must be reserved for the next two Lectures.

^{&#}x27; My nuthority for this is Bishop Edward Bickersteth, the present Bishop in Japan.

LECTURE XVI.

Images and Idols.

On several occasions during my travels through all parts of India, I asked intelligent Pandits how they could reconcile the gross idolatry and fetish-worship which meet the eye at almost every step throughout the length and breadth of their land, with the doctrine repeatedly declared to be the only true creed of Brahmanism—the doctrine that nothing really exists but the one eternal, omnipresent Spirit of the Universe (named Brahman or Brahma).

The answer I generally received to this inquiry was, that spiritual worship was at first the only form of religion dominant in India, till the Buddhists set the example of worshipping material objects and images

(pratimā-pūjā).

Of course it is impossible to say what amount of truth there may be in this accusation. It seems probable that material impersonations of the forces of nature existed before the Buddha's time. Yet there is no evidence of the prevalence of actual idolatry at the time when the Rig-veda was composed. Nor is there any very clear allusion to it in Manu. Nor have any images of Hindu gods been found which are

See my 'Brahmanism and Hindüism '(published by Mr. Marray of Albemarie Street), pp. 2-29.

so ancient as some Buddhist images. At the same time nothing is said about image-worship in the Buddhist Pitakas. The statement that the Buddha' himself sanctioned idolatry is wholly legendary (see p. 177). Nor is there any proof that carved images of his person were common in India till several centuries after his death.

The Bharhut sculptures of about the second century s.c.—though representing many scenes connected with the Buddha (see pp. 408, 523)—exhibit no representations of the Buddha himself. Nor are there any on the Sanchi gateway of still later date.

The only objects of reverence in the Bharbut sculptures, according to Sir A. Cunningham, are Bodhi-trees, Wheels, the Tri-ratna symbol, Stupas, and foot-prints (see pp. 521-522 of these Lectures). The bas-reliefs on the railing at the Buddha-Gaya Temple, which is of a little earlier date, agree in making the Tree, Wheel, Tri-ratna, and Stupa the great objects of reverence. On the other hand, in the edicts of king Asoka veneration for the Bodhi-tree alone is enjoined. Among the historical scenes represented in the Bharhut sculptures, are the processions of the kings Ajāta-satru and Prasenajit on their visits to the Buddha; 'the former on his elephant, the latter in his chariot, exactly as they are described in the Buddhist chronicles. There are also basreliefs which seem to represent Rama, during his exile, besides images of other gods, Yakshas and Nagas, but no figure of Buddha himself is to be seen anywhere.

Yet it is undeniable that in the early centuries of our era, images of Gautama Buddha and other Buddhas and



LEGISTS BY A COLDWAY STATE OF BUILDING PROBABILY OXICE IN THE ASSETT ANTENNESS OF TRANSPORT AND THE USE OF \$81.

Freshol in the raine thee to the anoth side of the Buddlepting nemation data $PS \subseteq_{q} = 1$, p_1, p_2 ; being insatiled on the pole-tab

(Fo Fee bell of

Bodhi-sattvas had become common among the Buddhists in every part of India.

One of the oldest statues of the Buddha that has yet been brought to light is the colossal image (now in the Calcutta Museum) dug up in the ruins outside the ancient temple at Buddha-Gayā (p. 390), the date inscribed on which corresponds to about A.D. 142. The engraving (opposite) is from a photograph of this statue, belonging to Sir A. Cunningham '. The thick lips are certainly remarkable. The attitude was probably the 'argumentative' or 'teaching' (described at p. 481). Another colossal statue of about the same date was found by Sir A. Cunningham at Śrāvasti (see p. 408).

It was indeed by a strange irony of fate that the man who denied my god or any being higher than himself, and told his followers to look to themselves alone for salvation, should have been not only deified and worshipped, but represented by more images than any other being ever idolized in any part of the world. In fact images, statues, statuettes, carvings in bas-relief, paintings, and representations of him in all attitudes are absolutely innumerable. In caves, monasteries, and temples, on Dagalas, votive Stupas, monuments and rocks, they are multiplied infinitely and in endless variety, and not only are isolated images manufactured out of all kinds of materials, but rows on rows are sculptured in relief, and the greater the number the

Another nacions statue but not so old, though of a highly interesting type, was produced by me (for the Indian Institute at Oxford) from Buddla-Gaya on the occasion of my last visit in 1884, through the kind existance of Mr. Beglar. It is in the erest attitude.

greater religious merit accrues to the sculptor, and—if they are dedicated at sacred places—to the dedicator also.

And not only images of the Buddha, but representations of every object that could possibly be connected with him, became multiplied to an indefinite extent.

The gradual growth of what may be called objective Buddhism, and the steps which led to every kind of extravagance in the idolatrous use of images, may be

described in the following manner :-

It was only natural that the disciples of an ideally perfect man, who had taught them that in passing away at death he would become absolutely extinct, should have devised some method of perpetuating his memory and stimulating a desire to conform to his example. Their first method was to preserve the relics of his burnt body, and to honour every object associated with his earthly career. Then, in process of time, they began to worship not only his relies but the receptacles under which they were buried, and around these they placed sculptures commemorative of his life and Thence they passed on to the carving teaching. or moulding of small statuettes of his person in wood, stone, metal, terra-cotta, or clay, and on these they often inscribed the well-known Buddhistic formula mentioned before (see p. 104). Eventually, too, painting was pressed into the service, and frescoes on walls became common. Indeed in some temples paintings take the place of images, as objects of adoration,

It seems likely that the use of images and paintings was at first confined to the brotherhood, and it is

alleged that they were only honoured and not worshipped. But the more the circle of uncultured and unthinking Buddhists became enlarged, the more did visible representations of the founder of Buddhism become needed, and the more they became multiplied.

Nor was this all. The reaction from the original simplicity of Buddhism led to a complete repudiation of its anti-theistic doctrines. It adopted polytheistic superstitions even more rapidly and thoroughly than Brāhmanism did. People were not satisfied with representations of the founder of Buddhism. They craved for other visible and tangible objects of adoration—for the images of other Buddhas and Bodhisattvas—of gods many and lords many—insomuch that a Buddhist Pantheon was gradually created which became peopled with a more motley crowd of occupants than that of Brāhmanism and Hinduism.

Furthermore, it was only natural that the manufacture of the whole array of divinities and semi-divinities, of saints and sages, should have been committed to the monks. They alone possessed this privilege. They alone, too, had the power of consecrating each image by the repetition of mystical texts and formularies. And when images and idols were thus consecrated, they were believed to be animated with the spirit, and to possess all the attributes of the beings they represented.

In fact, the development of every phase of idolatrons superstition reached a point of extravagance unparalleled in any other religious system of the world. The monks of Buddhism vied with each other in the 'pious fraud' with which they constructed their idols. They so manipulated them that they appeared to give out light or to flash supernatural glances from their crystal eyes. Or they made them deliver oracular atterances, or they furnished them with movable limbs, so that a head would mexpectedly nod, or a hand be raised to bless the worshipper. Then they clothed them with costly vestments, and adorned them with ornaments and jewels, and treated them in every way as if they were living energizing personalities.

It ought, however, to be noted here, that in some temples images of the Buddhas and Bodhi-sattvas were said to exist which were not manufactured or consecrated by monks. They were believed to have been self-produced, or to have been created supernaturally out of nothing, or to have emerged in a miraculous manner out of vacuity. The child-like faith of uncultured and imaginative races in the virtue supposed to be inherent in such images was perhaps not surprising. The power of working all kinds of miracles was gradually ascribed to them; sicknesses were said to be healed by them, rain to be produced, and the course of nature itself to be subject to their direction and control.

The two Chinese pilgrims Fā-hien and Hiouen Thrang are never tired of describing the wonders supposed to have been wrought by the statues and idols they saw during their travels, especially by the marvellous sandal-wood statue mentioned before (see p. 408).

The following tradition in regard to this image, narrated by Fa-hien (Legge, 56, 57), is especially interesting as showing that the general belief among all classes of Buddhists in his time was, that Gautama Buddha himself was the first to sanction the making of visible representations of himself:—

When Buddha went up to the Trayastripia heaven and preached the law for the benefit of his mother for ninety days, Prasencjit longing to see him, caused an image to be carved in Gosirsha sandalwood, and put in the place where he usually sat. When Buddha, on his return, entered the Vihāra, this image immediately left its place, and came forth to meet him. Buddha then said to it: 'Return to your seat. After I have attained Pavi-nirvāņa you shall serve as a pattern to the four classes (paths, see p. 132) of my disciples.' Thereupon the image returned to its seat. This was the very first of all the images of Buddha, and that which men subsequently copied.

In Hiouen Thrang's narrative, which is of much later date (see p. 413), we find the following account of this celebrated sandal-wood image (Beal, ii, 322):—

At the town of Pima (Pi-mo) there is a figure of Buddlen in a standing position made of sandal-word. The figure is about twenty feet high. It works many miracles, and reflects constantly a bright light. Those who have any disease, according to the part affected, cover the corresponding place on the statue with gold-leaf, and furth-with they are bealed. People who address prayers to it, with a sincere beart, mostly obtain their wishes. This is what the natives say: 'This image in old days, when Buddha was alive, was made by Udayana, King of Kaniambi (see p. 412 of these Lectures). When Buddha left the world, it mounted of its own accord into the air, and came to the north of this kingdom to the town of Hu-lo-lo-kia (Urgha 7).'

With regard to the form and character of the countless images now scattered everywhere, they vary according to country and period (see p. 485). It should be observed, however, that Buddhism, when it began to encourage idolatry, did not make it hideous by giving monstrous shapes to its idols. In this respect early Buddhism contrasted very favourably with Hinduism. Nor did the Buddhists of India, as of other countries, adopt the practice of endowing their idols with extra heads and arms to symbolize power, or of inventing grotesque combinations of the human figure with the shapes of elephants, birds, serpents, and other animals. They seemed rather to have tried in the first instance to neutralize the tendency to extravagant symbolism common among all Eastern peoples, by delineating their great teacher as an ideal man, simply and naturally formed, according to the Buddhist ideal of perfection with symmetrical limbs, and a dignified, calm, passionless, and majestic bearing. What can be a greater contrast than the four-armed elephant-headed village-god of India, Ganesa, son of Siva 1-and the purely human figure of the Buddha as shown in his statues !

Nevertheless it must be admitted that in process of time the representations of Gautama Buddha developed certain peculiar varieties of form as well as differences in attitude. These differences, indeed, constitute a highly interesting topic of inquiry, and perhaps deserve more attention than they have hitherto received in any treatise with which I am acquainted.

Without going minutely into every point, we may begin by noting a few general characteristics common to all the Buddha's images.

In the first place, they all represent Gautama as clothed—not naked. In this respect they present a pleasant contrast to the images of Jaina saints; for, as

¹ See Brahmanism and Hinduism, p. 214.

already pointed out, Gautama discountenanced all extremes of bodily mortification, and disapproved the practice of going about nude, according to the custom of Hindu devotees. In the Dharma-pada it is said, 'Not nakedness, not matted hair, not dirt, not fasting, nor lying on the ground, nor smearing with ashes, nor sitting motionless can purify a mortal who has not overcome desires.'

Gautama's robe was drawn gracefully over his shoulders like a toga, but probably the right shoulder was always left bare on formal occasions. The Pitakas give no clear information as to this point. In Indian statues the robe is sometimes represented as fitting so closely to the body that the figure seems garmentless 1; its presence being merely denoted by a line running diagonally over the left shoulder across the breast, and under the right arm. This line frequently looks so like a cord that some have mistaken it for the thread to which, as a Kshatriya, Buddha was entitled 1. In some ancient images no trace of the line is left, but they are not really nude. Most Indian images have the right shoulder bare (even in the case of nuns). Of course in colder climates both shoulders are covered. Even in Southern countries some have both shoulders covered, or the right partially so.

In contradistinction to the clothed images of the Buddha, all the representations of his great opponent

A good example of this tight-fitting role is afforded by the ancient statue of the Buddha, mentioned at p. 467, note.

When Gantama renounced his family and caste, he doubtless discarded the cord, just as a true Sannyāsi is required to do (p. 78).

and rival Deva-datta (see pp. 52, 405) make the latter unclothed, like a Jaina ascetic, or only partially clothed up to the waist. Deva-datta is also represented as shorter in stature than the Buddha.

Other characteristics generally to be observed in the earlier images of Gautama Buddha are:—the impassive tranquil features, typical of complets conquest over the passions, and of perfect repose; the absence of all decoration and ornament; the long pendulous ears, which occasionally reach to the shoulders; the circle or small globe or lotus; or anspicious mark of some kind, on the palm or palms of the supinated hands (as well as often on the soles of the feet), and the short knobby hair, often carved so as to resemble a close-fitting curly wig.

It must not be forgotten that Gautama signalized his renunciation of the world by cutting off his hair with a sword, and the resulting stumps are said to have turned into permament knobs or short curls 3.

In images brought from Burma and Siam a curious horn-like protuberance on the crown of the head either tapering to a point, or rounded off at the ex-

In the Julien statues, the lobes of the ears, so far as I have observed, always touch the shoulders.

² Some think that this represents the wheel of the Cakra-varti emperor, or the wheel of the law, or the cycle of causes, or the continual revolution of births, deaths, and re-births. Dr. Mitra maintains that a lotus, and not a wheel, is always intended, though the lotus is often so badly carved that it may pass for any circular ornament.

² Dr. Rajendralála Mitra considers that curly locks were given to Gautama Buddha because the possession of curle is believed to be an auspicious sign. Some have actually inferred from the curl-like knobs, that Buddha was a negro!

tremity—is noticeable. Often, too, sculptures found in India show the rounded form of this excrescence.

Some think that it represents an ascetic's mass of hair coiled up in a top-knot on the crown of the head, as in images of the god Siva. Others regard it as the rough outline of what ought to be an Ushnisha or peculiar crown-like head-dress, such as may be seen in many later images of the Buddha. Some legends declare that the Buddha was born with this Ushnisha, which was indicative of his future supremacy.

Others, again, maintain that this protuberance (sometimes lengthened out so as to be as high as the head itself) was a peculiar growth of the skull, and one of the marks of a supreme Buddha indicative of supernatural intelligence; just as in other images (especially those brought from Ceylon) five flames—in shape like the fingers of a hand—are represented issuing from the crown of the head (see p. 453), to typify the Buddha's diffusion of light and knowledge throughout the world,

It is said that this outgrowth of the Buddha's skull has been preserved as a sacred relic in a town of Afghānistān near Jalālābād.

In many representations of the Buddha, a Nimbus or aureola of glory encircles the head (see p. 478), and in some images rays of light are represented as emerging from his whole body. An image with a halo of this kind surrounding the entire figure was seen by me in a temple near Kandy in Ceylon (see p. 453).

In Nepāl many images represent Buddla holding his alms-bowl, but these are not common in other places.

With regard to the size of the images, they vary

176

from diminutive examples, two or three inches long, to colossal statues twelve, eighteen, twenty, thirty, forty, or even seventy feet high. They are generally carved in stone or marble, but sometimes in metal, sometimes in wood, and occasionally moulded in clay.

Much difference of opinion prevails as to the Buddha's actual stature. When I asked the opinion of Buddhist teachers in Ceylon, they all agreed in assigning to the founder of their religion a majestic bodily frame, not only gifting him with the possession of the thirty-two distinguishing marks of a perfect man and supreme Buddha (see p. 20), but with great height and imposing presence. A common idea is that the eighteenfeet statues represent life-size. According to other legends the Buddha's stature reached to twenty cubits. In China, the mythical history of Buddha gives him a height of only sixteen feet . His arms are by some said to have been so long, that he was able to touch his knees with his hands without stooping, and if we are to take the supposed impress of his foot on Adam's Peak and in Siam as the measure of his stature. he must have been the most gigantic giant that ever lived. Even one of the most enlightened natives of Ceylon, the late Mr. James d'Alwis-a convert to Christianity-told me, in explanation of the abnormal size of the eye-tooth at Kandy, that he was convinced that all human beings were taller in Buddha's time, and that Gautama was taller than his fellow-men of those days, and was about eight feet high. It was his

¹ See Dr. Edkins' 'Chinese Buddhism' (p. 256).



RECEIVED VOICE OF SIE & PESSENDENT AT LIBRARY, SEAR BESSES,

illustrading the fast principal coarse in Garrana Buildar's 165. Lie birds from his members olde, his artificiant of Buildadood assess the time, his baselong at Branco, and his posseng way in principle. Strenge. (Deer of the willprine closed possen.)

opinion that as sin increases in the world, so men's stature decreases. Probably the Buddha was tall, even for the North-west of India, where the average of a man's stature is about five feet eight or nine inches.

As to the attitudes of Gautama's images, they may be classed under the three heads of sedent, erect, and recumbent. I use the word 'sedent' for what ought to be called a squatting position, with the legs folded under the body. Images which represent a figure sitting in European fashion are rare.

Four principal images represent the four principal events in Buddha's life, as shown in the Sarnath sculpture engraved on the opposite page (compare p. 387).

The first sedent attitude may be called the 'Meditative,' The example below is described at p. xxx. 15.



This represents the Buddha seated, in meditation,

on a raised seat under the sacred tree, with the two hands supinated, one over the other.

The second sedent attitude may be called the Witness-attitude. It is perhaps the most esteemed of all, and is represented in a good sculpture delineated below (from Sir A. Cunningham's photograph, see p.



xxx. 17). This represents Gautama at the moment of achieving Buddhahood after his long course of meditation, seated on a lion-throne (sinhāsana) with an ornamental back, having two lions carved below (compare p. 394). His legs are folded in the usual Indian fashion, the feet being turned upwards, while the right hand hangs over the right leg and points to the earth, and the left hand is supinated on the left foot. He

has an aureola round his head and a mark—perhaps the caste-mark of a Kshatriya—on his forehead, and an umbrella over the sacred tree. This attitude is well shown in the Sārnāth sculpture (facing p. 477).

The tradition is that at the moment of his enlightenment Gautama was taunted by the evil being Māra with being unable to give any proof or sign of his Buddhahood. Thereupon Gautama pointed, not to heaven as a Brāhman might have done, but to the earth beneath his feet, calling it to witness. Then a six-fold earthquake and other miraculous phenomena followed.

At this time, too, the evil being Mara sent his enchanting daughters (p. 34) to seduce the Buddha. This is shown in the engraving facing p. 477.

The incident of calling the earth to witness is thus mentioned by Hionen Thsang:—

In the Viltim, was found a beautiful figure of Buddles in a sitting position, the right foot uppermost, the left hand resting, the right hand hanging down. He was sitting facing the east, and as dignified in appearance as when alive. The signs and marks of a Buddha were perfectly drawn. The loving expression of his face was like life. Now it happened that a Sramana, who was passing the night in the Vihtim, had a dream, in which he saw a Brahman who said:—

"I am Maitreya Bodhi-antiva. Fearing that the mind of no artist could conceive the beauty of the sacred features, I myself have come to delineate the figure of Buddha. His right hand hangs down, in token that when he was about to reach Buddhahood the evil Maracume to tempt him, saying, "Who will hear witness for you?" Then Tathigata dropped his hand and pointed to the ground, saying, "Here is my witness." On this an earth-spirit lengt forth to bear witness." (Beal's Records, li. 121, abridged.)

This 'Witness-attitude' is also shown in the annexed

See Lalita-vistara (Calc. ed.), pp. 402, 403, 449, ll. 6-14.

engraving from a photograph of one of the only statues that remained in the exterior niches of the ancient Buddha-Gaya temple before its restoration.



The two seal-like circles on each side contain the usual 'Ye dharma' formula (see p. 104 and p. xxx, 18).

The third sedent pose or position may be called the 'Serpent-canopied.' This is commemorative of the legend that Gantama, when seated in meditation after his attainment of Buddhahood, was sheltered from a violent storm by the expanded hood of the Naga, or serpent-demon Mućalinda (see p. 39), while the coils of the snake were wound round his body, or gathered under him to form a seat. Similarly the ascetic form of Siva is often represented under a serpent-canopy.

Only one example of this has been found at Buddha-Gayā. Such images, however, are common in the south, and their prevalence there is not difficult to account for. Indeed, the connexion of Buddhism with the serpent-worship of southern countries and with the Nāgas of Hindū mythology (see p. 220 of these Lectures), was one inevitable result of its readiness to graft popular superstitions on its own doctrines.

I procured a good specimen of the 'Scrpent-canopied' Buddha during my stay in Ceylon. It is made of heavy brass, and curiously enough represents Buddha with an aquiline nose. It has the five rays of light before alluded to (see pp. 453, 475) issuing from the crown of his head. See the frontispiece opposite title-page.

In some images an undrella alone, and in some, as at p. 478, both an umbrella and tree form the emopy.

The fourth sedent posture may be called the 'Argumentative' (Tarka) attitude (as shown in the engraving opposite p. 477). It represents Gautama with the thumb and finger of the right hand touching the fingers of the left, and apparently going through the heads of his doctrine, and enforcing it, as he usually did, by reiterations. This is sometimes called the 'Teaching' attitude.

Often the 'Ye dharma' formula (see p. 104) is carved either under or at the side of images in this attitude.

See my remarks on the worship of serpents in 'Drahmanism and Hinduism,' p. 319; and Fergusson's great work, 'Tree and Serpent Worship.'

² There is a striking parallel in a well-known picture by Bernardine Luini (of the Milan school) of 'Christ disputing with the Doctors' to be seen in our National Gallery.

The fifth may be called the 'Preaching' attitude. It is often erect. The Buddha has one finger raised in a didactic manner. Monks in the present day often read the Law and preach in the same manner.

The sixth attitude also—as a rule—comes under the erect class, and is often scarcely to be distinguished from the last. It may be called the 'Benedictive' attitude (Āsirvāda). See the engraving opposite p. 477.

It represents the Buddha in the act of pronouncing a benediction, the right hand being raised. This attitude is sometimes sedent. Even to this day Buddhist monks bless laymen in a similar attitude. Occasionally the figure with the hand upraised has a crown, and an ornamental head-dress; but it may be taken for granted that all images of the Buddha which represent him with a crown of any kind after his attainment of Buddhahood, are comparatively modern and incorrect.

On the other hand, it is clear that even uncient sculptures, when they represent him as a prince, may correctly give him decorations and a head-dress.

The seventh attitude may be called the 'Mendicant.'
This also is a standing figure, holding a round almsbowl in one hand, and sometimes screening it with the other (compare p. 40). Examples of this attitude are rare. There are no real mendicants in Buddhism. No monk ever begs, he only receives alms.

The eighth and last attitude is recumbent, and this is perhaps as important as the second, though not so common (see the uppermost figure opposite to p. 477). It represents the moribund Gautama lying down on his right side, with his head turned towards the north,

and his right cheek resting on his right hand, about to pass away in the final consummation of Pari-nirvana (see pp. 50, 140). In many representations of this attitude, the usual five rays of light often mentioned before are made to issue from the crown of the head. A colossal image of this kind was seen by me in a temple near Colombo, and there is a good example of it in the Indian Institute at Oxford. In some carvings of the dying Buddha a few attendants are represented, who hold umbrella-like canopies over the recumbent figure, or bow down reverentially before it. It has been asserted that this scene—as commemorative of the grand consummation of the Buddha's career through countless existences—is field in as much reverence by Buddha'ss as the crucifixion is by Christians.

The representation of the Buddha in the act of being born is found in sculptures and bas-reliefs, but is never found as a separate image. It represents him springing out of the side of his mother (note, p. 180). This birth-scene is occasionally carved on temples. It is shown in the lower part of the engraving (opposite page 477). The god Brahma is seen receiving the new-born child, while Indra stands on his right and the mother's sister (i.e. nurse, p. 24) is on her left.

Some representations of the Buddha, or of certain forms of the Buddha—such as Amitābha—show a sedent figure emerging from a lotus-blossom, or seated on a pedestal formed of lotus-leaves, this flower symbolizing perfection.

Procured for me by Mr. Burrows, of the Coylon Civil Service.

It must not be forgotten that in every country the images of the Buddha are generally moulded according to the type of countenance prevalent in each country. Hence the contour and expression of face differ in Ceylon, Burma, Siam, Tibet, Mongolia, China, and Japan, although as a rule the features are calm, mild, meditative, and passionless.

In Burma the people are merry; hence the images sometimes have a twinkle in the eye and smiling lips,

In China, again, examples sometimes occur of images which do not exhibit Buddha as the ideal of a man who has conquered his passions, but rather with the figure and features of a self-indulgent libertine; while others again portray him with a grim aspect.

We now pass on to the representations of other Buddhas, Bodhi-sattvas, saints, gods and goddesses.

Often two other images are associated with that of Gautama Buddha himself.

And, first of all, his image was joined with the other two persons of the earliest Triad (see p. 175), viz. Dharma (the Law) and Sangha (the Monkhood). A sculpture, in a broken and imperfect condition, representing this earliest Triad, and dating from the ninth to the tenth century, was found at Buddha-Gaya. The image of Buddha, under an umbrella-like tree, is in the centre; that of the Sangha is on his right, with a full-blown

^{*} See especially an image in the British Museum. In China Basrelief images of Buddha are sometimes inserted by Buddhist priests in large mused-shells while the animal is living, and are covered by it with a coating of mother of pearl. This they call a miracle. An example is in the Indian Institute, presented by Mrs. Newman Smith.

lotus (p. 177, note 2), and having one leg hanging down, while that of Dharma (a female) is on his left with a half-blown lotus. A drawing of this (from Sir A. Cunningham's photograph) is given below:—



In Nepāl the image of Dharma is always that of a sedent female, who is supposed to be an embodiment of supreme wisdom (prajāā pāramitā), and sometimes has four arms (see note, p. 178).

Next come the images of the Buddhas who preceded Gautama, especially Kasyapa Buddha, Kanaka-muni, and Kraku-cchanda. It is often mentioned that the images of one or other of these three, as of the Bodhisattvas, are set up side by side with that of Gautama.

Then, of course, there are the images of the five Dhyāni-Buddhas. Perhaps the commonest of these is that of Amitābha (see p. 203), but images of Akshobhya and Ratna-sambhava are by no means rare.

Then as to the Bodhi-sattvas, of whom Maitreya is the first and the only one worshipped by Buddhists of all countries (see p. 182). Fü-bien records that he saw in Northern India a wooden image of Maitreya Bodhisattva eighty cabits high, which on fast days emitted a brilliant light. Offerings were constantly presented to it by the kings of surrounding countries (Legge, 23).

Hiouen Throng (Beal, i. 1,34) also describes this image of Maitreya as very dazzling, and says it was the work of the Arbat Madhyāntika, a disciple of Ananda. He saw another image of Maitreya made of silver at Buddha-Gayā, and another made of sandalwood in Western India. The latter also gave out a bright light. Probably these images were covered with some kind of gilding.

In the present day the images of Maitreya often represent him with both hands raised, the fingers forming the lotus-shaped Mudra, the body yellow or gilded, and the hair short and curly.

Passing next to the images of the triad of mythical Bodhi-sattvas, Mañju-śri, Avalokiteśvara, and Vajra-pāṇi (p. 195), we may gather from what has been already stated (p. 196), that the interaction of Buddhism and Hinduism affected both the mythology and imagery of both systems. Yet it does not appear that the images of the Bodhi-sattva Mañju-śri were ever unnaturally distorted. They are quite as human and pleasant in appearance as those of Gautama and Maitreya. In general Mañju-śri is represented in a sedent attitude, with his left hand holding a lotus, and his right holding the sword of wisdom, with a shining blade to dissipate the darkness of ignorance (see p. 201). His body ought to be yellow.

It was not till the introduction of the worship of Avalokitesvara that the followers of Buddha thought of endowing the figures of deified saints with an extra number of heads and arms.

The process of Avalokiteśvara's (Padma-pāṇi's) creation and the formation of his numerous heads by the Dhyāni-Buddha Amitābha, is thus described (Schlagintweit, p. 84, abridged);—

Once upon a time Amitable, after giving himself up to earnest meditation, caused a red ray of light to issue from his right eye, which brought Padina-pāni Bailhi-sattva into existence; while from his left eye burst forth a blue ray of light, which becoming incornate in the two wives of King Spong Tean (see p. 271), lead power to enlighten the minds of human beings. Amitribha then idesaid Padma-pi ni Bodhisattra by laying his hands upon him, so that by virtue of this benediction he brought forth the proper. On mani pulme Him. Padunpani then made a solema yow to rescue all the beings in hell from their point, saying to himself; -'It I tail, may my head split into a thousand pieces!" After remaining absorbed in contemplation for some time, he proceeded to the various bells, expecting to find that the inhabitants, through the efficacy of his meditations, had ascended to the higher worlds. And this indeed he found they had done. But no sooner was their release accomplished than all the bells again became as full as ever, the places of the out-going tenants being supplied by an equal number of new-corners. This an astounded the unhappy Bodhi-sattva that his head instantly split into a thousand Then Amitables, deeply moved by his son's misfortune, hastened to his assistance, and formed the thousand pieces into ten beads.

Schlagintweit states, and I have myself observed, that Avalokitesvara's eleven heads are generally represented as forming a pyramid, and are ranged in four rows. Each series of heads has a particular complexion. The three faces resting on the neck are white, the three above yellow, the next three red, the tenth blue, and the eleventh—that is, the head of his father Amitabla at the top of all is red. In Japanese images the heads are much smaller, and are arranged like a crown, the centre of which is formed by two entire figures, the lower one sitting, the other standing above it. Ten small heads are combined with these two figures.

The number of Avalokitesvara's hands ought to amount to a thousand, and he is called 'a thousandeyed,' as having the eye of wisdom on each palm. Of course all these thousand arms and eyes cannot be represented in images. Still there is an idol in the British Museum which represents him with about forty arms, two of which have the hands joined in an attitude of worship.

A remarkable description of an image of Avalokitesvara seen by Sarat Chandra Das (so recently as 1882) in the great temple at Lhassa occurs in his 'Narrative' (which I here abridge):—

Next to the image of Buddha, the most conspicuous figure was that of Chancessig (i.e. the eleven-faced Avalokitesvara). The origin of this is ascribed to King Scon Tsun Gampo (p. 271 of this volume). Once the king heard a voice from heaven, saying that if he constructed an image of Avalokitesvara of the size of his own person, all his desires would be fulfilled.

Thereupon he proceed d to do so and the materials he used were a breach of the secred Bodhi-tree, a partion of the Vajraeaus, some soil from an oceanic island, some sand from the river Nairanjana, some pith of Godraha sandal-wood, a portion of the soil of the eight sacred

¹ The sculptured figures of Padma-pani observed by me in the caves of Elora represent him with Amitable in his head-dress.

places of ascient India, and many other rare articles pounded together and made into paste, with the milk of a red cow and a she-goat. This paste the king touched with his head, and prayed to the all-knowing Buddhas and the host of Budhi-sattwas, that by the morit of making that image, there might be god-speed to the great work he had undertaken—namely, the diffusion of Buddhism in Tibet.

The gods, Euddhas, saints, etc. litted the social space to listen to his

prayer.

The king then ordered the Nepülese artist to hasten the completion of the image, and with a view of heightening its sauntity, obtained a mandal-wood image of Avalokitesvara from Coylon and inserted it inside, together with the relies of the seven past Buildhas. When the work was finished, the artist said:—

'Sire, I cannot say that I have made this image, it has possed into self-grown existence.' Then a current of lightning flashed forth from its feet. Afterwards, the souls of the king and his queen are mid to have been absorbed into it; in consequence of which this image is called 'the five-absorbed self-spring.'

It is recorded in another tradition that a wonderworking image of Avalokitesvara was set up in a monastery near Kabul, and another in Magadha near the Ganges. Any worshipper who approached these idols in devotion and faith were favoured with a personal vision of the saint. The statues opened, and the Bodhi-sattva emerged in bright rays of light (compare Koeppen, i. p. 499).

Originally, and still in Tibet, Avalokitesvara (otherwise called Padma-pāṇi) had only male attributes; but in China this deity (as we have already mentioned at p. 200) is represented as a woman, called Kwan-yin (in Japan Kwan-non), with a thousand arms and a thousand eyes. She has her principal seat in the island of Poo-too, on the coast of China, which is a place of pilgrimage.

There are two images of Kwau-yin in the British Museum, one with sixteen arms and the other with eight.

Images of the third mythical Bodhi-sattva—the fierce Vajra-pāṇi, 'holding a thunderbolt in one hand'—like one form of Siva—are almost as common as those of the merciful and mild Avalokitesvara. He has been described in a previous Lecture (p. 201).

In the Pitt-Rivers collection at Oxford there is an image of this Bodhi-sattva engaged in combating the power of evil. It is remarkable that the figures of three monkeys are carved underneath, one stopping his ears with his hands, another stopping his eyes, and another his mouth, to symbolize the effort to prevent the entrance of evil desires through the three most important organs of sense,

With regard to the images of female deities we may observe that Tara, the wife or Sakti of Amogha-siddha (p. 216), is represented as a green sedent figure; her right band on her knee, her left holding a lotus.

A standing image of the goddess Pattini (p. 217 of this volume) may be seen in the British Museum.

In a temple which I visited near Dārjīling I saw the image of the Padma-sambhava or 'lotus-born' form of Buddha occupying the centre of the altar, with the images of Gautama Buddha and of Buddha Ayushmat, or the 'Buddha of Life,' on each side.

Sir R. Temple (Journal, p. 212) relates how in a chamber of a Sikkim monastery there were three figures, the central of which, with a fair complexion, was Amitābha, that on its right Gautama Buddha, and on its left Gorakh-nāth (see p. 193 of this volume).

In the monastery of Galdan (p. 441) Mr. Sarat Chandra Das saw the golden image of Tsong Khapu (with his golden chain and his tooth and his blockprints), along with the images of Amitābha, Gautama, Maitreya, Bhairava (the awful defender of Buddhism), Yama 'the lord of death,' and his terrific messengers.

In the great Cho Khang at Lhässa (see p. 459) he saw images of Avalokitesvara, Mañju-sri, Maitreya, Kuvera, Padma-sambhava, with an immense number of others, and especially one of the terrific goddess Paldan (or Pandan) who is feared all over Tibet, Mongolio, and China, as the greatest guardian deity of the Dalai and Tashi Lämas and of the Buddhist Dharma. He found her shrine infested with mice, who are believed to be metamorphosed monks.

At Sera (p. 442) he saw images of the Buddha in his character of 'demon-vanquisher,' along with Maitreya (in silver), Avalokitesvara, the six-armed Bhairava, the goddess Kālī, Dolkar (= Tārā, p. 271), the Tāntrik Vajra-vārāhī, the sixteen Sthaviras (pp. 48, 255), and a great variety of others.

At Radeng (p. 273) he saw a golden image of Milaraspa (p. 384).

In the monastery of Sam ye (p. 448) he saw images of the Indian Pandits who brought Buddhism into Tibet, with a vast number of other images.

At Tashi Lunpo he saw golden images of Buddha and Maitreya, besides images of 1000 other Buddhas (p. 189), and the four guardians of the quarters (p. 206). At Yarlung he saw an image of Vairoćana Buddha, besides images of the sixteen Sthavirus, and a gigantic image of the king of the Nagas, and a terrific representation of the demon Ravana (of the Ramayana).

At Mindolling he saw fresco paintings of the six classes of beings (p. 122) inhabiting the six corresponding worlds. Of course delineations of the Jatakas (p. 111) and pictures of all kinds were common in monasteries and temples everywhere.

The two wonder-working images brought from Nepăl and China have been already mentioned (p. 271).

As an illustration of the monstrous superstition and idolatry prevalent in modern Buddhist countries, I venture, in conclusion, to quote, with abridgment, the following description of an idol seen by Miss Bird in Japan (see her 'Unbeaten Tracks in Japan,' published by Mr. Murray):—

In one shrine is a large ideal spotted all over with pellets of paper, and hundreds of these may be seen sticking to the wire-netting which protects him. A worshipper writes his petition on paper, or, better still, has it written for him by the priest, chows it to a pulp and spits it at the divinity. If, having been well sinced, it passes through the wire and sticks, it is a good omen, if it ledges in the netting the prayer has probably been unbeard.

On the left there is a shrine with a screen, to which innumerable prayers have been tied. On the right sits one of Baddha's original sixteen disciples (see p. 47 of these Lectures). A Koolis with a swelled knee applied it to the knee of the idol, while one with inflamed cyclids rubbed his cyclids on it!

LECTURE XVII.

Sacred Objects.

NEXT to the subject of images and idols comes that of certain sacred objects which Buddhists of all Schools—whether adherents of the Hina-yana or Maha-yana systems—hold in veneration; for example, relic-receptacles or Stūpas, foot-prints, trees, utensils, bells, symbols, and animals.

The narratives of the Chinese travellers, frequently mentioned before, teem with descriptions of such objects. Take, for instance, Fa-hien's account of the district of Nagara, near Peshawar in Northern India (Legge, 34-40), in which several sacred objects are stated to exist—such as a fragment of Buddha's skull, one of his teeth, portions of his hair and nails, his almsbowl, his staff (contained in a wooden tube, so heavy that even a thousand men could not lift it), his robe, and the impression of his shadow. This was at the beginning of the fifth century of our era.

Fā-hien's statements are confirmed by Sung-Yun, the next Chinese traveller mentioned before (p. 161 of this volume 1), who started on his journey rather more than a century after Fā-hien,

We then visited the Ki-Ka-lam temple near Nagitra. This contains the yellow rote (Kashaya) of Buddha in thirteen pieces. Here also is

Observe that Sang Yun, as there given, is more correctly spelf. Sung Yun.

the staff of Buddha, in a wooden case exversal with gold-leaf. The weight of this staff is scandings so heavy that a hundred men cannot raise it, and at other times it is so light that one man can lift it. In the city of Na-kie (Nagardhāra) is a tooth of Buddha and also some of his bair, both of which are contained in precious caskets. Morning and exeming belighout offerings are made to there.

We next acrove at the case of Go-pills, where is the shadow of Buddlu. To anyone entering the cavero, and looking for a long time (or, from a long distance) at the western side of it opposite the door, the figure, with the characteristic marks, appears; on going nearer, it gradually grows fainter and then disappears. On touching the place where it was, there is nothing but the bare wall. Gradually retreating, the figure begins to come in view again, and foremust is conspicuous that peculiar mark between the cyclorows (true), which is an rare among mon.

Before the cave is a square stone, on which is a trace of Buddha's foot (Beal's Translation, p. evil, abridged).

Hiouen Theang, the third traveller, confirms the statements of his predecessors in regard to the relics in this district, and adds as follows:—

There is another little Stupe, made of the seven precious substances, in which is deposited the rys-ball of the Buddha large as an Amrafruit, and bright and clear throughout. It is deposited in a scaled-up casket (Beal, i. 96).

It is easy to perceive from the above extracts that the worship of certain sacred objects connected with the founder of Buddhism had become even in Fā-hien's time a marked feature of Buddhism. In fact, the number of such objects increased so rapidly that before long it became usual to classify them under three heads as follow¹:—

(1) Šārīrika (or Šarīra-dhātu or simply Šārīra), objects

¹ Compare Hardy's 'Monachism,' p. 212.

which once formed part of the Buddha's body, such as a bone, a tooth, a hair, a nail.

- (2) Pāribhogika, "objects possessed or used by the Buddha," such as his seat, alms-bowl, drinking-vessel (kumbha), staff, vestments, and even his spittoon. Under this division is placed the Bodbi-tree.
- (3) Uddešika, objects worshipped as in some way commemorative of the Buddha or of some event or incident in his life.

It would be difficult to decide under which of these categories the sacred books containing the Buddha's Law are to be placed, and yet they are deeply revered, and at the present day almost deitied, as if they were intelligent and omniscient beings. They are wrapped in costly cloth or silk, and their names are mentioned with the addition of honorific personal titles. Occasionally such sacred books are placed on a kind of rule altar, near the road-side, that passers-by may place offerings of money upon them!,

Without attempting, therefore, to follow any particular classification, we proceed to notice some of the chief objects in the order of their importance, beginning with relics.

Relics.

Adoration of relics constitutes an important point of difference between Buddhism and Brāhmanism; for Brāhmanism and its offspring Hinduism are wholly opposed to the practice of preserving the ashes, bones,

¹ See Hardy's 'Eastern Monadásm,' p. 192.

hair, or teeth of deceased persons, however much such individuals may have been revered during life.

I remarked in the course of my travels through India that articles used by great religious teachers—as, for example, robes, wooden shoes, and seats—are sometimes preserved and venerated after their death. All articles of this kind, however, must, of course, be removed from the body before actual decease; for it is well known that, in the minds of Hindus, ideas of impurity are inseparably connected with death, and contamination is supposed to result from contact with the corpses of even a man's dearest relatives. Nor is the mortal frame ever held in veneration by the Hindus as it was by the ancient Egyptians, and as it generally is in Christian countries.

Even the living body is regarded as a mass of corruption, a thing to be held in contempt, and a constant impediment to sanctity of life. How much more then ought every part of a dead body to be got rid of without delay! Hence in the present day a corpse is burnt, and its ashes are generally scattered on the surface of sacred rivers or of the sea.

It is true that the bodies of great Hindū ascetics and devotees are exempted from this rule. They are usually buried—not burnt. Not, however, because the mere corporeal frame is held in greater veneration, but because the bodies of the most eminent saints are supposed to lie undecomposed in a kind of trance, or state of intense ecstatic meditation (samādhi).

The Buddhist, too, is a thorough Hindu in contemning the living body; but when the corpse is burnt, he does not scatter the ashes on rivers. He takes measures to preserve them.

We know that according to the teaching of Brühmanism the burning of a corpse is followed by religious ceremonies called Śrāddhas t. The greater the number of Śrāddhas which a living man is able to perform in behalf of his deceased relatives, the greater is the benefit which accrues to their souls; and if the dead man's soul happens to be in one of the hells, the sooner it is released from its purgatorial pains.

A true Buddhist, on the other hand, considers all such Śrāddhas as useless; although it is certainly a fact that in the end the more developed Buddhism of the North invented similar ceremonies, called Bardo (see pp. 293, 334).

True Buddhism, in short, has only one way of honouring ancestors, and only one method of keeping alive the memory of those perfected saints whose whole personality has become extinct, and whose transition into other forms of life has finally ceased.

The calcined ashes, or certain unconsumed portions of the body—such as fragments of bone or hair or nails or teeth—are deposited in relic-shrines.

Of course the most sacred of all Buddhist relics are those of the Buddha himself. It is said that after the cremation of his corpse the chief remains consisted of four teeth, the two cheek-bones, and fragments of the skull. But it is believed that, even before his death, portions of his hair and nails were preserved and placed

¹ See my 'Brahmanism and Hinduism,' p. 303.

under Dāgabas (Stūpas). One legend relates that when Gautama had decided on abandoning all worldly associations, his first act was to cut off the mass of his hair, with its ornament (ćūḍā-maṇi), and that these were taken up by the god Indra to the Trayastripša heaven, and there placed under a Dāgaba and worshipped by the gods.

Fa-hien, in a passage already alluded to, says that in the country of Nagara there is a particular spot where Buddha shaved off his hair and clipt his nails, and, having done so, proceeded to erect a lofty mound or Stupa to enshrine them, as well as to be a model for all future Stupas (p. 504 of this volume).

Hiouen Theang relates a tradition that when the two travelling merchants Trapusha and Bhallika (see p. 40) were converted, the Buddha gave them at their own request some of his own hair and nail-parings, besides his alms-bowl, staff, and a portion of his clothing, and bade them deposit each article in Stupas or Dagabas. The two merchants, it is narrated, went home to their own country and acquired an enormous stock of religious merit by being the first to erect a Stupa for the reception of personal memorials of the great Buddha. According to a tradition the two merchants were from Burma, and the shrine which was crected to receive eight of his hairs afterwards developed into the great Rangoon Dagaba (Pagoda). It may be inferred from this legend (as Dr. Oldenberg has already remarked) that the care of the Buddha's relies, and the institution of ceremonies in their honour, were in the first instance left to the devotion of religiously minded Buddhist laymen, "What are we to do," Annuda take of the Muster, when his end is drawing near", with the body of the Perfect One ?" Lat not the honours due to the body of the Perfect One trouble you, Anauda. Seek ye rather perfection for yourselves. There are, Annuda, wise men among the publics, the Brühmans, and the citizens, who believe in the Perfect One; they will honour the body of the Perfect One."

Hiouen Throng (Beal, ii. 40) also states that when certain Indian Rājas, eight in number, heard of the Buddha's death, they collected armies and marched to Kusi-nārā (p. 424) to seize portions of the relics; but the prince of Kusi-nārā refused to give them up. In the end the matter was settled amicably, and the relics were divided, so that each of the eight princes might take a share. Then all departed to their own homes, and each prince built a Stūpa over his own portion of the relics. The gods also took their portions.

Fā-kien (chap. xxiii) alludes to the building of the eight Stūpas, and adds that king Asoka destroyed them, and in their place built 84,000 others—one for the conservation of each atom of the elements of the Buddha's body; the belief being that the bodies of all human beings consist of that number of elementary particles (see p. 423). The eight-fold division is described in 'Buddhist Suttas,' pp. 133-136 (S. B. E. vol. xi).

It appears probable that the earliest relics of his burnt body held in honour were his teeth; and of these again the most celebrated seem to have been his

¹ 'Mahā-p' p. 51. 'Milinda Patha,' p. 177. 'It is certainly noteworthy,' says Oldenberg, 'that as the care for Buddha's remains is not represented as belonging to the disciples, so the Vinaya texts are nearly silent as to the last honours of the deceased monks. To arrange for their cremation was probably committed to the laity.'

four eye-teeth. One of the four is said to have been appropriated by the gods and another by the Nagas, while the third was taken to Gandhara in the northwest, and the fourth to Kalinga in the south-east.

The first two eye-teeth have only mythical histories, and little is recorded of the third but the fourth has gone through a series of terrestrial adventures, which have been much written about and would fill several volumes. One of the immediate followers of Gautama is said to have gained possession of it on the occasion of the eight-fold distribution of the great sage's relica-(p. 499), and to have conveyed it to a place afterwards called Danta-pura, 'tooth-city',' the capital of Kalinga (Orissa), where it is believed to have remained undisturbed for about 800 years. After that period it was seized, at the instigation of some Brahmans, by a powerful Hindū king who reigned at Pātaliputra. Its vicissitudes and adventures for centuries afterwards were very varied. It was conveyed surreptitiously to Ceylon about the year 311 of our era by a princess of Kalinga, who concealed it in her bair. There it remained till 1315, when it was carried back to Southern India. After a time it was taken back to Kandy in Ceylon. Next it was seized by the Portaguese and carried off to Goa. Thence it was transported to Pegu, and finally the precious tooth-relic (datha-dhatu), or at least some imitation of it, was restored to the good people of

¹ Subsequently called Port and noted for the worship of Jagan-nath or Krishna, who became the successor of Buddha as an object of worship (see p. 166 of this volume).

Kandy, where it is still preserved by them as a veritable Palladium, with every possible precaution against further outrage, although under the protecting agis of our government its security ought not any longer to be matter of anxiety.

Every native of Ceylon (Lanka), whether Buddhist or Hindu, seems to feel that the welfare of his country depends on its careful conservation. At any rate the Sinhalese have placed their tooth-temple—called Dalada Māligāwa—in the loveliest part of their beautiful island (see p. 454), amid richly wooded hills, from which may be obtained some of the most enchanting views in the world. The eye-tooth is in appearance like a piece of discoloured ivory about two inches! long, and one inch across in the thickest part. Indeed, all the supposed relies of the Buddha's body, and the dress and implements he used, are of such a size as to make his worshippers believe that his stature far exceeded that of ordinary men.

The tooth is enclosed in nine bell-shaped, jewelled golden cases, one within the other, each locked by a key, and each key consigned to the custody of a separate official. The interior cases increase in costliness till the most highly jewelled of all is reached, and within this on a golden lotus lies the relic. When I visited the tooth-temple in 1877, the cases were kept within iron bars in a dimly-lighted shrine—redolent with flower-offerings which exhaled an overpowering

³ Hardy's 'Eastern Monachisto,' p. 224. The size of the tooth does not seem very preposterous, on the assumption of the truth of the tradition that Gautama attained to the stature of twenty cubits.

perfume—and in the very centre of the buildings of the temple. When the Prince of Wales visited Kandy in 1876, all the officials assembled to unlock the cases and exhibit the treasured relic.

A detailed account of the tooth is given in a book called Dalada-vansa or Datha-vansa, said to have been written originally in ancient Sinhalese (Elu) about the year 310 of our ero, and translated into the sacred Pali about the year 1200. This book has been rendered into English by the late Sir Coomara Swamy. The tooth is also described in many other Pali and Sinhalese books, including the Maha-vansa.

And here it may be remarked that one feature of the Buddha's relies was that they gave forth on special occasions celestial light, and had the power of working miracles. Sometimes a reverent circumambulation of the shrine which contained the relies was believed to be sufficiently efficacious in stimulating their miraculous powers. Sometimes they were taken out and exhibited. The following extract from Fä-hien reminds one of what takes place at Kandy in the present day:—

In the city of He-lo (the present Hidda, west of Poshawar) there is the flat-hone of Buddha's shall, deposited in a Villaga adorned all over with gold-leaf and the seven suzzed substances. The king of the country revering the home and auxious lest it should be stolen, has elected eight individuals representing great families, and committed to each a real with which he should seal the shrine and guard the relic. At early dawn these men come, and after each has inspected his seal, they open the door. This done they wash their hands with scented water, and bring out the lone, which they place on a lofty platform, where it is supported on a pedestal of the seven precious substances. The king every morning makes his offerings and performs his worship. The chiefs of the Valisyas also make their offerings. Then they replace the bone in the Viham, under a Stapa of the seven precious substances (p. 528 of this volume) more than live cubits high (Legge, pp. 36-38, abridged).

Fā-hien records a similar exhibition of the Buddha's alms-bowl in the country near Peshawar;—

When it is mid-day they bring out the bowl and make offerings to it. It may contain about two pecks, and it has a bright lustre. When poor people throw into it a few flowers, it becomes full. If the rich throw in myriada of flowers, they are not able to fill it.

He states that the Buddha's robe was also broughtout to be worshipped:—

When there is a drought the people collect in crowds, bring out the robe, pay worship to it and make afferings on which there is immediately a great rain from the sky (Legge, pp. 35-39, abridged).

The relies of all great saints in Buddhist countries were revered in a similar nonner. At the same time it ought to be noted that the periodical exhibition of relies, before the eyes of worshippers, was not a usual occurrence (as it is in Roman Catholic countries). Indeed, as a general rule, the custom seems to have been to shield the ashes and remains of revered dead bodies from observation and liability to be touched. Hence they were commonly sealed up hermetically, as it were, in the interior of receptacles which effectually concealed them from view and protected them from disturbance.

And this leads us to advert to the form and character of Buddhist relic-receptacles.

It is probable that at a very early period, and even before the Buddha's time, the Hindus were accustomed to mise heaps or tumuli over the ashes of kings, greatmen, saints and sages, just as even to this day among the Sikhs of the Panjab, the ashes of great men are so honoured. Some think that the hemispherical domelike form of the tumulus was intended to represent a bubble—the most transitory of all material objects. In all likelihood the dome of the Sanchī Stūpa—which is thought to be as old as the time of Buddha—was constructed in memory of some great man.

Such heaps were at first generally called Caityas, and afterwards Stupas (from the Sanskrit roots 6i and styai, meaning 'to heap together'); but Caitya ultimately denoted a relic-structure in an assembly-hall (see p. 450), while the word Stupa denoted one in the open air. Then inside the Caitya or Stupa (Pali Thupa, corrupted into Tope) there was a casket—made of silver, gold, stone, earthenware, etc.—in which were deposited the ashes, fragments of bone, or the teeth or nails of the deceased. And this relic-casket was called in Sanskrit Dhātu-garbha, or in Pāli Dāgaba (corrupted into Dagoba and afterwards into Pagoda)—that is, a repository of the elementary particles of which all bodies are composed.

Then in time the word Dagaba (Pagoda) denoted the monument as well as the relic-casket. Moreover Čaityas and Stūpas were often mere pyramidal structures, enshrining images or marking important events (see p. 390), but not containing relics. Among the Hindüs Čaitya often denotes the sacred village-tree planted on a mound.

The process by which the simple Caitya or mound developed into more elaborate structures is remarkable. First came erections of stone or brick, generally bellshaped or domed like bee-hives. These again expanded into elongated pyramidal structures, springing from cylindrical or octagonal or hexagonal bases, and ornamented with images of Gautama, and resting on plintblike foundations, the summits tapering into finials consisting of three, or seven, or nine, or eleven, or even fifteen tiers of umbrella-shaped ornaments (see note, p. 393).

Then, again, in time, these elaborate Dagabas expanded into vast Pagodas of enormous height, as, for example, the Rangoon Pagoda (see p. 456) and that at Amuradha-

pura in Ceylon.

It is doubtful whether in early Buddhism Caityas and Stüpas were ever empty monuments or cenotaphs. Probably all of them contained ashes, fragments of bone, teeth, or hair, though in some cases the most careful examination has failed to discover the vessel in which they were deposited. If made of fragile materials, it rapidly crumbled into dust. But Stüpas, even without relies, were themselves objects of reverence.

In the later period of Buddhism the practice of carving, or moulding mere memorial or votive Stupas, and dedicating them at sacred spots became common. The examples of this kind of Stupa which I saw unearthed at Buddha-Gayā have been described (p. 397).

The engraving opposite to this page is a copy of one of these votive Stūpas which I procured for the Indian Institute through Mr. Beglar.

At Mandalay there is a large Pagoda with about 620 smaller ones round it (in rows of six or seven deep). Each small Pagoda enshrines a tablet—exposed to view—on which some portion of the Law is engraved.

506 MODEL VOTIVE STUPAS, SACRED FOOT-PRINTS.

Many small Pagodas are simply canopies of brick or some solid material erected over images.

Outside the Buddhist convent near Dārjīling, when I visited it in 1884, a monk was roughly moulding a number of small votive Stūpas in clay, with which he was probably mixing the powdered bones of some deceased Lāma. Here is a copy of one exactly the size of the original:—



If broken open, a terra-cotta seal, inscribed with some sacred formula, would probably be found inside.

Of course most of the Buddha's chief disciples, such as Săriputta, Maudgalyāyana, Kāsyapa, Ānanda, Upāli, each had Stūpas erected over their relics.

Sacred Foot-prints.

Next in importance to the worship of relics is that of foot-prints (Sanskrit Śrī-pada or Śrī-pāda). Everywhere throughout Buddhist countries the supposed impressions of the Buddha's feet are as much honoured as those of the god Vishau are by Vaishaavas. When Fā-hien reached Gridhra-kūṭa (see pp. 404, 406), he is said to have used words to the following effect: 'I, Fā-hien, was born when I could not meet with Buddha, and now I only see the foot-prints which he has left' (Legge, 83).

It is well known that the practice of bowing down and honouring the feet is a thoroughly Asiatic custom. The idea seems to be derived from a kind of a fortiori argument. If the feet, as the lowest member of the body, are honoured, how much more is homage rendered to the whole man. Hence children honour their parents, not by kissing their faces, but by prostrating themselves at their feet and touching them reverentially. Another reason for venerating the feet is well expressed in one of our hymns:—

O let me see Thy foot-marks. And in them plant my own;

and in Longfellow's

Foot-prints on the sands of time; Foot-prints which perhaps another, Sailing o'er life's solemn main, A forlorn and shipwrecked brother, Seeing may take life again.

This shows that even Europeans are familiar with the idea. There is a Roman Catholic church at Vienna which possesses a celebrated image of Christ on the Cross. On one occasion I visited this church and observed several worshippers kissing the feet of the image, while others—too short in stature to reach it with their lips—touched its feet with their fingers and then kissed their fingers. A similar honour is paid to the images of St. Peter at Rome, and indeed to that Apostle's living representatives. The alleged foot-prints of Christ are not numerous, but they exist in certain holy places 1.

Every sentiment in the East is exaggerated, and it need not therefore be matter of wonder if a veneration for foot-prints has led to an excessive multiplication of these symbols, and to an excess of superstitious worship paid to them by Hindus of various sects in every part of India. No true Vaishnava will leave his house in the morning without marking his forehead with the symbol of Vishnu's feet. In travelling from one place to another I often came across what appeared to be an empty shrine, but on a close inspection I found that it contained two foot-prints on a little raised altar made of stone. These are called Paduka 'shoes,' but are really the supposed impressions of the soles of the feet of the person to whom the shrines are dedicated. In 1876 I visited the celebrated Vishon-pad temple at Gaya. Crowds were worshipping the foot-mark impressed on the bare stone, but concealed by offerings, and surrounded by a silver fence under a silver canopy (see ' Brahmanism and Hindbism,' p. 309).

It is true that Buddhists never imitate the practice

¹ Mr. Lesley, in his 'Lectures on the Origin and Destiny of Man,' states that there are two feet-prints sculptured on the summit of Monat Olivet, and worshipped by pilgrims as the marks left when Christ sprong into the sky at His ascension. There is another alleged foot-print of Christ in the Mesque of Omar, and two feet-prints at Poitiers in France. There are two feet-prints of Ishmael in the temple at Meccs. This is mentioned by Mr. Alabaster (p. 262).

of the worshippers of Vishnu by marking their foreheads with the supposed impressions of the Buddha's feet, but they will nevertheless make long and toilsome pilgrimages to bow down before what they believe to be the impression of his foot on a rock.

The Jainas, who are the only Hindu representatives of the Buddhistic system left in India, are quite as ardent foot-print worshippers. In 1884 I ascended Mount Pārasnāth (Pārsva-nāth) in Bengal at the same time with crowds of Jaina pilgrims who, like myself, toiled up the hill to visit the numerous Jaina temples scattered over the uneven surface at the summit, some five thousand feet above the plain. Our objects were very different. Theirs was the acquisition of merit, mine was the acquirement of knowledge. Lepers fined the rough pathway, and much additional merit was held to accrue to the pilgrims by distributing alms among them. I found that nearly every shrine at the summit consisted of a little domed canopy of marble, covering two foot-prints of some one of the twenty-four Jaina saints (especially Parsva-nath) impressed on a marble altar. The soles of the supposed foot-prints were either white or black and marked with small gilded circles.

Groups of worshippers bowed down before the shrines and deposited offerings of money, rice, almonds, raisins, and spices on the foot-marks. No sooner did they quit one shrine for the next, than a troop of frolicking monkeys promptly took their place and scampered off with the edible portion of the objects offered.

It is impossible to state positively when either

Buddhism or Jainism first introduced foot-print worship, but the practice must have begun very early.

With regard to this point General Sir A. Cunningham, in his account of the Bharbut Stūpa—a Stūpa which dates from the second century s, c.—says:—

Foot-prints of Baddla were most probably an object of reverence from a very early period—certainly before the building of the Bharbut Stüpa—as they are represented in two separate sculptures there. In the first sculpture the foot-prints are placed on a throne or altar, canopied by an ambsella, bung with garlands. A royal personage is kneeling before the altar, and reverently touching the foot-prints with his hands. The second example is in the bas-relief representing the visit of Ajāta-satru to Buddha. Here, as in all other Bharbut sculptures, Buddha does not appear in purson, his presence being marked by his two foot-prints. The wheel symbol is daily marked on both (p. 112, abridged).

The General justly remarks that perhaps the worship of the Buddha's foot-prints may have sprung up in imitation of the homage alleged to have been paid by Mahā-Kāsyapa and 500 monks to his feet, which, it is said, were exposed to view when his body was lying on the funeral pile. The legend states that while the monks were in the act of bowing down in adoration before the feet, the funeral pile ignited spontaneously.

On one of the gate-pillars of the ancient Sanchī Stūpa there is a sculpture of a foot-print marked with the wheel (Cakra, p. 522) symbol, which the late Mr. Fergusson ascribed to the early part of the first century of the Christian era.

There are also sculptured representations of the Buddha's foot-prints at Amaravati, supposed to date from the second or third century of the Christian era.

These representations are often carved on so-called alters
or else placed before alters.

But of all foot-prints, that on Adam's Peak (the highest mountain in Ceylon, more than 7000 feet above the sea), supposed to have been left by the Buddha when he ascended thence to heaven, is the most celebrated.

According to Fā-hien (Legge, p. 102), when Buddha was in Ceylon he planted one foot on the north of the royal city and the other on Sumana-Kūṭa (Adam's Peak), fifteen yojanas, or about a hundred miles, distant,

This fancied impression of the Buddha's foot (believed by Christians to be that of St. Thomas, by Muhammadans to be that of Adam, and by Hindus to be that of the god Siva) is merely a shapeless hollow in the rock, five feet seven inches long by two feet seven inches broad, which would give the Buddha a stature of about thirty-five feet. It is said to have been discovered by a hunter at the beginning of the century before Christ, and, although very difficult of access, is annually visited by about 100,000 Buddhist pilgrims. Near it, on the summit of the mountain, is a small temple dedicated to Saman (p. 217).

In a shrine near the tooth-temple at Kandy, I saw a so-called facsimile of this foot-print. Those who are physically incapable of toiling up the mountain to bow down before the sacred impression on the rock, gain nearly as much merit by worshipping its copy. The shrine was filled with fragrant flowers recently deposited on the facsimile. Other foot-prints in various places throughout India, Burma, Siam, Tibet, Mongolia, and China, are from two to five feet long. A tradition is mentioned by Fā-hien (Legge, 29) that, when Buddha visited Northern India, he came to the country of Woo-chang or Udyāna, and there he left a print of his foot, which appears long or short according to the ideas of the beholders.

Another legend states that Buddha left the print of his left foot on Adam's Peak, and then, in one stride, strode across to Siam, where he left the impression of his right foot.

The Siamese hold their foot-print in as much reverence as the Sinhalese hold theirs. It is called Phra Bat, and, according to Mr. Alabaster, its appearance is like that of the foot-print on Adam's Peak. Nothing is to be seen but a hole in the rock, about five feet long by two broad. A temple is built over it, and every precaution taken to protect it from over-zealous worshippers. Mr. Alabaster thus describes his visit to this sacred spot:—

The grating which usually covers the foot-print was removed to enable us to see the bottom, but the temple was so dark that we could not see much of it. We moved saids some of the offerings lying on it, but could see nothing of the pattern except the five marks of the toe-nails—five grooves in the rock—which some declare to have been made with chisels. On inquiry we were told that the other marks were long ago destroyed by an accidental fire. Likeness to a foot there is none. Yet to this holy foot-print year after year crowds of Siamese flock with varied offerings, and even the most enlightened amongst them—the late King for instance—have observed and encouraged the practice. (*Wheel of the Law,' p. 284, abridged.)

The soles of the Buddha's feet are represented as quite flat, and all the toes of equal length. Each sole possesses, as we have seen (p. 20), one hundred and eight auspicious marks (mangala-lakkhana), and of these the principal is generally the wheel (Cakra), while around it are grouped representations of animals, inhabitants of various worlds, and symbols of different kinds. In all probability the idea is that all things are subject to the Buddha or belong to him; they are therefore metaphorically placed under his feet. (Compare the metaphor in Psalm viii, 6–8.)

The one hundred and eight marks vary in various specimens. A good typical example (brought from Burma) of the impression of one foot may be seen in the British Museum. The sole is divided into compartments, each compartment containing a mark. There are five conch-shells, one in each of the five toes, this symbol being highly esteemed by Buddhists as well as by Hindüs.

Among the one hundred and eight auspicious marks on the Siamese foot-print are the following:—A spear, trident (tri-ratna), book, elephant-goad, Indra's elephant, dragon (makara), ocean, golden ship, water with lotuses, conch-shell, four-faced Brahmā, umbrella, king of Nāgas, king of horses, of tigers, of birds, sun, moon, ten mountains, peacock, flag of victory, deer, fish, water-jar, The wheel (Ćakra) does not occur in Mr. Alabaster's list ('Wheel of the Law,' p. 290), but the two feet of the Amarāvatī Stūpa, described by Mr. Fergusson, have a wheel in the centre of the soles. Above is the Tri-ratna emblem with a Svastika symbol on each side.

There are other Svastika marks, and others on the toes (see p. 523).

The Skanda-Purāṇa and Bhāgavata-Purāṇa give similar lists of marks on the sole of Vishnu's foot,

Sacred Trees.

We now pass on to a brief consideration of sacred trees. Most persons are aware that the homage offered to trees and plants is not confined to Buddhism. It existed very early in Brāhmanism and is still common everywhere throughout India (see my 'Brāhmanism and Hindūism,' p. 330).

In point of fact various forms of tree-worship prevail at the present moment in almost every part of the world where superstition and ignorance are ruling influences. Nor can we really condemn, as either unnatural or unreasonable, the feeling of veneration with which trees are generally regarded, bearing in mind the grateful shade and shelter which they afford, the beauty of their foliage, their importance as purifiers of the atmosphere, and the bundreds of useful purposes to which their wood, leaves, and fruit are applicable, According to Dr. E. B. Tylor ('Primitive Culture,' ii. 223), the North American Indians of the Far West often hang offerings on the trees to propitiate the spirits and procure good weather and good hunting. He adds that Mr. Darwin describes the South Americans as doing much the same.

In Persia and other Eastern Countries trees may often be met with, the branches of which have been recently hung with offerings of cloth, rags, and even garments. In India the notion of trees being inhabited by deities or semi-divine beings or spirits is to this day very common, and we have already noted (p. 112) that during the period of Gautama's Bodhi-sattvaship, in the course of which he had to undergo countless births in preparation for his Buddhahood, he was born forty-three times as a tree-god.

In Siam, according to Mr. Alabaster, offerings are commonly made in the present day to the spirits or deities inhabiting trees. People hang various votive objects on the branches, or place them on a stand or altar beneath any particular tree whose deity they wish to propitiate. Moreover they are very averse to the cutting down of any trees of any kind, lest the treegods should be angry.

"Some years ago," says Mr. Alcharter, "when I employed my spare energy in showing the Siamese low to make peads in the, till them, roadless suburbs of Bangkak, I had to cut my lines through villages, temple-groves, orchards, plantations, and patches of jungle. For the "wicked" duty of cutting down the trees, a gong of the lowest criminals was placed at my disporal," But he adds that the removal of any specially holy building or tree was interdicted by the Government.

We have already seen that, according to the theory of later Buddhism, every Buddha is supposed to have his own special tree under which he sat and meditated, and in the end attained supreme knowledge (see p. 136). For example, there is the Pippala (also called Asynttha, Ficus Religiosa) sacred fig-tree of Gautama Buddha, the Vata or Banyan-tree (Ficus Indica) of Kūšyapa Buddha, the Udumbara (Ficus Glomerata) of Kanaka-muni; the Šīrīsha (Acacia Serisa) of Kraku-Čehanda; the Šāla (Shorea Rolusta) of Višva-bhū; the Pundartka (White

Lolus) of Sikhin ; the Pāṭali (Bignonia Suaveolens) of Vipasyin.

These six Buddhas with Gautama are sometimes held to be the seven principal Buddhas, and, according to some authorities, the tree of the future Buddha (Maitreya) will be the Iron-wood tree (Sideroxylon)². Specimens of some of these trees are to be found growing in the area of the Buddha Gayā temple, and several are represented in the sculptures of the Stūpa of Bharhut (of the second century B.c.). On one of the pillars of that Stūpa elephants are carved in the act of worshipping both the Pipal-tree and the Banyan-tree. In fact it must be borne in mind that Gautama Buddha is said to have meditated under both of these trees, and is therefore connected with both (see p. 39).

It might have been expected, too, that the Sal-tree would have ranked next in sacredness to the Pipal and Banyan; for according to one legend, Māyā gave birth to Gautama while standing under a Sal-tree, and according to another legend, Gautama died on a couch placed between two Sal-trees (pp. 23, 50). This tree, however, appears to be more honoured in connexion with the Buddha Višva-bhū (p. 136, note 1).

There are other trees which were held in veneration by Indian Buddhists:—for example, the Mango (Amra) and the Jambu, and the Asoka. The first of these appears frequently in sculptures, and is known by the shape of its fruit.

^{&#}x27; Or according to some the Salmali or Silk-cotton tree (Simal).

Spence Hardy's ' Eastern Monachism,' p. 215.

Two other trees under which the Buddha is said to have meditated after his attainment of Buddhahood namely, the Mućalinda-tree and the Rājāyatana-tree are not identified.

But among all trees revered by all Buddhists of all nationalities, the Asvattha or Pippala (Pipal), under which Gautama achieved Buddhahood and perfect knowledge, takes the precedence. In some Buddhist countries the climate prevents its introduction, but if it can by any means be made to grow, it is everywhere planted close to Buddhist temples, monasteries and Dāgahas, and in many cases is the product of a seed brought from the supposed original tree at Buddha-Gayā.

A tradition relates that Gautama during his lifetime directed Ananda to break off a branch from that original tree and to plant it in the garden of the Vihara, or monastery, at Śrāvastī—Gautama's favourite place of residence—'He who worships it,' said Gautama, 'will receive the same reward as if he worshipped me *.'

This is a mere legend resting on no historical basis; but the tradition which makes Gautama choose a seat under the sacred Pippala or Asvattha as the spot where the first stirrings of a divine afflatus and the first whisperings of divine communications—symbolized by the mysterious quivering and rustling of its leaves—

I conjecture that the Mucalinda-tree may have been the Sandal, for it is described in Sanskrit literature as infested by scakes. The fact of a serpent having emerged from the roots of this tree and protected the Boddha instead of injuring him, may account for the sacred character of the sandal-wood statue (see p. 408).

² Hardy's 'Eastern Monachism,' p. 212.

were likely to make themselves felt, points to a probable fact—a fact quite in harmony with what we have already noted in regard to his early Brāhmanical education and ideas. We read in the Katha Upanishad (VI. 1) that the root of the Asvattha-tree was identified with the Supreme Being, Brahman. In a passage of the Mundaka Upanishad (III. 1. 1) and in a Mantra of the Rig-veda (I. 164, 20) the same idea is alluded to. It is true that Gautama afterwards repudiated the possibility of any divine inspiration coming from any external source whatever, yet it is probable that when he first seated himself under the sacred fig-tree, which is even now regarded by the Hindūs as a manifestation of the god Brahmā, he expected supernatural communications of some kind 1.

The history of the original sacred Pippala (Asvattha) tree, or as it is commonly called the Bodhi-tree (Botree) of Gautama Buddha at Buddha-Gayā, has already been sketched in a previous Lecture (see pp. 392-394).

Hiouen Throng's description of the tree, as he saw it in the seventh century, has also been given (see p. 399). Fa-hien, who saw it at Buddha-Gaya in the fifth century, calls it the Patra-tree. The following is an abridgement of what he says about it:—

The Bodhi-entive advanced to the l'atra-tree, placed the Kusu grass at the foot of it, and sat down with his face to the east. Then King

I noticed a fine specimen of this tree growing in the courtyard of the temple of the god Brahm5 at Pokhar, near Ajmere, visited by me in 1884. Near it were two Banyan trees, a Num tree, and Aśoka tree. Brahma's other temple at Idar was not visited by me.

Maza sent three beautiful damsels to tempt him. The Bodhi-sattva put his toes down to the ground, and the young maidens were changed into old grandmothers. Buddha, after attaining perfect wisdom, contemplated the tree for seven days (Legge, p. 88).

Fā-hien also saw the offspring of the original Bodhitree growing in Ceylon (Legge, p. 103).

It is recorded that soon after Mahinda, son of Asoka, arrived in Ceylon (about 250 B.C.) for the purpose of propagating Buddhism, his sister, who had become a Buddhist Nun, also arrived there, and brought with her from King Asoka a branch of the sacred Bodhi-tree of Buddha-Gayā. This was planted at Anurādha-pura, and the zealous Buddhists of Ceylon fully believe that the identical tree exists there still.

An interesting account of the state of this tree or its descendant, about thirty years ago, is given in Sir Emerson Tennant's 'Ceylon' (vol. ii. p. 613). I here give an abridged extract:—

The Bo-tree of Anundha-pura is in all probability the oldest historical tree in the world. Its conservancy has been an object of solicitude to successive dynasties, and the story of its vicinsitudes has been preserved in a series of continuous chronicles.

It would almost seem to verify the prophecy pronounced when it was planted, that it would flourish and be green for ever.

The degree of sanctity with which this extraordinary tree has been invested by Buddhists, may be compared to the feeling of veneration with which Christians regard the attested wood of the Cross.

The other Bo-trees which are found in the vicinity of every temple in Ceylon are said to be all derived from the parent-tree at Anuradhapura, but they have been propagated by seeds; the priesthood adhering in this respect to the precedent recorded in the Mahō-vanša (when Mahinda binsself, taking up a fruit as it fell, gave it to the king to plant), and objecting religiously to lop it with any weapon.

In the fifth century Fa-hien found the Bo-tree at Anuradha-pura

in vigorous health, and its guardians displaying towards it the same vigilant tenderness which they exhibit at the present day.

The author of the Maha-ransa, who wrote between the years 459 and 478 of our era, after relating the ceremonial which had been observed nearly eight hundred years before, at the planting of the venerated tree by Mahinda, concludes by saying:—'Thus this monarch of the forest, endowed with miraculous powers, has stood for ages in Lanka, promoting the spiritual welfare of its inhabitants and the propagation of true religion.'

When Buddhism became thoroughly mixed up with Hinduism the Kalpa-tree or divine tree of Indra's paradise was often introduced. It is supposed to have its terrestrial counterpart in some sacred spots on earth, and there to grant all desires, the worshipper baving merely to stretch out his hand and take the gifts suspended from its branches! In one sculpture it is represented pouring out coins on the ground. This kind of wishing-tree is believed to present, among other things, any food that its worshippers may ask for, and to present it ready-cooked, if cooking is needed.

The miraculous tree which developed out of the Buddha's tooth-cleaning twig, when thrown by him on the ground, has been already described (see p. 419, and compare 'Brāhmanism and Hindūism,' p. 337).

Sacred Symbols.

Some of the sacred objects already described may be regarded as symbols. Of those which are more

Compare my translation of 'Sakuntala,' pp. 90, 91 (fifth edition). The Christmas-tree with its suspended gilts offers a curious and interesting analogy. The wonderful tree described by Messrs. Hue and Gabet as seen by them (vol. ii. p. 53, Hazlett's translation) can only be regarded as an example of a remarkably clever boax.

strictly symbols the *Tri-ratna* 'three-jewel' emblem comes first. It is three-pointed, and the three points are simply emblematical of the Buddha, the Law, and the Monastic Order. It is often used as an ornament. Good examples may be seen in some of the Bharhut sculptures (see Sir A. Cunningham's work). The central point is often the least elevated.

The use of this triple symbol is another proof of the connexion between Buddhism and Hindūism. Both delight in triads and in symbolizing triads i, but the Buddhist 'three-jewel' symbol should not be confused with the Hindū Tri-sūla, which is Šiva's trident used as a weapon in his warfare with the demons. The Tri-ratna is merely the analogue of the Tri-sūla, as it is also of the triple horizontal mark on the forehead of Saivas, and of the Tri-pundra or triple frontal mark of the Tengalai sect of Rāmānuja Vaishņavas. The two outer marks of the latter stand for Vishņu's two feet and the middle for his consort Lakshmi².

Sir A. Cunningham was the first to show that the three fetish-like figures of Jagannath (Krishna) and his sister and brother, at Puri in Orissa, were derived from three of the combined emblems of the Buddhist Triratna (compare p. 166 of this volume).

Next to the Tri-ratna comes the Cakra or wheel. This symbolizes the Buddhist doctrine that the origin

¹ Mr. H. Sewell has written an interesting article on 'Early Buddhist Symbolism,' in which he connects certain symbols with solar ideas derived from the West. Mr. Frederic Pincott thinks that the triple symbol stands for the ancient Y of the 'Ye disarma' formula.

² See my 'Modern India,' p. 193, published by Musers, Trübnet and Co., and 'Brahmanism and Hindüism,' p. 127.

of life and of the universe (p. 119) are unknowable—
the doctrine of a circle of causes and effects without
beginning and without end. The wheel also typifies
the rolling of this doctrine over the whole surface
of the world (pp. 410, 423). It is perhaps one of the
most important symbols of Buddhist philosophy. It is
often represented as either supporting the Tri-ratma or
supported by it, or the latter may be inserted in it.

Observe that the Cakra or wheel is equally a Vaishpava symbol, but in the hand of Vishnu or of Krishna it is a circular weapon, hurled at a demon-foe.

Another symbol is the Lotus-flower. Its constant use as an emblem, seems to result from the wheel-like form of the flower—the petals taking the place of spokes, and thus typifying the doctrine of perpetual cycles of existence—or from the perfection typified by the regularity of these petals, or from the idea that its expanded flower, reposing on a calm mirror-like lake, is a fit emblem of Nirvana.

The Wheel, the Tri-ratna, and the Lotus are so important, as symbols of Buddhism, that they are combined in the vignette on the title-page of this volume.

Another symbol is the Svastika mark, consisting of two lines crossing each other, the termination of each arm of the cross being usually bent round in the same direction. Much controversy has been devoted to the origin and meaning of this symbol, which simply symbolizes good luck, and equally belongs to Hinduism.

¹ The Jaugada inscription has two Svastikas, the arms in each of which are bent in opposite directions.

Long ago I propounded a theory that it might represent the four arms of Lakshmi. I now think it a mere curtailed form of the Wheel, consisting of four spokes with a portion of the periphery of the circle. In my opinion, the four spokes may represent the four groups of worlds (i.e. the lower worlds and three groups of heavens, p. 213) circling in an eternal cycle. Sir A. Cunningham considers this symbol to be a monogram or interlacing of the letters of the auspicious words su asti (svasti) in the Asoka characters.

Another symbol is the Throne or seat of Buddha—a favourite emblem in many sculptures. In Conningham's 'Stupa of Bharhut' the throne of each Buddha is often represented under his Bodhi-tree (but without any image), and the thrones of the last four Buddhas are joined together in a single bas-relief. Sometimes the throne is covered by an umbrella with garlands, or the Buddha's bowl may rest on it. Sometimes two foot-prints are on a foot-stool under the throne.

Another venerated symbol is the Stupa (see p. 505). It is often an object of adoration in itself.

I need scarcely revert to the *Umbrella* symbol (see p. 393). In Eastern countries it typifies supremacy. If a king is present no one else ought to carry an umbrella.

The Sankha or Conch-shell is a very auspicious symbol, especially if the convolutions turn to the right in the Nandy-avarta form, as on the Buddha's foot (see p. 513).

The Tibetan symbol of the 'Flying korse' (Lang-ta)
—able to transport a man round the world in one
day—has been mentioned before; also the Norbu gem
(see pp. 381, 528).

Sacred Animals.

It may be truly said that all animals are more or less venerated—though not actually worshipped—under the Buddhist system. How can it be otherwise when every Buddhist believes that the Buddha himself was incarnated in various animals during the period of his Bodhi-sattvaship (see p. 111)?

In the same way the Hindus believe that the god Vishnu was incarnated in animals, such as a fish, a tortoise, and a boar,

Buddhism in this as in other respects is like Brāhmanism and Hindūism. The feeling of reverence for animals rests on the doctrine of metempsychosis. It is difficult for either a Hindū or a Buddhist to draw a line of demarcation between gods, men, and animals, when the same living being may exist as a god, a man, or an animal. It is on this account that in India animals appear to live on terms of the greatest friendship and mutual confidence with human beings.

Everywhere in India animals dispute possession of the earth with man. Birds build their nests and lay their eggs in the fields, untroubled by fears or misgivings, before the very eyes of every passer-by, and within the reach of every village school-boy. Animals rove over the soil as if they were the huddords. Bulls walk about independently in the streets, and jostle you on the pavements; monkeys dumesticate themselves jauntily on the roof of your house; parrots peer inquisitively from the caves of your bedroom into the mysteries of your toilet; crows make themselves at home on your window-sill, and carry off impudently any partiable article of jewellery that takes their fancy on your dressing-table; sparrows hop about impertinently and take the bread off your table-cloth; a solitary mongoose emergen every morning from a hole in your verandab, and expects a share in your breakfast; swarms of insects claim a portion of your mid-day

meal, and lery a tax on the choicest delicacies at your dinner table; hats career triumphantly about your head as you light yourself to your bedroom; and at certain seasons makes domicile themselves unpleasantly in the folds of your cast-off garments. (Quoted from my 'Brāhmanism and Hindūism.')

Perhaps the most sacred animal in the estimation of all Buddhists is the elephant. This will be easily understood by recalling what has been said in a previous Lecture (see pp. 23, 24). In one of the Bharhut sculptures the white elephant is seen descending to enter the side of Gautama's mother Māyā ('Stūpa of Bharhut,' p. 84). The elephant, says Sir A. Cunningham, is a favourite subject for delineation. It is represented in almost every possible position, as standing, walking, running, sitting down, eating, drinking, throwing water over its own back, and lastly, kneeling down in reverence before the holy Bodhi-tree.

Probably the next sacred animal to the elephant is the deer. The Buddha was born eleven times as a deer (p. 111), and he delivered his first sermon in a deer-park (p. 42). The 'goose' (Hansa, sometimes called 'a duck' or 'a swan') is also very sacred. With regard to other animals, Sir A. Cunningham remarks:—

The animals represented in the Bharbut sculptures are of two classes, the natural and the fabulous. The latter, however, are limited to three varieties, an elephant with a fish-tail, a crocodile with a fish-tail, and a winged horse; while the former comprises no less than fourteen quadrupeds, six hirds, one snake, one fish, one insect, one crocodile, two tortoises, one lizard, and one frog. The quadrupeda include the liun, elephant, horse, rhinoceres, wild boar, bull, deer, wolf, mankey, cat, dog, sheep, hare, and squirrel. The hirds comprise the cock, parrot, peacock, goose, wild duck, and quail. The snakes and fishes appear to be of only one kind. The solitary insect is a fiesh-fly (p. 41, etc.).

In Burma people feed sacred fish, and save their lives in seasons when they would perish through the drying up of rivers and pends (see p. 364).

Dr. Eitel, in his Lectures (p. 136), points out that even pigs are held sacred, though not worshipped, by Northern Buddhists. We must not forget that the Buddha in two of his births was a pig (p. 112), that he died of eating pork, and that in sculptures of the Tantrik goddess Vajra-vārāhi—adopted by Northern Buddhists—a row of seven pigs is carved underneath her three-headed figure, one head being that of a pig.

Miscellaneous Objects.

Among these may be reckoned bells of various kinds. The prayer-bells common in Tibet, which are held in the hand and used during the chanting of prayers, have been already described (p. 323).

In Burma bells abound everywhere. They are of all sizes, and often of immense weight, but are not used in the same way as in Tibet. Nor are they ever rung in peals or with a clapper. Their use is not to call people to religious services. It is no part of the business of monks or priests to summon the laity to any service. Every man worships on his own account, and for himself, and by himself, and no so-called priest reminds him of his religious duties, or is responsible if he neglects them.

The real use of bells in Burmese temples is to draw the attention of the deities and spirits (Naths) to the act of worship, and so secure the due registering of prayer-merit. When a man has finished his repetitions, he strikes the bell with a piece of wood or



One desired a last many if an only

other sacred implement lying near, and the more noise he makes the better. Mr. Scott informs us that every large pageda has dozens of bells of all sizes, hanging outside, and one or two inside the central shrine. They are constantly dedicated by religious people, and thus multiplied ad infinitum.

The form of dedication is inscribed on every bell, and is in the Pāli language, though instances of the vernacular occur.

The following is a portion of a remarkable inscription in the vernacular (Shway Yoe, i. 243, abridged):—

This bell was moulded with great care and much expense, and is bumbly offered by Moung San Yah and his wife, who seek refuge in the boundless mercy of the pitiful Buddha, in the majesty of the eternal law, and in the examples of the venerable assembly. They humbly strive to gain merit for themselves. May the good Nathelook smilingly on them. May the Nathe who dwell in the air and the earth defend their two fat hollocks—which plough the fields—from evil creatures. May the guardian Naths of the house and of the city keep Chit Oo, their son, and little Mah Mee, their darling daughter, from harm.

The weight of the bell is generally added to the dedication.

There is a fine Burmese bell in the Indian section of the South Kensington Museum. It has a long Pali inscription, a portion of the translation of which I here give :—

'Without charity you cannot attain to Nirvana'-so it is written in the Pali Texts.

I, the giver of this bell, was staying in the sweet-smelling town of Ma-no—of which I collect the taxes for the king—and with me was my wife—my life's breath—like to the pollen of a lily, from whom I will not be separated in all the existences which are to come, and out of which we hope soon to escape. We adore Buddha, that we may embark in the golden raft of the Noble Path, which will lead us to

the final plunge into Nirvana. We two, brother and sister (that is, husband and wife), have given this bell as an offering. The exact weight of the bell is 2500 kysts. We took our own weight in gold and silver and bright copper and other metal, and mixed them well together, in the year 1200 (1847 A.B.).

Now I will record all the alms I gave and what I crected within the sacred enclosure. I gave a sacred flag-staff (see p. 380 of these Lectures), the price of which, with all expenses in putting up, was 500 rupees. At the fact of it I built four small pagedas. Outside I built a monastery and a rest-house. Such are all the offerings. May I be freed from the Four states of Ponishment, from the Three Great Calamities (war, famine, and plague), from the Eight Evil Places, from the Five Enemies, from unfortunate times and seasons, and from badpeople. May I escape all these when I die.

All the merits I have gained, may they be shared with my parents, teachers, and all my relations; with kings, queens, nobles, and all people in the thirty-one places of habitation throughout the universe. (See p. 121 of these Lectures.)

Under the head of miscellaneous objects, we may note the seven precious minerals or substances to which allusion has frequently been made. They are gold, silver, pearl, sapphire or ruby, cat's eye, diamond, and coral (Childers); but they vary, and some authorities substitute lapis lazuli for pearl. In Hinduism there are nine precious substances (nava-ratna).

We may also enumerate here the seven treasures belonging to every universal monarch. These are:r. a wheel which, being set in motion by the monarch, rolls before him to establish the Law in his dominions; 2. an elephant; 3. a flying horse (see p. 523); 4. u jewel which on the darkest night illuminates the earth for seven miles round (p. 381); 5, a good queen or wife; 6. a good minister or servant, who has the power of discovering hidden treasures; 7, a good general (compare Alabaster's 'Wheel of the Law,' p. 81).

Supplementary Remarks on the Connexion of Buddhism with Jainism 1.

Having during the progress of the foregoing Lectures, incidentally mentioned the subject of Jainism. I ought not to conclude them without explaining some of the chief points of difference between the system of the Jainas (conveniently contracted into Jains) and that of the Buddhists. The Jains in India, according to their own recknning, number 1,222,000; but this is incorrect, for by the last Census they only number half a million. A great authority (Sir William Wilson Hunter) confirms this. (See his 'Gazetteer' and 'Indian Empire.')

Most scholars in the present day are of opinion that the Jaina Teacher Vardhamāna Mahā-vira (Nātaputta) and Gautama Buddha were contemporaries, and that Jains were an independent sceptical sect, probably a little antecedent to the Buddhists, and were their rivals. At any rate it seems certain that the Niganthas ² or

¹ The expression Jainism corresponds to Saivism, just as Jaina does to Saiva. Consistency would require Banddhism and Banddha for Buddhism and Buddhist, but I fear the latter expressions are too firmly established.

² Niguntha (also spelt Niggantha) is from the Sanskrit Nir-grantha, *having no ties or worldly associations.'

530

Dig-ambara Jains, that is, a sect of naked ascetics, existed before the Buddha's time, and that the Tripitaka alludes to them.

Probably Vardhamāna, Mahā-vīra (usually called Mahā-vīra) was merely a reformer of a system previously founded by a teacher named Pāršva-nātha. Not much is known of the latter, though he is greatly bonoured by the Jains. His images are 'serpent-canopied' like those of Buddha (p. 480). His pupils are called Pāsāvaććijja (for Pāršvāpatyiya, 'belonging to the descendants of Pāršva'). They were only bound by four vows, whereas Mahā-vīra's teaching imposed five vows.

We have seen that Gautama Buddha, in the fifth century B.C., came to the conclusion that bodily austerities were useless as a means of obtaining liberation. His main idea seems to have been that liberation from the painful cycle of continued re-births, that is, from Samsara, was to be obtained by means of knowledge (Bodbi), evolved out of the inner consciousness through meditation (dhyana) and intuition; whereas, in contradistinction to this Buddhist idea, the main idea of the Jain teacher Mahā-vīra seems to have been that liberation was to be obtained through subjugation of the passions and through mortification of the body (tapas). The term Jina, 'conqueror,' is used in both systems, but Gautama Buddha was a Jina or conqueror through profound abstract meditation, whereas Mahā-vīra was a Jina through severe bodily austerity.

In fact, the Jains, like all other ascetics, were impressed with the idea that it was necessary to

maintain a defensive warfare against the assault of evil passions, by keeping under the body and subduing it. They had also a notion that a sense of shame implied sin, so that if there were no sin in the world there would be no shame. Hence they argued rather illogically that to get rid of clothes was to get rid of sin; and every ascetic who aimed at sinlessness was enjoined to walk about naked, with the air or sky (Dig) as his sole covering (Dig-ambara).

In the Kalpa-sutra of the Jains we read that Mahavira himself began his career by wearing clothes for one year and one month, and after that he walked about naked. Now Gautama Buddha was an opponent of Jain asceticism, and it seems to me probable that one of the chief points on which he laid stress was that of decent clothing. In the Dhamma-pada (141) occurs the sentiment that 'Nakedness cannot purify a mortal who has not overcome desires.' And again, in the Schhiya Dhamma we have 'properly clad' 'must a monk itinerate.' (See p. 473 of these Lectures.)

It is recorded in the Vinaya (Mahā-vagga I. 6, 7-9) that Upaka, a man of the Ājīvaka sect of naked ascetics, founded by Gosāla (said to have been a pupil of Mahā-vīra), met the Buddha just after his enlightenment, and noticing his bright countenance, asked him who had been his teacher? He replied, 'Having gained all knowledge, I am myself the highest teacher.' Thereupon the naked ascetic shook his head and went another road.

Clearly these maked Niganthas, disciples of the Jain Teacher Mahā-vīra, were no friends of the Buddha. It seems to me even possible that Gautama's great rival, Deva-datta (see pp. 405, 406), may have belonged to a Dig-ambara sect who opposed the Buddha on questions of stricter asceticism, especially in the matter of clothing; for in ancient sculptures Deva-datta is generally represented naked or nearly so, and is usually in close proximity to his cousin Gautama Buddha, who, in marked contrast to the other, is always clothed. Evidently the question of dress was a crucial one, and in process of time a party seems to have arisen, even among the Dig-ambara Jains, opposed to strict asceticism in this particular.

This party ultimately formed themselves into a separate sect, calling themselves Svetāmbaras, that is, 'clothed in white garments.' It is well known that in early Buddhiam two similar parties arose, the strict and the lax. But the two Buddhist parties were ultimately reunited. The second council is supposed to have settled the controversy.

Dr. Jacobi has shown that the separation of the two Jain seets must have taken place (according to the traditions of both parties) some time before the first century of our era.

It appears probable that the strict Dig-umbaras preceded the more lax Svetāmbaras, though each sect claims to be the oldest. The two Jain sects have remained separate to the present day, though in all essential points of doctrine and discipline they agree.

When I was last in India, in 1884, I ascended the two bills, Pärasnäth (for Pärsva-näth) and Ābū—both

of them most sacred places in the estimation of the Jains, and covered with their temples. My ascent of the former has been already described (p. 509). I also visited Delhi, Jaypur, Ajmere, and some other chief Jain stations. Jaypur is the stronghold of the Dig-ambara Jains, and two intelligent Dig-ambara Pandits, named Phate Lal and Syoji Lal, visited me there. We conversed for a long time in Sanskrit, and I asked them many questions about their religion, and the points in which they differed from the Svetämbara sect.

Three chief differences were stated to be: First, the Svetämbaras object to entirely nude images of any of the twenty-four Jinas or Tirtham-karas accepted by both sects. Hence all Svetämbara statues ought to have some appearance of a line round the middle of the body, representing a strip of cloth. In one respect the images of the Jinas differ from those of the Buddhas. They have a jewel-like mark on the breast. This is especially conspicuous in Pārsva-nāth. They are also of different colours, and have symbols (generally animals, such as a deer, tortoise, pig) connected with them.

Secondly, the Svetāmbaras admit women into their order of ascetics just as Buddhists have their Bhikkhunis, or nuns; whereas the Dig-ambaras, for obvious reasons, do not admit women.

Thirdly, the Svetāmbaras have distinct sacred books of their own, which they call Angas, 'limbs of the Law,' eleven in number, besides others, making 45 Āgamas, 11 Angas, 12 Upāngas, 10 Painnas (Praktroaka), 4 Mūlas, 6 Čhedas, 1 Anuyoga-dvāra, and 1 Nandi. Dr. Buhler places the composition of the Angas in the third century 534

a.c. Dr. Jacobi places them at the end of the fourth or beginning of the third century. They are written in Jain Präkrit (sometimes called Ardha-Māgadhī, a later form than Pāli), with Sanskrit commentaries. The Digambaras substitute, for the Aṅgas, later works, also written in more modern Prākrit (probably in the fifth or sixth century after Christ), and maintain that the Svetāmbara Canon is spurious. Both sects have valuable Sanskrit works in their sacred literature.

I now add a few characteristics of both sects of Jains as distinguishing them from Buddhists.

I need scarcely notice the fact that the Jains of the present day keep up Caste. The two Jain Pandits who came to me at Jaypur were Brahmans, and wore the Brahmanical thread. I believe this to be a mere modern innovation, which does not properly belong to the Jain system.

More important are the following points:—The Jain saints, or prophets, are called by a peculiar name Tirtham-kara, 'ford-makers,' i.e. making a ford across the troubled river of constant births or transmigrations (Samsara) to the Elysium of Nirvāṇa; whereas the name Tirtham-kara with the Buddhists means a 'heretical teacher.' Then there are twenty-four Jain Tirtham-karas, whereas there are twenty-five Buddhas. Of the twenty-four Jain saints, the twenty-third and twenty-fourth—Pārsva-nāth (pp. 509, 529) and Mahāvira—are the only historical personages. The others, beginning with Rishabha, are mythical.

Next, the Jains have no Stūpas or Dāgabas (p. 504) for preserving the relics of their saints.

Still more important is the point that the Jains believe in separate individual souls (Jīva), whereas the Buddhists deny the existence of souls. Souls, according to the Jains, may exist in stocks, stones, lumps of earth, drops of water, particles of fire. In Buddhism there is, as we have seen, no true metempsychosis, but rather a connected series of metamorphoses, and this stops at animals; whereas the metempsychosis of Jainism extends to inorganic matter.

With regard to the moral code two or three points may be noticed. The Jaina 'three jewels' are Rightbelief, Right-knowledge, and Right-conduct, whereas the Buddhist Tri-ratna consists in the well-known Triad—the Buddha, the Law, and the Monkhood.

Then as to the five chief Moral Probibitions—the fifth with Jains is: 'have no workly attachments;' whereas with Buddhists it is: 'drink no strong drink.' I believe the Buddhists to have been the first to introduce total abstinence from strong drinks into India. The Jains, too, lay even more stress than the Buddhists on the first prohibition:—Kill no living creature. They strain water before drinking, sweep the ground with a silken brush before sitting down on it, never eat in the dark, often wear muslin before their mouths to catch minute insects, and even object to eating fruits containing seed.

Another interesting difference is that Jainism makes Dharma and Adharma, good and evil, or rather merit and demerit, two out of its six real substances—its fundamental and eternal principles (Astikāya)—the other four being matter (pudgala), soul (jīva), space and time. The Jains reject the Buddhist theory of the five Skandhas (see p. 109).

Lastly, the prayer-formula of the Jains differs from the well-known 'three-refuge' formula of the Buddhists ('I go for refuge to the Buddha, the Law, and the order of Monks') thus: 'Reverence to the Arhats, to the Siddhas, to the Acaryas, to the Upadhyayas, to all the Sadhus' (Namo Arihantanam namo Siddhanam namo Ayariyanam namo Uvajjhayanam namo loe sabbasahunam).

Time will not permit me to notice minor differences, such as the Jain rule that the hair should be painfully torn off, instead of cut off, etc.

Certainly Jainism, when viewed from the stand-point of Christianity, is even a colder system than Buddhism, and has even less claim to be called a religion. Yet no system can show a greater number of temples. Every Jain who is noted for his piety builds a small temple. He never repairs the temples of others. At Pālitāna in Kāthiāwār, there is a whole city of Jain temples. Nor is it at all necessary that every temple built to hold a Jain saint should possess either priests or worshippers. What is aimed at is the acquisition of merit by the performance of pious acts.

I must conclude by expressing my opinion that Indian Jainism is gradually drifting back into the current of Brahmanism, which everywhere surrounds it and attracts it. Jainism, like Buddhism, came out from Brahmanism, and into Brahmanism it is destined to return.

LECTURE XVIII.

Buddhism contrasted with Christianity.

In the previous Lectures I have incidentally contrasted the principal doctrines of Buddhism with those of Christianity.

It will be my aim in this concluding Lecture to draw attention more directly and more in detail to the main points of divergence between two systems, which in their moral teaching have so many points of contact, that a superficial study of either is apt to lead to very confused ideas in regard to their comparative excellence and their resemblance to each other.

And first of all I must remind those who heard my earlier Lectures of the grand fundamental distinction which they were intended to establish—namely, that Christianity is a religion, whereas Buddhism, at least in its earliest and truest form, is no religion at all, but a mere system of morality and philosophy founded on a pessimistic theory of life.

Here, however, it may be objected that, before we exclude Buddhism from all title to be called a religion, we ought to define what we mean by the term 'religion.'

Of course, it will be generally acknowledged that mere morality need not imply religion, though—taking the converse—it is most undeniably true that religion must of necessity imply morality.

Unquestionably there have been great philosophers in ancient times who have lived strictly moral lives without acknowledging any religious creed at all. Many excellent men, too, exist among us in the present day, who resent being called irreligious, and yet hold no definite religious doctrines, and decline to accept any system which commits them to absolute belief in anything except an eternal Energy or Force.

Clearly the definition of the word 'religion' is beset with difficulties, and its etymology is too uncertain to help us in explaining it. We shall, however, be justified if we affirm that every system claiming to be a religion in the proper sense of the word must postulate the eternal existence of one living and true God of infinite power, wisdom, and love, the Creator, Designer, and Preserver of all things visible and invisible.

It must also take for granted the immortality of man's soul or spirit, and the reality of a future state and of an unseen world. It must also postulate in man an innate sense of dependence on a personal God—a sense of reverence and love for Him, springing from a belief in His justice, boliness, wisdom, power, and love, and intensified by a deep consciousness of weakness, and a yearning to be delivered from the presence, tyranny, and penalty of sin.

³ Cicero (De natura deorum) derives religion from relego, and explains it as a diligent practice of prayer and worship. Others have derived it from relige, and hold that it means 'binding to God.'

Then, starting from these assumptions, it must satisfy four requisites.

First, it must reveal the Creator in His nature and attributes to His creature, man.

Secondly, it must reveal man to himself. It must impart to him a knowledge of his own nature and history—what he is; why he was created; whither he is tending; and whether he is at present in a state of decadence downwards from a higher condition, or of development upwards from a lower.

Thirdly, it must reveal some method by which the finite creature may communicate with the infinite Creator—some plan by which he may gain access to Him and become united with Him, and be saved by Him from the consequences of his own sinful acts.

Fourthly, such a system must prove its title to be called a religion by its regenerating effect on man's nature; by its influence on his thoughts, desires, passions, and feelings; by its power of subduing all his evil tendencies; by its ability to transform his character and assimilate him to the God it reveals.

It is clear, then, that tried by such a criterion as this, early Buddhism could not claim to be a religion, It failed to satisfy these conditions. It refused to admit the existence of a personal Creator, or of man's dependence on a higher Power. It denied any eternal soul or Ego in man. It acknowledged no external, supernatural revelation. It had no priesthood—no real clergy; no real prayer; no real worship. It had no true idea of sin, or of the need of pardon (p. 124), and it condemned man to suffer the consequences of his own

sinful acts without hope of help from any Saviour or Redeemer, and indeed from any being but himself.

The late Bishop of Calcutta once said to me, that being in an outlying part of his diocese, where Buddhism prevailed, he asked an apparently pious Buddhist, whom he happened to observe praying in a temple, what he had just been praying for ? He replied, 'I have been praying for nothing.' 'But,' urged the Bishop, 'to whom have you been praying?' The man answered, 'I have been praying to nobody.' 'What!' said the astonished Bishop, 'praying for nothing to nebody?' And no doubt this anecdote gives an accurate idea of the so-called prayer of a true Buddhist. This man had not really been praying for anything. He had been merely making use of some form of words to which an efficacy, like that of sowing fruitful seed in a field, was supposed to belong. He had not been praying in any Christian sense.

Here, however, an objector might remind me that according to my own showing, various developments of Buddhism modified and even contradicted the original creed, and that what has been here said about prayer, is only strictly applicable to early Buddhism as originally taught in the most ancient texts.

I grant this—I grant that expressions of reverence for the Buddha, the Law, and the Monkhood, developed into expressions of wants and needs, and that these expressions, gradually led on to the offering of actual prayers to deified Buddhas and Bodhi-sattvas.

I admit that we ought to judge of Buddhism as a whole. We ought to give full consideration to its later developments, and the gradual sliding of its atheism and agnosticism into theism and polytheism. We are bound to acknowledge that Buddhism, as it extended to other countries, did acquire the character of a theistic religious system, which, though false, had in it some points of contact with Christianity.

Nevertheless, admitting all this, and taking into account all that can be said in favour of Buddhism as a religious system, it will be easy to show how impossible it is to bridge over the yawning chasm which separates it from the true religion.

It is, indeed, one of the strange phenomena of the present day, that even educated people who call themselves Christians, are apt to fall into raptures over the precepts of Buddhism', attracted by the bright gems which its admirers delight in calling out of its moral code, and in displaying ostentationsly, while keeping out of sight all its dark spots, all its trivialities and senseless repetitions"; not to speak of all those evi-

¹ Here is an extract from a book called 'The Mystery of the Ages,' published in #887:—'Buddhism is the Christianity of the East, and, as such, even in better conservation than is Christianity, the Buddhism of the West.'

As instances of the trivialities I give the following from the Culla-vaggs (Sacred Books of the East, vol. xx, v, 31, p. 146; v, 9. 5, p. 87):—

[&]quot;Now at that time the Bhikkhus hung up their bowls on pins in the walls, or on hooks. The pins or hooks falling down, the bowls were broken. They told this matter to the Blessed One. "You are not, O Bhikkhus, to hang your lowls up. Whoseever does so, shall be guilty of a dukkata" (offence). Now at that time the Bhikkhus put their bowls down on a bed, or a chair; and sitting down thoughtlessly they upset them, and the bowls were broken. They

dences of deep corruption beneath a whited surface, all

told this matter to the Blessed One. "You are not, O Bhikkhus, to put your howls on a bed, or on a chair. Whosoever does so, shall be guilty of a dukkats" (offence). Now at that time the Bhikkhus kept their bowls on their laps; and rising up thoughtlessly they upset them, and the howls were broken. They told this matter to the Blessed One. "You are not, O Bhikkhus, to keep your howls on your laps. Whosever does so, shall be guilty of a dukkata" (offence). Now at that time the Bhikkhus put their bowls down on a sunshade; and the sunshade being lifted up by a whirlwind, the bowls rolled over and were broken. They told this matter to the Blessed One. "You are not, O Bhikkhus, to put your bowls down on a sunshade. Whoseever does so, shall be guilty of a dukkuta." Now at that time the Bhikkhus, when they were bolding the bowls in their hands, opened the door. The door springing back, the bowls were broken. They told this matter to the Blessed One. "You are not, O Bhikkhus, to open the door with your bowls in your hands. Whosoever does so, shall be guilty of a dukkuta." Now at that time the Bhikkhus did not use tooth-sticks, and their mouths got a bad edour. They told this matter to the Blessed One. "There are these five disadvantages, O Bhikkhus, in not using tooth-sticks-it is had for the eyes-the mouth becomes bad-smelling-the passages by which the flavours of the food pass are not pure-bile and phlegm get into the food-and the food does not taste well to him who does not use them. These are the five disadvantages, O Bhikkhus, in not using tooth-sticks." "There are five advantages, O Bhikkhus" (etc., the converse of the last). "I allow you, O Bhikkhus, tooth-sticks." Now at that time the Chabbaggiya Bhikkhus used long tooth-sticks; and even struck the Sammeras with them. They told this matter to the Blessed One. "You are not, O Bhikkhus, to use tou long tooth-sticks. Whoseever does so, shall be guilty of a dukkata. I allow you, O Bhikkhus, toothsticks up to eight finger-breadths in length. And Samsperss are not to be struck with them. Whoseover does so, shall be guilty of a dakkata." Now at that time a certain Bhikkhu, when using too short a tooth-stick got it stuck in his throat. They told this matter to the Blessed One. "You are not, O Bhikkhua, to use too short a toothstick. Whoseever does so, shall be guilty of a dukksta. I allow you, O Bhikkhas, tooth-sticks four finger-breadths long at the least."

those significant precepts and prohibitions in its books of discipline, which indeed no Christian could soil his

lips by uttering 1.

It has even been asserted that much of the teaching in the Sermon on the Mount, and in other parts of the Gospel narratives, is based on previously current moral teaching, which Buddhism was the first to introduce to the world, 500 years before Christ 2. But this is not all. The admirers of Buddhism maintain that the Buddha was not a mere teacher of the truths of morality, but of many other sublime truths. He has been justly called, say they the Light of Asia, though they condescendingly admit that Christianity as a later development is more adapted to become the religion of the world.

Let us then inquire, for a moment, what claim Gautama Buddha has to this title - the Light of Asia ?

Now, in the first place those who give him this name forget that his doctrines only spread over Eastern Asia, and that either Confucius, or Zoroaster, or Muhammad might equally be called 'the Light of Asia.'

* Dr. Kellagg, in his excellent work, the Light of Asia and the Light of the World, well criticizes Professor Seydel's Buddhist-Christian Harmony, as well as the Professor's views on this point expressed in his work entitled 'Das Evangelium von Jesu in Seinen Verhältnissen.

zu Buddha-Sage und Buddha-Lebre. Leipzig, r880.

Although this Lecture was written and in type before the publication of the Bishop of Colombo's article in the July (1888) number of the 'Nineteenth Century,' I need not say that I wish here, as the Bishop has done, to draw attention to the collection of 'maral horrors' existing in some parts of the Päräjika books-the disgusting detail of every conceivable form of revolting vice, supposed to be perpetrated or perpetrable by monks.

But was the Buddha, in any true sense, a Light to any part of the world?

It is certainly true that the main idea implied by Buddhism is intellectual enlightenment. Buddhism, before all things, means enlightenment of mind, resulting from intense self-concentration and introspection, from intense abstract meditation, combined with the exercise of a man's own reasoning faculties and intuitions.

Of what nature, then, was the so-called Light of Knowledge that radiated from the Buddha? Was it the knowledge of his own utter weakness, of his original depravity of heart, or of the origin of sin? No; the Buddha's light was in these respects profound darkness. He confessed himself, in regard to such momentous questions, a downright Agnostic. The primary origin of evil—the first evil act—was to him an inexplicable mystery.

Was it, then, a knowledge of the goodness, justice, holiness, and omnipotence of a personal Creator? Was it a knowledge of the Fatherhood of God? No; the Buddha's light was in these respects also mere and sheer darkness. In these respects, too, he acknowledged himself a thorough Agnostic. He admitted that he knew of no being higher than himself.

What, then, was the light that broke upon the Buddba? What was this enlightenment which has been so much written about and extelled? All that he claimed to have discovered was the origin of suffering and the remedy of suffering. All the light of knowledge to which he attained came to this:—that

suffering arises from indulging desires, especially the desire for continuity of life; that suffering is inseparable from life; that all life is suffering; and that suffering is to be got rid of by the suppression of desires, and by the extinction of personal existence.

Here, then, is the first great contrast. When the Buddha said to his converts, 'Come (ehi), be my disciple,' he bade them expect to get rid of suffering, he told them to stamp out suffering by stamping out desires (see pp. 43, 44). When the Christ said to His disciples, 'Come, follow Me,' He bade them expect suffering. He told them to glory in their sufferings—nay, to expect the perfection of their characters through suffering.

It is certainly noteworthy that both Christianity and Buddhism agree in asserting that all creation groundth and travaileth in pain, in suffering, in tribulation. But mark the vast, the vital distinction in the teaching of each. The one taught men to be patient under affliction, and to aim at the glorification of the suffering body, the other taught men to be intolerant of affliction, and to aim at the utter annihilation of the suffering body.

What says our Bible? We Christians, it says, are members of Christ's Body—of His flesh and of His bones—of that Divine Body which was once a suffering Body, a cross-bearing Body, and is now a glorified Body, an ever-living, life-giving Body. Hence it teaches us to honour and revere the human body; nay, almost to deify the human body.

A Buddhist, on the other hand, treats every kind

of body with contempt, and repudiates as a simple impossibility, all idea of being a member of the Buddha's body. How could a Buddhist be a member of a body which was burnt to ashes—which was calcined,—which became extinct at the moment when the Buddha's whole personality became extinguished also?

But, say the admirers of Buddhism, at least you will admit that the Buddha told men to avoid sin, and to aim at purity and holiness of life? Nothing of the kind. The Buddha had no idea of sin as an offence against God, no idea of true holiness (see p. 124). What he said was—Get rid of the demerit of evil actions and accumulate a stock of merit by good actions.

And let me remark here that this determination to store up merit—like capital at a bank—is one of those inveterate propensities of human nature, one of those irrepressible and deep-scated tendencies in humanity which nothing but the divine force imparted by Christianity can ever eradicate. It is for ever cropping up in the heart of man, as much in the West as in the East, as much in the North as in the South; for ever re-asserting itself like a pestilent weed, or like tares amidst the wheat, for ever hlighting the fruit of those good instincts which underlie man's nature everywhere.

Only the other day I met an intelligent Sikh from the Panjab, and asked him about his religion. He replied, 'I am no idolater; I believe in One God, and I repeat my prayers, called "Jap-jee," every morning and evening. These prayers occupy six pages of print, but I can get through them in little more than ten minutes.' He seemed to pride himself on this rapid recitation as a work of increased merit.

I said, 'What else does your religion require of you?' He replied, 'I have made one pilgrimage to a holy well near Amritsar. Eighty-five steps lead down to it. I descended and bathed in the sacred pool. Then I ascended one step and repeated my Jap-jee with great rapidity. Then I descended again to the pool and bathed again, and ascended to the second step and repeated my prayers a second time. Then I descended a third time, and ascended to the third step and repeated my Jap-jee a third time, and so on for the whole eighty-five steps, eighty-five bathings and eighty-five repetitions of the same prayers. It took me exactly fourteen hours, from 5 p.m. one evening to 7 a.m. next morning, and I fasted all the time.'

I asked, 'What good did you expect to get by going through this task?' He replied, 'I hope I have laid up an abundant store of merit, which will last me for a long time.'

This, let me tell you, is a genuine Hindû notion. It is of the very essence of Brâhmanism, of Hindûism, of Zoroastrianism, of Confucianism, of Muhammadanism. It is even more of the essence of Buddhism. For, of all systems, Buddhism is the one which lays most stress on the accumulation of merit by good actions, as the sole counterpoise to the mighty force generated by the accumulation of demerit through evil actions in present and previous forms of life.

548 BUDDIESM CONTRASTED WITH CURBSTIANTLY.

Nor did the Buddha ever claim to be a deliverer from guilt, a purger from the taint of past pollution. He never pretended to set any one free from the penalty, power, and presence of sin—from the bombage of sinful acts and besetting vices. He never professed to furnish any cure for the leprosy of man's corrupt nature—any medicine for a dying sinner! On the contrary, by his doctrine of Karma he bound a man hand and foot to the inevitable consequences of his own evil actions with chains of adamant. He said, in effect, to every one of his disciples, 'You are in slavery to a tyrant of your own sotting up; your own deeds, words, and thoughts in your present and former states of being, are your own avengers through a countless series of existences.

"Your nets your angels are for good or ill, Your fatal shadows that walk by you still."

'If you have been a murderer, a thief, a liar, impure, a drunkard, you must pay the penalty in your next birth—perhaps as a sufferer in one of the hells?, per-

It is true that in the Lalitz-vistam Buddha is described in terms which appear to assimilate his character to the Christian conception of a Saviour; but how could any man, however good and great, have any claim to be called either a Saviour or Robermer, who only revealed to his fellow-men anch a method of getting rid of pain and suffering, through their own works and merits, as most lead them in the end to extinction of all personal existence? The very essence of Christ's character as a Saviour is His divine power of transferring His can perfect mentits to imperfect men, and leading them from death to eternal life, not to eternal extinction of life.

In regard to the Buddhist doctrine of terrific purpoterial terments in some of the numerous Hells see p. 120 of this volume.

haps in the body of a wild beast, perhaps in that of some unclean animal or loathsome vermin, perhaps as a demon or evil spirit. Yes, your doom is scaled. Not in the heavens, O man, not in the midst of the sea, not if thou hidest thyself in the clefts of the mountains, wilt thou find a place where thou canst escape the force of thine own evil actions. Thy only hope of salvation is in thyself. Neither god nor man can save thee, and I am wholly powerless to set thee free.

And now, contrast the few brief words of Christ in his first recorded sermon?, *The Spirit of the Lord is upon Me, because He hath anointed Me to preach good tidings to the poor; He hath sent Me to proclaim liberty to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound.

Yes, in Christ alone there is deliverance from the bondage of former transgressions, from the prison-house of former sins; a total cancelling of the past; a complete blotting-out of the handwriting that is against us; an entire washing away of every guilty stain; the opening of a clear course for every man to start afresh; the free gift of pardon and of life to every criminal, to every sinner—even the most heinous and inveterate.

Still, I seem to hear some admirers of Buddhism

See Dhamma-pada, 127.

I have not followed the exact words in our authorized translation of St. Luke iv. 18, because they must be taken with Isaiah.

say: We admit the force of these contrasts, but surely you will allow that in the moral law of Buddha we find precepts identically the same as those of Christianity—precepts which tell a man not to love the world, not to love money, not to hate his enemies, not to do unrighteous acts, not to commit impurities, to overcome evil by good, and to do to others as we would be done by?

Well, I admit all this. Nay, I admit even more than this; for many Buddhist precepts command total abstinence in cases where Christianity demands only temperance and moderation. The great contrast, as I have already explained, between the moral precepts of Buddhism and Christianity, is not so much in the letter of the precepts, as in the power brought to bear in their application.

Buddhism, I repeat, says: Act righteously through your own efforts, and for the final getting rid of all suffering, of all individuality, of all life in yourselves. Christianity says: Be righteous through a power implanted in you from above, through the power of a life-giving principle, freely given to you, and always abiding in you. The Buddha said to his followers: 'Take nothing from me, trust to yourselves alone.' Christ said: 'Take all from Me; trust not to yourselves. I give unto you eternal life, I give unto you the bread of heaven, I give unto you living water.' Not that these priceless gifts involve any passive condition of inaction. On the contrary, they stir the soul of the recipient with a living energy. They stimulate him to noble deeds, and self-sacrificing efforts. They compel him to act as

the worthy, grateful, and appreciative possessor of so inestimable a treasure.

Still, I seem to hear some one say: We acknowledge this; we admit the truth of what you have stated; nevertheless, for all that, you must allow that Buddhism conferred a great benefit on India by encouraging freedom of thought and by setting at liberty its teeming population, before entangled in the meshes of ceremonial observances and Brahmanical priesteraft.

Yes, I grant this; nay, I grant even more than this. I admit that Buddhism conferred many other benefits on the millions inhabiting the most populous part of It introduced education and culture; it encouraged literature and art; it promoted physical, moral, and intellectual progress up to a certain point; it proclaimed peace, good will, and brotherhood among men; it deprecated war between nation and nation; it avowed sympathy with social liberty and freedom; it gave back much independence to women; it preached purity in thought, word, and deed (though only for the accumulation of merit); it taught self-denial without selftorture; it inculcated generosity, charity, tolerance, love, self-sacrifice, and benevolence, even towards the inferior animals; it advocated respect for life and compassion towards all creatures; it forbade avarice and the hearding of money; and from its declaration that a man's future depended on his present acts and condition, it did good service for a time in preventing stagnation, stimulating exertion, promoting good works of all kinds, and elevating the character of humanity.

Then again, when it spread to outlying countries it

assumed the character of a religion; it taught the existence of unseen worlds; it permitted the offering of prayers to Maitreya and other supposed personal saviours; it inculcated faith and trust in these celestial beings, which operated as good motives in the hearts of many, while the hope of being born in higher conditions of life, and the desire to acquire merit by reverential acts, led to the development of devotional services, which had much in common with those performed in Christian countries. Nay, it must even be admitted that many Buddhists in the present day are deeply imbued with religious feelings, and in no part of the world are the outward manifestations of religion-such as temples and sacred objects of all kinds-so conspicuous as in modern Buddhist countries.

But if, after making all these concessions, I am told that, on my own showing, Buddhism was a kind of introduction to Christianity, or that Christianity is a kind of development of Buddhism, I must ask you to bear with me a little longer, while I point out certain other contrasts, which ought to make it clear to every reasonable man, how vast, how profound, how impassable is the gulf separating the true religion from the false philosophy, and from the later religious systems developed out of it.

And first, observe that Buddhism has never claimed to be an exclusive system. It has never aimed at taking the place of other religions. On the contrary it tolerates all, and a Buddhist considers that he may be at the same time a Hindu, a Confucianist, a Taoist, a Shintoist, and even, strange to say, a Christian.

A Christian, on the other hand, holds as a cardinal doctrine of his religion, that there is only one Name under heaven given among men, whereby any human being can be saved. To be at the same time a believer in Christ and a believer in Buddha implies an utter contradiction in terms.

Then it need scarcely be repeated here that Christ is before all things a majestic example of a great historic personality. Any really historical, matterof-fact account of the life of Buddha, like that of the life of Christ by the four Evangelists, may be looked for in vain through all the Buddhist scriptures. The Buddha's biography is mixed up with such monstrous legends, absurd figments, and extravagant fables, that to attempt the sifting out of any really historical element worthy of being compared with the pregnant simplicity—the dignified brevity of the biography of Christ, would be an idle task.

Still we may note two or three obvious points of comparison and contrast.

And perhaps the most important is, that Christ constantly insisted on the fact that He was God-sent, whereas the Buddha always described himself as self sent. How indeed could the Buddha have said 'the great I AM hath sent me unto you" when he had no belief in the eternal existence of any Ego at all? Not even in the reality of his own individuality.

All that he affirmed of himself was that he came into the world to be a teacher of perfect wisdom, by

Exedus in. 14.

a force derived from his own acts. By that force alone he had passed through innumerable bodies of gods, demi-gods, demons, men, and animals, until he reached one out of numerous heavens, and thence by his own will descended upon earth and entered the side of his mother in the form of a white elephant (see pp. 23, 477). Let those who speak of his 'virgin-mother' bear this in mind.

Christ, on the other hand, made known to his disciples, that He was with His Father from everlasting, 'Before Abraham was, I am.' Then in the fulness of time, He was seat into the world by His Father, and was born of a pure virgin, through the power of the Holy Spirit, in the likeness and fashion of men.

Next let us note a vast contrast in the fact that Christ was sent from heaven to be born on earth in a poor and humble station, to be reared in a cottage, to be trained to toilsome labour as a working-man; whereas the Buddha came down to be born on earth in a rich and princely family; to be brought up amid luxurious surroundings, and finally to go forth as a mendicant-monk, depending upon others for his daily food and doing nothing for his own support.

Then, again, Christ as He grew up showed no signs of earthly majesty in his external form, whereas the Buddha is described as marked with certain mystic symbols of universal monarchy on his feet and on his hands, and taller and more stately in frame and figure than ordinary human beings (see pp. 476, 501).

Then, when each entered on his ministry as a teacher, Christ was despised and rejected by kings and princes, and followed by poor and ignorant fishermen, by common people, publicans, and sinners; Buddha was honoured by kings and princes, and followed by rich men and learned disciples.

Then Christ had all the treasures of knowledge hidden in Himself, and made known to His disciples that He was Himself the Way, and the Truth,—Himself their Wisdom, Righteousness, Sanctification, and Redemption. Buddha declared that all enlightenment and wisdom were to be attained by his disciples, not through him, but through themselves and their own intuitions; and that, too, only after long and painful discipline in countless successive bodily existences.

Then in regard to the miracles which both the Bible and the Tripitaka describe as attestations of the truth of the teaching of each, contrast the simple and dignified statement that 'the blind receive their sight, the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel preached unto them ',' with the following description of the Buddha's miracles in the Mahā-vagga (I. 20, 24)*: 'At the command of the Blessed One the five hundred pieces of fire-wood could not be split and were split, the fires could not be lit up and were lit up, could not be extinguished and were extinguished. Besides he created five hundred vessels with fire. Thus the number of these miracles amounts to three thousand five hundred.'

Then, although each made use of missionary agency,

St. Matthew xi. 5. Sacred Books of the East, xiii. 133.

the one sent forth his high-born learned monks as missionaries to the world at the commencement of his own career, giving them no divine commission; the other waited till the close of His own ministry, and then said to His low-born, unlearned disciples, 'As My Father bath sent Me, even so send I you' (St. John xx. 21).

Then, when we come to compare the death of each, the contrast reaches its climax; for Christ was put to death violently by wicked men, and died in agony an atoning death, suffering for the sins of the world at the age of thirty-three, leaving behind in Jerusalem about one hundred and twenty disciples after a short ministry of three years. Whereas the Buddha died peacefully among his friends, suffering from an attack of indigestion at the age of eighty, leaving behind many thousands of disciples after forty-five years of teaching and preaching.

And what happened after the death of each? Christ, the Holy One, saw no corruption, but rose again in His present glorified body, and is alive for evermore—nay, has life in Himself ever flowing in life-giving streams towards His people. The Buddha is dead and gone for ever; his body, according to the testimony of his own disciples, was burnt more than 400 years before the Advent of Christ, and its ashes were distributed everywhere as relics.

Even according to the Buddha's own declaration, he now lives only in the dectrine which he left behind him for the guidance of his followers.

And here again, in regard to the doctrine left behind by each, a vast distinction is to be noted. For the doctrine delivered by Christ to His disciples is to spread by degrees everywhere until it prevails eternally. Whereas the doctrine left by Buddha, though it advanced rapidly by leaps and bounds, is, according to his own admission, to fade away by degrees, till at the end of 5000 years it has disappeared altogether from the earth, and another Buddha must descend to restore it. (Compare Postscript at end of Preface, p. xiv.)

Then that other Buddha must be followed by countless succeeding Buddhas in succeeding ages, whereas there is only one Christ, who can have no successor, for He is alive for ever and for ever present with His people: 'Lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world

Then observe that, although the Buddha's dectrine was ultimately written down by his disciples in certain collections of books, in the same manner as the doctrine of Christ, a fundamental difference of character nay, a vast and impassable gulf of difference—separates the Sacred Books of each, the Bible of the Christian and the Bible of the Buddhist.

The characteristic of the Christian's Bible is that it claims to be a supernatural revelation, yet it attaches no mystical talismanic virtue to the mere sound of its words. On the other hand, the characteristic of the Buddhist Bible is that it utterly repudiates all claim to be a supernatural revelation; yet the very sound of its words is believed to possess a meritorious efficacy capable of elevating any one who hears it to heavenly abodes in future existences. In illustration I may advert to a legend current in Ceylon, that once

on a time 500 bats lived in a cave where two monks daily recited the Buddha's Law. These bats gained such merit by simply hearing the sound of the words, that, when they died, they were all re-born as men, and ultimately as gods.

Then as to the words themselves, contrast the severely simple and dignified style of the Bible narrative, its brevity, perspicuity, vigour, and sublimity, its trueness to nature and inimitable pathos, with the feeble utterances, the tedious diffuseness, and I might almost say 'the inane twaddle' and childish repetitions of the greater portion of the Tripitaka (see note 2, p. 541).

But again, I am sure to hear the admirers of Buddhism say: Is it not the case that the doctrine of
Buddha, like the doctrine of Christ, has self-sacrifice as
its key-note? Well, be it so. I admit that the Buddha
taught a kind of self-sacrifice. I admit that he related
of himself that, on a particular occasion in one of his
previous births, he plucked out his own eyes, and,
that on another, he cut off his own head as a sacrifice
for the good of others; and that again, on a third
occasion, he cut his own body to pieces to redeem a
dove from a hawk?. Yet note the vast distinction
between the self-sacrifice taught by the two systems.
Christianity demands the suppression of selfishness;
Buddhism demands the suppression of self, with the
one object of extinguishing all consciousness of self. In

^{&#}x27; It is necessary to point out that these acts of relf-sacrifice took place in former states of existence, for when a man becomes a Buddhahe has no need to gain murit by self-sacrifice.

³ See p. 130.

the one, the true self is elevated and intensified. In the other, the true self is annihilated by the practice of a false form of non-selfishness, which has for its real object, not the good of others, but the annihilation of the Ego, the utter extinction of the illusion of personal individuality.

Furthermore, observe the following contrasts in the doctrines which each bequeathed to his followers:—

According to Christianity: - Fight and overcome the world.

According to Buddhism: -Shun the world, and withdraw from it.

According to Christianity:—Expect a new earth when the present earth is destroyed; a world renewed and perfected; a purified world in which right-cousness is to dwell for ever.

According to Buddhism:—Expect a never-ending succession of evil worlds for ever coming into existence, developing, decaying, perishing, and reviving, and all equally full of everlasting misery, disappointment, illusion, change, and transmutation.

According to Christianity, bedily existence is subject to only one transformation.

According to Buddhism, bodily existence is continued in six conditions, through countless bodies of men, animals, demons, ghosts, and dwellers in various hells and heavens; and that, too, without any progressive development, but in a constant jumble of metamorphoses and transmutations (see p. 122).

Christianity teaches that a life in heaven can never be followed by a fall to a lower state. Buddhism teaches that a life in a higher heaven may be succeeded by a life in a lower heaven, or even by a life on earth or in one of the hells.

According to Christianity, the body of man may be the abode of the Holy Spirit of God.

According to Buddhism, the body whether of men or of higher beings can never be the abode of anything but evil.

According to Christianity:—Present your bodies as living socifices, holy, acceptable to God, and expect a change to glorified bodies hereafter.

According to Buddhism:—Look to final deliverance from all bodily life, present and to come, as the greatest of all blessings, highest of all boons, and loftiest of all aims.

According to Christianity, a man's body can never be changed into the body of a beast, or bird, or insect, or loathsome vermin.

According to Buddhism, a man, and even a god, may become an animal of any kind, and even the most louthsome vermin may again become a man or a god,

According to Christianity:—Stray not from God's ways; offend not against His holy laws.

According to Buddhism:—Stray not from the eightfold path of the perfect man, and offend not against yourself and the law of the perfect man.

According to Christianity: —Work the works of God while it is day.

According to Buddhism:—Beware of action, as causing re-birth, and aim at inaction, indifference, and apathy, as the highest of all states. Then note other contrasts.

According to the Christian Bible: Regulate and sanctify the heart, desires, and affections.

According to the Buddhist:—Suppress and destroy them utterly, if you wish for true sanctification.

Christianity teaches that in the highest form of life, love is intensified.

Buddhism teaches that in the highest state of existence, all love is extinguished.

According to Christianity:—Go and earn your own bread, support yourself and your family. Marriage, it says, is honourable and undefiled, and married life is a field on which holiness may grow and be developed. Nay, more—Christ Himself honoured a wedding with His presence, and took up little children in His arms and blessed them.

Buddhism, on the other hand, says:—Avoid married life; shun it as if it were a burning pit of live coals' (p. 88); or, having entered on it, abandon wife, children, and home, and go about as celibate monks, engaging in nothing but in meditation and recitation of the Buddha's Law—that is to say—if you aim at the highest degree of sanctification.

And then comes the important contrast that in the one system we have a teaching gratifying to the pride of man, and flattering to his intellect; while in the other we have a teaching humbling to his pride, and distasteful to his intellect. For Christianity tells us that we must become as little children, and that when we have done all that we can, we are still unprofitable servants. Whereas Buddhism teaches that every man is saved by his own works and by his own merits only.

Fitly, indeed, do the rags worn by the monks of true Buddhism symbolize the miserable patchwork of its own self-righteousness.

Not that Christianity ignores the necessity for good works; on the contrary, no other system insists on a lofty morality so strongly; but never as the meritorious instrument of salvation;—only as a thank-offering, only as the outcome and evidence of faith.

Lastly, we must advert again to the most momentous—the most essential of all the distinctions which separate Christianity from Buddhism. Christianity regards personal life as the most sacred of all possessions. Life, it seems to say, is no dream, no illusion. 'Life is real, life is earnest.' Life is the most precious of all God's gifts. Nay, it affirms of God Himself that He is the highest Example of intense Life—of intense personality, the great 'I AM that I AM,' and teaches us that we are to thirst for a continuance of personal life as a gift for Him; nay, more, that we are to thirst for the living God Himself and for conformity

A Buddhist writer in a Buddhist magazine, published in Ceylon, has lately taken me to task for asserting in a recent speech that Christianity denies the all-sufficiency of good works as an instrument of salvation. It is easy to quote passages, such as those in the epistle of St. James, in support of his one-sided view of this question, but I need scarcely say that the writer has much to learn as to the true character of our Bible, in which no text has full force without its context, and so part can be taken to establish a doctrine without a comparison with other parts, and without the balancing of apparent contradictions in both Old and New Testaments.

to His likeness; while Buddhism sets forth as the highest of all aims the utter extinction of the illusion of personal identity—the utter annihilation of the Ego -of all existence in any form whatever, and proclaims as the only true creed the ultimate resolution of everything into nothing, of every entity into pure nonentity.

What shall I do to inherit eternal life ?-says the Christian. What shall I do to inherit eternal extinction of life !- says the Buddhist.

It seems a mere absurdity to have to ask in concluding these Lectures :- Whom shall we choose as our Guide, our Hope, our Salvation, 'the Light of Asia,' or 'the Light of the World ?' the Buddha or the Christ ! It seems a mere mockery to put this final question to rational and thoughtful men in the nineteenth century: Which Book shall we clusp to our hearts in our last hour-the Book that tells us of the dead, the extinct, the death-giving Buddha, or the Book that reveals to us the living, the eternal, the life-giving Christ?

POSTSCRIPT.

Since the printing of my concluding Lecture, it has occurred to me that I ought to make a few remarks in regard to a very prevalent error—the error that Buddhism still numbers more adherents than any other religion of the world. For these remarks the reader is referred to the Postscript at the end of the Preface (p. xiv).

WORKS BY THE SAME AUTHOR.

- Brökmaniem and Hindbinm, or Religious Thought and Life in fulls, as besed on the Veln and other Secret Books of the Hindba. Third and cheaper Edition, with full index. John Murray, Albonaria Street. 1887. 100, 66.
- Indian Woulow, or Examples of the Religious, Philosophical, and Ethical Doctrines of the Hindians with a brief history of the chief departments of Samkrit Literature, and some account of the past and present condition of India, Maral and Intellectual.
- Modern India and the Indian: A Series of Impressions, Notes, and Essays. Fourth Edition, with index. Trübner & Co., Ludgate Hill. 1888.
- Hinduism. Published by the Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge
- Sanabrit-English Dictionary. Published at the University Press, Oxford. Henry Fronds, 7 Paternater Row. 1888.
- English-Sauskrit Distinuary. At the India Office.
- Practical Sanskeit Grammar, Pourth Edition. At the University Press, Oxford. Henry Fronde, 7 Patermeter Box. 1877.
- Sanskrit Manual with Exercises, W. H. Allen & Co.
- Sakuntalā. A Sanskrit Drama, in Seven Acts; the Text, with existed and explanatory notes and literal English translations. Second Edition. At the University Press, Oxford. Henry French, 7 Patermeter Bow. 1876. Sec. cloth, 118.
- Fistenmerovii. A Sanskrit Drama. The Text. Stephen Austin, Gorfford.
- I Free Translation in English Prose and Verse of the Sanskrit Orema Sakondala, with a portrait of the horder and her two friends. Fifth Edition. John Murray, Albemack Street. 1887. 7s. ful. First Edition printed on fine payor, illuminated and illustrated by Stephen Austin, Hortford.
- Story of Nala: A Sanskrit Poem, with full Vocabulary and an improved review of Door Milham's Translation. University Press, Oxford, and 7 Patermeser Row.
- Application of the Roman Dephalet to the Languages of India.
- Practical Hinductions Grammar, Longmans.
- Bagh n Bahar. The Hindustani Text in the Roman character.
 Longman.

MR. MURRAY'S GENERAL LIST OF WORKS.

ALBERT MEMORIAL. A Descriptive and Historical Account of the National Assessment at Kenningles. Historical by one cross Engravings. By Decree C. Sect. With 24 Places. Print 1.1 Lin.

Hammon. 16am. 1r.; Illin-trued, 2., 6d.

ABBOTT (Rev. L). Memoirs of a Church of England Historical in the Nich American Colores. Post Sec. 2s.

ABERCHOMBIE (Jours). Enquiries emecrating the Intellectual Powers and the investigation of Fresh, Fresh, Sec. 3, 45

ACLAND (Rev. C). The Manners and Customs of India. Post.

ACWORTH (W. M.) The Balways of England, With History,

ASOP'S FABLES. A New Version. By REY, Thomas Jaura, With 1th Woodents, by Targets, and Weeker. But her the site of

AGRICULTURAL (Roves) JOURNAL (Published but in young)

AINGER (A. U.). Latin Gradunar. [See Gras.]

ALICE (Patrons): GRAND DECHESS OF HEST. Letters to R.M. rate Queen. With a Monor for R.M. Princess Clerellan, Partnett. Grown Sec. Jr. 64, or Original Edition 1 to

AMBER-WITCH (Pre). A most interesting Tital for Witch-

AMERICA. | See Barry, Napatiane, Sympoth.

APOCRYPHA: With a Commentary Explanatory and Critical.
By Dr. Sabron, Fref. Fuller, Ambianem Fairer, 100 of constitute,
Caren Ravilson, Ur. Education, Ser. 5. H. Equito, B. 1. C. J. Full.
Edical by Hasen Week, D. D. Twelle, Maling Sty. Ser.

18. (1)

ARGYLL (Denn or). Unity of Nature Third Edulism Sys. 12s. ARISTOTLE. [See George.]

ARTHUR'S (Litrus) History of England. By Lary United Pr., Me Billion, continued to 1879. With Woodcasts. From No. 14 54.

Parlof the Second Empire. With Woodcare. Fig. 1900 of the

AUSTIN (Jone). GENERAL JURISTRUCTURE, or, The Philosophy of Poduce Law, Educal by Bernar Carrena, 1V 1, No. 2r.

Strugger's Engran, compiled from the stone work, by Resket Canyona. Posters 12s.

Analysis of By Gosnov Campuna. Post ivo. 6s. BABER (E. C.) Travels in W. China. Maps. Borat 8vo. 5s.

BAINES (Thomas). Greenhouse and Stove Plants, Plowering and Fundiented, Palms, Peres, and Lympathens. With full details of the Propagation and Californian. Sec. vs. 66

×

BARCLAY (BISHOP). Extracts from the Taimed, illustrating the Teaching of the Hible, With an introduction. Sec. 14s.

BARKILEY (H. C.). Five Years among the Bulgarians and Turks between the Decube and the Black Sec. Foot Sec. 18s. 54.

Bulgaria Before the War. Post 8vo. 10s. td.

- My Bayboad, Woodcuts, Post 8vo. 6s.

BARROW (Jonn). Life of Sir P. Drake. Post 8vo. 2s.

BATES (H. W.). Becords of a Naturalist on the Amchens during Eleven Yours' Adventure and Travel. Illustrations. Part Sec., Ta aid

BATTLE ABBRY ROLL. [See Carveland.]

HAT (Cart.) Reselan Tartary, Eastern Siberia, China, Japan, Ac. Hurratteen. Grown Sec. 12c.

BEACONSPIRIADS (Lond) Letters, and "Correspondence with bis rister," 1830-1832. A N. w Editors with additional letters and notes. Pertext. Crown 193. 24

BECKETT Size Engenn), "Should the Berised New Testament to Authorized?" Fost Sec. 6c.

BELL (See Cuas.). Passiliar Letters. Portrait. Post Svo. 12s.

(Donne C.). Notices of the Historic Persons buried in
the Chapet of the Towar of Lenden. Ill strathers. Communication.

BENJAMIN (S. G. W.). Persia and the Persians With 60 libustrations. Sec. 264

BENSON (Anoresessor). The Cathedral; its necessary place in the Life and Work of the Church. See See, Sc.

BERKKLEY (Hasserson). Wealth and Welfave: an Bramiration of Record Changes in the Production and Distribution of Weal b to the United Kingdom, and of the Edward four National Trade Policy on the Gameni Welfare of the Nation. I have too dr.

BERTRAM (Jan. G.). Harvest of the Sen: an Account of British Free Falses, Fulscriss and Fisher Fals. Bluetrations. Part Sec. in

BIBLE COMMENTARY. The Old Testament. Explanations and Chillet, With a Revision of the Testament. By Bibliotis and Cleberty of the ANGLICAN CHURCH. Butter by P. C. Core, M.A. Caron of Excite. C Vals. Median Sys. E, 45.

Vol. 11. | General Delters of Source of Source

THE New TESTAMEST, 4 Votes, Medium Syo, 44 14s.

Vol. I. Develocement, Sr. Mart. Vol. III. | Box Process. Process. Lang.

Vol. II. i Sr. Jean 200 Arostans. 200 Medium Sro. 50s.
Tus Arocayesa. 2 vols. Medium Sro. 50s.

THE STUDENT'S EDITION. Abridged and Edited by May J. M. Praise, M.A. Corwo See, 7s. 6d, such Volume. One Variables, 4 Vols. New Testament, 2 Vols.

BIGG-W1711ER (T. P.). Pioneering in South Brazil; Three Years of Forest and Frairie Life in the Province of Farana, Historiciaes, 2 vols. Grown Sec. 244

- BIRD (Incanalia). Hawalian Archipelago; or Six Months among the Patra Groves, Corn Reefs, and Volcanous of the Sandwick Islands. Illastinitons, Crown Sen, To. 64.
- A Lady's Life in the Rocky Mountains. Illustrations. Post Syn. 74, 64.
- The Golden Chernonese and the Way Thither. Illustrations, Fost Sec. 14s.
- Universities Trucks in Japan; Including Visits to the Crown See, Ta 64
- BISSET (San Janx). Sport and War in South Africa from 1834 to (86) Hisatrations, Crews Sec. 14s.
- BLACKIE (C.) Geographical Stymology; or, Dictionary of Place Street Third Edition, Crawn Sep. tz.
- BLUNT (Land Assu). The Bedecine of the Euphrates Valley With same special of the Arabs and their Bones. Blustrations, 2 Vide Cheen Sec. 24s.
- A Pilgrimage to Nejd, the Cradle of the Arab Race, and a Viert to the Arab Stole | Illustrations, 2 Vols, Post Sec. 34s.
- BLUNT (Bks. J. J.). Underigned Coincidences in the Writings of the tild and New Testuments, an Argument of their Verseity. Post fire, Sc. History of the Christian Churck in the First Three
- Connerion. Part ften. da. The Parish Priest; His Duties, Acquirements, and Hampetoner, Post See, Co.
- BOOK OF COMMON PRAYER Busineted with Coloured Barders limited Letters, and Woodcatz. Sec. 13s.
- BOHERTY (Gaussia). The Bible in Spain; or, the Journeys and Internationals of an Englishman in an attempt to election the regularies in the Perfords. Particle. Part Sec. 2r. 6s.
- The Zincall. An Account of the Gipules of Spala; Their Minners, Coations, Religion, and Language, Post 8vs.
 - Lavengro ; The Scholar The Gypsy-and the Priest, Post Stor. In St.
 - Romany Rye, A Sequel to Lavengro. Poet Svo. 2s. 6d. WILD Walmer its People, Language, and Scenery,
 - Postern Se fil. Remano Lave-Lil. With Illustrations of the English Gypsies: their Postry and Habitations. Post we Se.
- BOSWELL'S Life of Samuel Johnson, Lind, Including the Part to the Habridson, Edited by Mr. Capers, Second Affilian, Paperaton, Lvel, Medican-Sec., 12a,
- 19.1WEN (Laure Justice). Virgil in English Verse, Relogious and Justif, Books L.-VI. Map and Frontisphone. Grown fro. 122
- BRADLEY (Dean), Arthur Penrhyn Stanley; Biographical legies, thorners, 3, 64.
- BREWER (Bay, J. S.). The Reign of Henry VIII.; from his Accession to the Death of Welley, Reignsted from Original Documents, Edited by James Garanesm, With Portract. 2 vols. Sec. Mr.
 - The Endowments and Establishment of the Church of Business Third Edition, Revised and Edited by Livers T. Busines, M. A., Burrister ab.Law. For Sec. Sc.

BRIDGÉS (Mas. F. D.). A Lady's Travels in Japan, Thibet, Yes knot, Keshuin, Java, the Stratts of Malacca, Vancouver's Lifered Str. With Magazit Elizatronitors from Sherthesby the Author, Copen Sys. Be.

BRITISH ASSOCIATION REPORTS, 8vo.

. The Reports for the years 1831 to 1876 may be obtained at the Offices of the British Assetsation.

Ginngow, 1976, 25c Swanson, 1881, 148. Olangow, 1316, 25c Swanson, 1881, Pipmenth 1877, 24c York, 1881, 24s. Blistin, 1675, Für. Feuthampene, 1862, Sin. Stanffeld, 1679, 24s, Southport, 1885, 24s

Aberdenn, 1885, 11s. Directogium, 1885, 24s. Manghester, 1997, 24s.

BROADFOOT (Major W., R.E.) Record of the Services in Afghanistan and the Perjah of Major Groupe Broadfast, C. R., Governor-Generals April on the N. W. Trouble of India. Compiled from his papers and those of Lords Elleukamenth and Herdings. Mays. Sec. 156.

BROCK LEHURST (T. U.). Moxico To-day: A Country with a Breat Future. With a Glazze at the Productric Secretar and Austragorites of the Montenumen. Plates and Woodcores. Medium Sec. 21s.

BRUCE (Hon. W. N.). Life of Sir Charles Nupley. [See Navina] BHUGSCH (Provessor). A History of Egypt under the Pharache. Derived entirely from Monaments, with a Mametr on the Execus of the investing, Maps. 2 Vols. Sec. 11s.

BULGARTA. [See Barrary, Hour, Museum.]

BUNBURY (E. H.), A History of Ancient Geography, among the Greeks and Zamana, from the Earthoot Ages Sill the Fadi of the Roman Bupirs. Maps. 5 Vois. See, Sie.

BURBIUGE (P. W.). The Gardens of the Son: or A Naturalist's Journal in Borneo and the Sulu Archipelage. Himstrations, Cr. Svo. 14z. BURCKHARDT'S Cicerone; et Art Guide to Painting in Italy.

New Edition, revised by J. A. CLOWK. Post five. fig.

BURGES (Six James Stans), Benn.) Selections from his Letters and Papers, as Under Settedberg of State for Pareign Affairs. With Refere of the Life. Edited by James Horron. Sec. 15s.

Ruggess of the Life. Relief by Jesus Histon. See 154.

BURGON (J. W.), Drain or Christersens. The Revision Revised (I.) The New Creek Policy (J.) The New English Vernien; (J.) Westest end Harr's Tearnal Theory. Second Edition. Sec. 156.

Litera of Twelve Good Men. Martin J. Heath, (Josépheron Rocked Line), Clark, Edward Docking, Samuel Willersons, Societal Line), Clark, Blancel Greek, Heart Lorsbergille Marsel, Vm. Jan et a. Chan. Page Refe. Chas. Lengton Higgins. 2 vols. Taind Edition Consulting, 24a.

BURKE (Conver). [See Paranuser.]

BURN (Cot.). Dictionary of Naval and Military Technical Torms, English and French French and English. Cours Sec. 15.

BUTTMANN'S LEXILOGUS; a Critical Examination of the Meaning of surrectors Greek Words, chiefly in House and Hestod. By Rev. J. E. Franciage. Bys. 130.

BUXTON (CHARLES). Memoirs of Sir Thomas Fewell Buxton,
Sart. Postrait. Syn. Me. Styness Kulties, Fray Syn. St.
Notes of Thought. With a Biographical Notice by
Rev. J. Landmany Davies, M.A. Sanad Stillers. Post Sys. St. - (Synery C.). A Handbook to the Political Questions

of the Pop , with the Arguments on Etther file. Sevorit Edition.

- France and Politics, an Historical Study, 1783-1885. 2 Vols. 16t.

BYLES (Saa Jone). Foundations of Religion in the Mind and Beart of Man. Post Ben. fe.

BYRON'S (LORD) LIFE AND WORKS :-

Lava, Lutrens, and Jounnals. By Thomas Mosan, One Valuus, Percents. Bayel See, In. Sci.

Live and Poutseat Wouse. Popular Edition. Portraits.

2 Vals, Ragal Svs. 16e.

Posternan Wones Library Edition. Portrait. 6 Vols. 8vo. 45s. Postricas Wound. Cabinet Edition. Plates. 10 Vols. 12mo. 30s. POUTPICAL WOMEN. Pocket Ed. 2 Vols. 16mo. In a case. 21s.

Powercan Wound Popular Edilion. Plates. Royal Sec. 7s. 6d. Postricat Wound, Paurl Edition, Crown Sec. 2s. 6d. Cloth.

Se. Se. CHILDS HAROLD. With 80 Engravings. Crown 8vs. 12s. Curton Hanold, 16ms. 2s. 6d.

Course Hanger, Vignettes, 16mo. 1a. Course Hanger, Portrait, 16mo. 8d. Talks and Portes, 16mo. 2a.6d.

MISCRILLAMOUS, 2 Vols. 18mo. 54.

Dearas and Plays. 2 Vols. 15mo. 5s. Dos Juan and Suppo. 2 Vols. 15mo. 5s.

BRAUTIER, Poetry and Proce. Portrait. Fesp. 8vo. 3s &d.

CAILLARD (Miss E M). The Invisible Powers of Nature. Some Elementry Lesson in Physical Science for Degistrate. Post Sec. 6.

CAMPRELL (Lean), Autobiography, Journale and Correspondence. By Mrs. Berkessile. Periralt, 2 Vola Sec. So.

Lord Chancellors and Keepers of the Great Scaled Ingland. From the Carliers Times to the Beath of Lord Edder in 1888. In Vola. Cross Sec. Sec. arch.

Chief Justices of England. From the Norman Compared to the Death of Lord Edder.

(Tuos.) Resay on English Poetry. With Short

Lives of the British Proces. Part Syn. Re 64. CARRY (Life of), [See Groups Smith.]

CARLISLE (Breuny av). Walks in the Regions of Science and Paids - a Series of Eastyn. Crown Sec. 7s. 6.

CARNARYON (Loun). Portugal, Gallicia, and the Basque Provinces. Post &vo. 4s. 6d.

CARNOTA (Comps ps). The Life and Eventiful Career of F.M. the Duke of Sudanha; Soldier and Stateman. I Vols. Sec. 3ts.

CARTWRIGHT (W. C.). The Jesuits: their Constitution and Teaching, An Historical Shotah. Sen. St.

CAVALCASELLE'S WORKS, [See CRIWE.]

CESNOLA (Gas.). Cyprus; its Ancient Cities Tombs, and Tom-ples. With 600 liberrations. Medican Sec. Sts.

CHAMBERS (G. P.). A Practical and Convenational Pocket Distinary of the English, Fraunt, and German Languages. Designed for Fravallers and students generally. Small Sec. da.

CHILD-CHAPLIN (Dr.). Benedicise; or Song of the Three Children; being Blustrations of the Power, Britisteeres, and Doulge manufactual by the Creation in the Works. Past Sec. Sc.

CHISHOLM (Mrs.). Perils of the Polar Seas; True Stories of Arctic Discovery and Adventure. Historations, Post Sec. 5s.

CHURTON (Assurgacov). Poetical Remains. Post Sve. 7s. dd.

- CLASSIC PREACHERS OF THE ENGLESS CHURCH. Lectures delivered at St. January. 2 Vols. Post Svo. Ta. 6d. each. CLEVELAND (Ducases or). The Battle Abbey Rell. With arms account of the borness Liu ages. 1 Vols. Str. 40s. 46s. CLIVE'S (Lour) Life. By Ray, G. R. Gance. Post Syc. Bs. 6d. CLODE (C. M.). Military Forces of the Crown | their Administrathen and Government. 2 Vots. Sec. 21s. coch. Administration of Justice under Military and Martial Law, anapplicable to the Array, Savy, and Augillery Firese, Sec. 12s. COLEBROOKE (See Enward, Barr.). Life of the Hon. Mountshier diplomatous. With Portratt and Place. I Vals. Sec. 160. COLERIDGE (SAMUEL TAYLOR), and the English Romantic School. By those Buayes. An English Edition by Lapy Kastlank. With - Table Talk. Portrait. 12me, 3s. &d. COLES (Jours). Summer Travelling in Schand. With a Chapter on Asirja. By E. D. Mosoase. Map and Disstrations, 18s. COLLINS (J. CHURYON), Beamsonware: an Historical Study. With an Hour to Veliaire in England. Crown Sec. 7s. Sc. COLONIAL LIBRARY. [See Home and Colonial Library.] COOK (Canon F. C.). The Revised Version of the Three First. Geopeis, smallered in its issuings upon the Record of Our Lord's Words and Incidents in the Life. See. Se. - The Origins of Language and Religion. Considered in Five Bassys. Swn. Mrs. COOKE (E. W.). Leaves from my Sketch-Book. With Descrip-tive Part. 50 Place: 2 Vols. Small by St., 54, 54, 44 in. (W. B.). Collections towards the History and Anti-quines of the Councy of Therefore, Vol. III. In continuation of Duncant's History. Identications, 400, 420-422 ed. COOKERY (Morean Domestio). Adapted for Private Families, By a Lady. Woodcane. Feep Sec. 5s. CORNEY GRAIN. Py Himself. Post Sys. 1s. COURTHOPE (W. 1). The Liberal Movement in English CRABBE (Ray, G.), Life & Works, Illustrations, Royal Sec. 7s. CRAIK (HEFET). Life of Jonathan Swift. Portrait. Sec. 18s. CRIPPS (Williams). Old English Place: Ecclosiustical, Decorative, and Demostic, its Makers and Marks. New Edition. With Illustra-tions and 200 feetchile Path Marks. Medium few. 21s "a" Tables of the Bath Letters and Marks soil separately. 5s. Pronch Plate: Its Makers and Marks. With facsimiles. BYO. FR. 67.
- CROKER (Br. Hes. J. W.). Currespendence, &c., relating to the chief Publical and Social Events of the first half of the present Century. Edited by Lettes J. Justices, M.P. With Potential 3 Vols. Sec. 46.

 Progressive Geography for Children. 18mo. 1s. 6d.
 Boswell's Life of Johnson. [See Boswell.]
 Historical Essay on the Guilletine. Foup. 870. 1s.

CHOWE AND CAVALCASELIE. Lives of the Early Flomish Falmises. Woodrots. Fost Srs. 7s. 6d.; or Large Paper Svs. 15s. CROWES Life and Times of Tellion, with some Account of his Family, drinky from raw and unpublished rescale. With Pertrait and illustrations. 9 Vols. Sec. 21s.

- Raphael ; His Life and Works, with Particular Referenne to recently discovered Brownia and an exhaustive Study of Sature Drueings and Piccores. I Visia, tipe. Ille.

CUMMING (R. Goston). Five Years of a Hunder's Life in the Fur Peterson of South Africa. Womberett. Fort two, fin.

CURRIE (C. L.). An Argement for the Divinity of Joses Christ. Translated from the French of the Arast Est. Bornaster, Post Sec. Sa. CURTIUS' (Progresson) Student's Grank Grammar, for the Upper

Former. Edited by Dec. Wat. Sprint. Past Sun. do.

Elucodations of the above Grammer, Translated by Erexes Amer. Part 8vo. fa.rd.

Smaller Greek Grammar for the Middle and Lower Forms. Abridged from the larger work. Erms. 30, 64.

Accidence of the Greek Languages. Extracted from the eleven work. hims. In G. ;

Principles of Greck Etymology. Translated by A. S. Weteres and S. R. Essenson. Sew Edition. 2 Year. Sec. The Greek Verly its Structure and Development.

Premiated by A. S. Wylers, and E. H. Eschaul eye. 124 CURZON (How Rosser). Visits to the Monasteries of the Levent. Illustrarious. Prototys. Ta. 64

CUST (Gunkari). Warriors of the 17th Century-Civil Warn of France and England. Fivels for Community of Floris and Armies. 5 Yels, 18s.

Annals of the Wars-18th & 19th Century. With Mays. 9 Vide, Post tive. As each.

DARWIN'S (Charten) Life and Latters, with an auto lographic. Coupler, Served by The Way, Private Beautie, F.R.S., With Per-trade and Woodenite, 1 Wee, Pro. de.

WORKS - New and Changer Editions. JOHNSON OF A NATURALING DURING A VOTAGE SOUND THE WHEED, Crown Bro.

ORIGIN OF SPECIES BY MEAST OF NATURAL SELECTION; OF, the

Preservation of Paramed Russ in the Sinage of the Ade. Library Edition, 2 to 1. Cross the Preservation of Relation to Sex. Descript of Max, was Senattion to Relation to Sex. Western Figure Edition, Cross Sec. 1, 101.

VARIATION OF ANIMALS AND PLANTS UNION DOMESTICATION. Westerin, 2 Vote Crown Sen, 15r.

Expressions of the Emotions in Man and Astmain. With Elizabetien, Crorn ben Lis proprositions,

VARSORS CONTRIVANCES BY WHICH ORCHIOS ARE PERTILIPED ET LAURENTE, WOLGESTA COMMISSO, VA. D.C. MOVEMENTS AND HARTE OF CRIMINER PRANTE, Wonderste.

Crown Sec. 64. Inscorevences Planes. Wooden's. Crown Sec. Da.

REPROTES OF CROSS AND SELF-PERTILIZATION IN THE VALISTABLE

RISSON CREEKEN DE PLOWESS ON PLANTS OF THE FAME Brumus, Crown Spo. To Set.

DARWIN-continued.

POWER OF MOTERREY IN PLANTS. Woodcats. Cr. 8vo.

THE PROMATION OF VEGSTABLE MODER THROUGH THE ACTION OF

Women With Blastrations, Post fore, de. Lerx or Kalentu Danwin. With a Study of his Works by Engage Kalent Portralt. New Frields. Commisses, 7s. 6d.

PAUTS AND ADDRESSE FOR DANVIS. By Faire MCLARS. Translaved by W. S. Datt. av. Woodcots. Past Sec. de.

DAVY (Str. Humpury). Consolations in Travel; et, Last Days of a Philosopher, Woodsute. Feeg. 8vo. 3s. fd.

Salmenia; or, Days of Fly Flabling. Woodcuts.

DE COSSON (Majon E. A.). The Cradle of the Blue Nile; a Jun'any though Algorithm and Scriden. May and Historista. 5 Volt. Post Sys. Dis.

- Days and Nights of Service with Sir Gerald Graham's Parts Firm at Sinkien. Plan and Illimitrations. Crown Sec. 14s.

DENNIS Guonan). The Cities and Cemeteries of Etruria.

20 Form and 200 Hastrations, 2 Valu. Medium 200, 21s.

[Rosent], Industrial Ireland. Suppositions for a Practical Policy of Stream for the Ireland. Crown 200, 4a.

DERBY (Fant or). Hist of Homer rendered into English Diest Veres. With Portrait. 5 Vols. Post Sec. 10s. DERRY (Busines or). Witness of the Poulms to Christ and Chris-

thanky. The Bampton Lectures for 1876, 5vo. 16a.

DICEY (Prog. A. V.). England's Case against Home Rule.
There Edular. Common 2s, 6s.
Why England Maintains the Union. A popular rendering

DOG-BREAKING, [See Hurrastrans.]

DRAKE'S (Sea Francis) Life, Voyages, and Exploits, by Sea and Land By Jone Bannew, Part Sen. Dr.

DRINK WATER (John). History of the Siege of Bibenhar, 1779-1780 With a Depertution of that Garcison. Past Sec. 26.

DU CHARLE (Part B), last of the Millight Sun; Illescrartical. 2 Valu. Sea, 36c.

- The Viking Age. The Early History, Manners. and Couloms of the Augest re of the English speaking Nations. Hitms freited from entingation found in mounts, cultur, and hoge, so well as: from the encion frequenced Edday. Work 1, 100 Linearations. 2 Vols.

DUFFERIN (Load), Letters from High Latitudes; a Yacht Voyage to Iceland, dan Mayen, and Splittbergen. Woodsate. Post Sec. 74, 64 Speeches and Addresses, Political and Literary,

delivered in the Henry of Lords, in Canada, and elicwhere. Bra. 12s. DUSCAN (Cot.) History of the Royal Artillery, Com-piled two the Delgital Records. Postrains 2 Valu. Sec. 18s.

English in Spain; or, The Story of the War of Suc-cession, 1824-1860. With Historiction. Sec. 18s.

DURER (Arment); his Life and Work. By Ds. Transers.
Translated from the German. Edited by F. A. Laves, M.A. With
Persons and Disstrators. 2 Voic. Meeting Sec. 42s.

EASTLAKE (Sas C.). Contributions to the Literature of the Fine Arts. With Memois by Last Eastlats. 2 Vols. Sec. 24s.

EDWARDS (W. H.). Voyage up the River Amazon, including a Visited Para. Foot Sec. In.

- BLDON'S (Lone) Public and Private Life, with Selections from his Diaries, &c. By Housers Twees. Portrait. 9 Vols. Portfivo. 21s. M.OIN (Loup). Letters and Journals. Billed by Temporan Wathers. With Profess by Dean Study. Sec. 144. ELLESMERS (Loan). Two Sieges of Visnna by the Turks, Translated from the German. Post Sec. 2s. BLIdS (W.). Madagasear Revisited. The Persequitons and Heroic Sufferings of the Native Christians. Historycons, Sec. 18s. Memoir. By Has Son. 10s, 6d. Portrait. Sec. (Rosesson). Poems and Fragments of Catalina, 16mo. 5s. ELPHINSTONE (How M.). History of India-the Hindon and Mahammadan Periods, Edited by Provenesses Courses, Map. Sec. 18s. The Rise of the British Power in the East. A. Continuation of his History of India in the History and Malminetism Periods. Billed by Sin E. Congressions, Bart. Wish Maps. Syn. No. Life of, [See Collinguous.]
 (H. W.). Putterns and Instructions for Ornamental Terming. With 10 Disstrations. Small sto. 10s. ELTON (Carr.) and H. B. COPPERILL. Adventures and Discoveries among the Labor and Mountains of Eastern and Control Africa. With Mup and Disnivations, Sec. 246. ENGLAND. [See ARTHUR - RAKUES - CHOKEN - HUNS - MARKEAN Sarre and Stanmort ESSAYS ON CATHEDRALS. Edited, with an Introduction. fly Dwar Howard, nes. 130, ETON LATIN GRAMMAR. For use in the Upper Forms.

 By Francis Har Rauniss, M.A., and William Reich Ison,
 M.A., Andelson Monters at Eron, Crown Sto., Sc.

 ELEMENTARY LATIN GRAMMAR. For use in the Lawer Ferms. Compiled by A. C. Assura, M.A., and H. O., WINTER, M.A., Crown Sec. Ba, Cd.
 - Eleven's y and freparatory Grammars. By the same Editors, Commiss. 2: 41. FOURTH FORM OVID. Selections from Ovid and Titeline. With Notes by H. G. Wenter. Post Sec. 2s Ed. HORACE. The Oiles, Epedes and Carmen Seculare. With Notes. By F. W. Constan, M.A. Mapa, Vr. so bro, Ga.

 EXERCISES IN ALGEBRA, by E. P. Roses, M.A., and Astron. Concerner, M.A. Crown Sec. 44. ASTRUE OCKSOUT, M.A. CROWNSIS. 14 — EXERCISES IN ARITHMETIC. By Rev. T. Dalson,

- THE PREPARATORY ETON GRAMMAR. Abridged from the shees Work. By the same Effect. Crown Sec. 2. - FIRST LATIN EXERCISE BOOK, adopted to the

- H.A. Crawn Sec. 1s, FRLTOE (Sav. J. Larr). Memorials of John Plint South, twice
- President of the Royal College of Surgroup. Fortish. Cown Sec. 7s. 6d. FERGUSSON (James). History of Architecture in all Countries. from the Earline Times. With 1,000 Huntratives. 4 Vols. Medium Syc., Vols. I. & H. Ancient and Medianval. 63s.

III. Indian & Eastern. 42s. IV. Modern.

FITZGERALD (Bishop). Lectures on Ecclesiastical History, toolisting the origin and progress of the English Reformation, from Wislife to the Great Rabellion, With a Memotr. E Vols. Sec. Tis. FITZPATRICK (WILLIAM J.). The Correspondence of Daniel O'Conyadt, the Laborator New first published, with Noise. With Portrait 2 Vide: 870. 88s.

FLEMING (Pacygooga). Student's Manual of Moral Philosophy. With Qualitions and References. Post Swe. To. &c.

FLOWER GARDEN. By REV. THOS. JAMES. Foup. Syo. 1s.

FORD (Remans). Gatherings from Spain. Post 8vo. Ss. 6d. FORSYTH (WILLIAM). Hortensius; un Historical Essay on the Office and limites of an Advotate, Disstrations. Sec. 70 65.

FRANCE (History of). | See Antive - Marking - Smith -Benners - Trongentente,

FRENCH IN ALGIERS; The Soldier of the Foreign Legion— and the Principles of Abd-el-Kaille. Post Sec. 2s.

PRERE (See Banyas). Indian Missions. Small Sec. 2s. 6d.

Missionary Labour in Eastern Africa. Crown Svo. Sc. Bengal Famine. How it will be Met and How to Prevent Putters Families in India. With Maps. Crown Sec. Sc.

(Many). Old Decom Days, or Hindoo Patry Legends correct in Southern Latin, with Entradication by his Baures Faunt. With Illinstrations. Post fee.

GALTON (F.), Art of Travel; or, Hintz on the Shifts and Coninventes available in Wild Countries. Wordoots. Post Swo, 7s. 6d.

GAMBIER PARRY (T.). The Ministry of Fine Art to the Hoppinson of Life. Revised Buildon, with on Indox. Sec. 14s.

[See Веквеку — Свокия — Влонавовов — Вмун -STEPRINGS.

GEOGRAPHICAL SOCIETY'S JOURNAL [1846 to 1881.)

SUPPLEMENTARY PAREET.

Yol I, Part Travelland Repairables by Western China. By
E. Contraven Rapes. Maps: Royal Sec. Sc.
Fact R.—1. Notes on the Repair Geography of Central Asia;

from Roselan Seagree. By E. Duinan Monnay. 2. Pay-grows of the course in the Course of New Guines. By C. R. Mananca. With Histographical Appendix, by E. C. Rys. Manager With | Main Forelliss. fer.

Fail II. I. Report to Fort of the Ghild Country, &c. By Livin J. S. Report on Fort of the Ghild Country &c. By L. R. Passer. Blood San. 5- fer.
Both in .- Orographical Education. By J. S. Kenne. Repul

erg.

Val. If ., Part t .. 1. Exploration in South month South weathern Dina. By Antonion S. Controller. 2. Bibliography and Caragraphy of Hispanich. By H. Lern Rose. 3. Explorations in Zampler Desiration by Eagl. Chas. Stream form, I.S. Acquire Desiration by Eagl. Chas. Stream form, I.S. Acquire, from the Expedition of India. A Bibliography of Algoric, from the Expedition of India. V. In that is 1877. By Fig. R. Leguert Playram.

Boyel Ave. 44:

GEORGE (Ersusy). The Mosel; Twenty Etchings. Imperial 400, 42s, Loire and South of France; Twenty Erchings, Folio, 424.

GERMANY (HISTORY OF). [See MARKHAM.]

GIBBON'S History of the Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire. Edited with rates by Micross, Grozov, and Dr. Ww. Surry. Maps. 5 Vols. Swc. 60s. Student's Edition. 7s. 6d. [See Student's.]

GIFFARD (Edward). Deeds of Naval Daring ; or, Ancedotes of the Scittat Navy. Foap Svo. to 64.

OILBERT (Jostan). Landscape in Art : before the days of Chands and Salvagor. With 300 illustrations. Mellion 840, 20s. GILL (Cart.). The River of Golden Sand. A Journey through Chies to Burnah, Edited by E. C. Bassa. With Munora by Cal. Yeta, C.R. Furitact, May and Blastrations. Post Sci. 78, 64. (Mag.). Six Months in Ascension. An Unscientific Ac-GLADSTONE (W. E.). Rome and the Newsat Fashions in Beligher. Sec. 74, 54. Glesnings of Past Years, 1643-73. 7 Voley Small Sec. 2s. 65 each. I The Tirrent, the Prime Covert, the Cablest and Constitution. H. Personal and Liberary. 112. Historical and Specu-lative. IV. Persona. V. and VI Escicalestical. VII. Miscellaneous. GLEIG (G. R.). Campaigns of the British Army at Washington sed New Orleans. Post Sto. Sr. Story of the Battle of Waterloo, Post Sto. Sr. 6d. Narrative of Sale's Brigade in A fighanistan. Post Svo. 2s. Life of Lord Clive. Post Svo. 3s. 6d. Bir Thomas Munrs. Post Svo. 3s. 6d. GLYNNE (San Symposium and Maries on the Character of Kent. With Profess by W. H. Gladelane, M. F. Binarraitose and The GOLDSMITH'S (Chaves) Works. Edited with Notes by Paran GOMM (P.M. San Wat). His Letters and Journals. 1799 to 1848. Edited by F. G. Carrageman, Wat Partial. 478. 128. GORDON (San Alma). Sketches of Gremon Life, and Scenes. from the Warpf Liberation Post See Br. 64. (Lane Dury), The Amber Witch. Past Syn. 2c. see also Ross. The French in Algiers. Post Svo. 2r. GOULBURN (E. M.), D.D., Dean of Norwes, Three Connects of the Device Moster for the cardinal of the Spellout Life; The Com-memorant; The Victors; The Lie Sick, Victor G. Sick, 10. GRAMMARS. [See Constitue - Even - Hall - Hittes - Kind Ewalds - Laurent - Mayrana - Matrice - Sortin | GRANVILLE (Characo). Sir Hoctor's Watch. Se. Sci. A Broken Stirrup-Leather. Za. Scl. GREECE (Hastory or). [See GROTE-Serte-Structure.] GREY (East). Ireland: the Cause of its Present Condition and the Heastres proposed for the largers ment. Crown bye. St. 15.
GROTE'S (Gacage) WORKS:— HENTORY OF GREECE, From the Earliest Times to the Death of Alexander the Great, More Distinct, Percent, Map, and Plage, 30 Vote, Postdrop, Se such (Vice Politices long to Karl Separately,) Playe, and other Companions of Socrates. 2 Vols. Sec. 46s.; or, a New Estation, Estited for Alexandra Bars. 4 Vols. Crown Sec. 5c. each. (The Polasses may be and Separating.) American. Sec. 12s. Mirror Worms. Portrait. Sec. 14s.

Printers Laws. Portrait. Syn. 12s.
GROTE (Mas.). A Shotch. By Last Eastlant, Crown Syn. 4s.
GUILLEMARD (F. H.), M.D. The Voyage of the Marchest to
New Guites. With Nations of Foreign and the brinds of the Malay
Arcticology. See Edition. With Bags and 16t Historation. One
Tables. Median Syn.

HALL'S (T. D.) School Manual of English Grammar. With Iffertrations and Practical Respection. 15mo. B. &c.

Primary English Grammar for Elementary Schools. With names or discretizes, and graduated Parring Lessons. 16mo. In.

- Manual of Enginet Composition. With Coptons Illustrathore and Practical Engelson, 12mg. Se. St.

- Child's First Latin Book, comprising a full Practice of Notice, Promises, and Adjectives, with the Verbs. 18mm. In.

HALLAM'S (HENRY) WORKS :-

The Costricurional History of Esquaso, from the Accesston of itempy the Seventh to the Death of George the Second. Addition, I Valle Svo. 31s. Column Schnies, 5 Vols. Part Svo. 12s. Starfest's Nobiles, Part Svo. 7s. 5d.

History of Ermore houses van Minnes Auss. Library Editor, 5 Vols. Inc. Was, Cohnet Editor, 5 Vols. Post Sec. 12s., Waster's Edition, Part Sec. 7s. 64:

Levenany Murrory of Europe Dumme Ten 15th, 16th, AND itre Currimen, felegep Edition, 3 Vals. 6vo. 88s. Calcust Edition, 8 Vals. Post tvo. 14t.

- (Aurusa) Literary Romains; in Verse and Proce. Portrait. Forp. Sys. Is, 6d.

HAMILTON (Aspage). Bholasberg : Memorials of Frederick the Great and Pointe Henry of Promis. 2 Vols. Crown tvo. Min.

HART'S ARMY LIST. (Published Quarterly and Annually.)

HAY (Sm J. H. Danumone). Western Barbary, its Wild Tribes and Savage Asimals. Post 8vo. 2s.

HAYWARD (A.). Sketches of Eminent Statesmen and Writers, I Vols. Sec. 281.

The Art of Dining, or Gastronomy and Gastronomers. Post five. It.

A Selection from his Correspondence. Edited with ne Introductory asserting of Mr. Playmond's Berly Life. Dy W. E. Clabillett. Lynde Craymone. 15:

HEAD'S (Sig Passers) WORKS :-

THE ROTAL ENGINEES. Hinterstions, 8vo. 12s. Love or Six Janus Bergoren. Post Svo. 1c. BAPID JOURNAUS ACROSS THE PARPAR. POST SVO. 24. Bergers voor two Barrece, Blustrations, Post Svo. 7s. 6d. STOKERS AND PORTIES; or, the Land N. W. H. Post Svo. 2s.

HEBEES (Brance) Journals in India. 2 Volu. Post 8vo. 7s.

- Poetical Works, Portrait, Peap, 840, 3s. 6d.

BERODOTUS, A New English Version. Edited, with Notes and Beatys by Caking Rawlinson, Still Bavillonic and Sta. J. G. Wilkinson, Maps and Woodcuts. 4 Vols. 8vo. 45a.

HERRIES (Br. Hos. Jans). Memoir of his Public Life. by his ion, tidward therries, C.R. 2 Vols., 2vo. 34a.

HERSCHEL'S (Casoline) Memoir and Correspondence. Man Jone Hanntoni, With Partralt. Crown Sec. 7s. 6d.

FOREIGN HAND-BOOKS.

HAND-BOOK-TRAVEL-TALK. English, French, German, and lisitan, New and Revised Edition, 18tus, Sa. Ac. DICTIONABY English, Prench, and German.
Connecting all the words and left-matter phrases thesity in he required by
a transition. Bound in hather, I time. So. HOLLAND AND BELGIUM. Map and Plane, &c. NORTH GERMANY and THE RHINE -The Black Parest, the Hartz, Thiringorwald, Saxon Switzerland, Sligen, the Good Mountains, Pacinic, teleposit, Elimin, and Latingen. Map and Place, Prol Sec. 172. SOUTH GERMANY, - Wurtemberg, Bararia, agairie, Styria, Salaburg, the Aigs, Tyrid, Hungsry, and the Decube, from Clea to the Black Sea. Maps and Plate: Post dec. 10 c. SWITZERLAND, Alps of Savoy, and Piedmont. PRANCE, Part. I. Normandy, Brittany, the Prench Alps, the Loire, Sense, Garrener, and Pyromens. Major and Plans. FRANCE, Part. H. Central Prance, Acvergne, the Cavernes, Burgmar, the Bases dat Sacro, Prescien, Nimes, Arico, Marseiller, the Presch Alps, Lisase, Latralise, Champegne, &c. Maps and Phant. Pest Sec. 7s. dd. - MEDITERRANEAN - its Principal Clirit, Scaperis, Harteners, and Bertler Levels. Die Travellore and Yachtenen, with nearly 50 Slaps and Plane. Pad Soc. Ob.

ALGERIA AND TUNIS. Algiers, Constanting, Orac, the Atha Range. Waps and Plane. Post tre. 10s. - PARIS, and Ravirous. Maps and Plans. SPAIN, Madrid, The Castiles, The Basque Provinces, Laco, The Asturial, Galitia, Satromadura, Andetunia, Remia, Granata, Musela, Valentia, Catalonia, Aragos, Navarre, The Bulestic Islands, &s. &s. Maps and Plans. Post Sec. 20. PORTUGAL, Lesson, Oports, Cintre, Mafra, Medeira, the Agerse, and the Covery blands; and Map and Plan. Post 6 cc. 12s. NORTH ITALY, Turin, Milan, Cremona, the Italian Lakhe, Bergano, Smarta, Verona, Manina, Visites, Palm, Feerara, Bologna, Barence, Ricalet, Piacenza, Gern, the Riviera, Vanto, Parme, Modera, and Rettagna, Magnard Plans, Post Stro. 10s. CENTRAL STALY, Florence, Luces, Tuscany, The Marriage, Umbrie, &c. Maps and Place. Post 8vo. 202. ROME and tre Envisore. 50 Maps and Plane. 10s. SOUTH ITALY, Naples, Pempeii, Herculaneum, and Vestring, Maps and Plane, Post 6vo. 16r. NORWAY, Christiania, Bergen, Troudbjem. The Fjelds and Fjerds. Naps and Fians. Foot Sec. Ds. BWEDEN, Stockholm, Upsala, Gothenburg, the Shores of the Ralle, &c. Maps and Plan. Part Sto. 6s.

DENMARK, Sleawig, Holstein, Copenhagen, Justians, Icetant. Maps and Plans. Part Sto. 6s.

- RUSSIA, Sp. Parausurus, Mostow, Polamp, and

Frotaro, Mans and Place, Post Svo. 16s.

- HAND BOOK—GREECE, the Ionian Islands, Athens, the Peloponration the Lifersh of the Marin Son, Athenia, Threedy, Missionic, 42, 50 Test Durin, Major Physics, and Views, Post Sco. 24s.
 - THEREY IN ASIA—CONSTANTING IN, the Bosphoria, Danimettes, theater, Plain of Proc. Gents, Crystes, Smyres, Ephraics, the Seven Charoches, Gents of the Back See, Armeric Explication Valley, Broate to Italia, Sc. West and Plain, Proc. 800, 184.
 - EGYPT. The Course of the Nile through Egypt and Niles Alexandria Chim. Thebes, Song Garnt, the Pyramida. Signd, the Pyram, Sc. Major and Plane. Port Sci. 10s.
 - HOLY LAND -STRIL PALESTINE Peninsula of Stril Liter, Syrim Bearts, Pers, Democracy and Palmyra. Hape and Plant. Post Stri. 25:
 - "." Map of Paleston, Inweste, 379.
 - BOMHAY Peonal, Serjapoor, Kolapoor, Goa, dukulose, treker, Sersit, Bersia, Alex du'sel, Senasada, Kastashas, de. Map and Plant. Post Sec. the
 - MADRAS Trickinopoli, Madam, Threevelly, Patinolis, Bargai et Myseer The Silping Wassel, Oaks arount, Callent, Bytacalus, Amain, Elim Corts, Ar. Magazat Phase. Post Sec. 186.
 - BENGAL Calcutin, Orison, British Burmak, Randeus, Houlards, Marchaley, Darling, Davie, Peter, Boueres, N.W. Environe, Altaloubed, Computer, Londone, April, Gensley, Sales Fal, David, &c. Wage and Plane, Peterson, 2010.
 - THE PANJAB Amendi, Indice, Ajmir, Jaypur, Bohtik, Salarcupir, Ambula, Levium, Labon, Kith, Sheka, Salkat, Probawar, East 19164, Airdel, Russick, State, Son, Majo, 16

ENGLISH HAND BOOKS.

- HAND-BOOK-ENGLAND AND WALES As Alphabetical Book their transfer of the Value of the Land Transfer Transfer Post size.
 - LONDON, Maps and Plane, 16mm, 24, 64.
 - ENVIRONS OF LONDON within A silvent of 20 miles I Vols. Grown Sec. 21s.
 - ST. PAUL'S CATHEDRAL, 20 Wordout, 10s, 6d,
 - EASTERN COUNTIES, Cheliusford, Harwich, Colduster, Malton, Combridge, C.y. Newmarket, Bury St. Educade, tymeric, Woodbridge, Fellighten, Lorenteit, Norwich, Yarnesuth, Lymint, Act. May and Plant. Post Syn.
 - CATHEDRALS of Oxford, Peterborough, Norwich, Ely, and Litesto. With to illustrations. Grown Sec. 21s.
 - KENT, Canterbury, Daver, Ramagate, Sheemess, Raphener, Castlery, Workshit: Napaned Plant. Post Ser. 7s 6d,
 - SUSSEX, Brighton, Chlebester, Worthing, He Rings, Lewes, Arnold, &c. Magnand Plans, Partiers, 42
 - SURREY AND HANTS, Kingston, Croydon, Reicapa, Ostholosi, Dicking, Windhester, Scilliserpine, New Formal, Permanents, January Winds, Sci. Magazana Fines, Vice Son, Un.

- HAND-BOOK BERKS, BUCKS, AND OXON, Windsor, Etcn., Beating, Asirstory, University, Wysonie, Henley, Oxford, Bandador, the Thomas, &c. Maps and Floria. Part Sec., 66.
 - WILTS, DORSET, AND SOMERSET, Salisbury.
 Chippendam, Westmanth. Simphorna, Wella, Bath, Stind, Tamater.
 Ac. Map. Post Sec. 12s.
 - DEVON, Easter, Micrombe, Linton, Sidmonth, Bastel, Talparaidi, Climack, Germant, Torquey, Maps and Phys. Forthus, 7s, 6d.
 - CORNWALL, Launceston, Ponesnee, Falmouth, Bathland, Lauf's End, &c. Maps. Post Sec. 4a.
 - CATHEDICALS of Winellester, Salisbury, Exuber, Wells, Oblebrater, Radiotic, Comertiery, and St. Athens. With You Blindfrations of Vols. Comes for 100 St. Athens separately, O.
 - GLOUCESTER, HEREPORD, AND WOLLCESTER, Commenter, Cambridge, Spence, Townselfery, Louretterly, Bank, Marvors, Siddemitister, During, Greeners, etc. Major Post Nov. In
 - CATHEDRIAS of Briefel, Closecour, Hereford, Werrester, and Labelet. West to lite-cracking. Comm. Sec. 24s.
 - NORTH WALES, Binger, Carcarron, Bennmants, Baredon, Lincolnia, Belg Sr. C. (1987). Re. Mapl. Post No. 78
 - Valent Next, Pentris, "Frankler, Letter, Samuel, W. W. W. S. &. May Portson 3s.
 - CATHEDRALS OF BANGOR, SP. ASAPA,
 - KORTHAMPTONSHIME AND BUTLAND.

 Westkempton, Verdenskille, Translet, Chemiter, Marker Res.

 bornagh, Keitering, Wolfingberinger, Fleeigher, Shankeri, Uppmarham, Oakham, Maya. Pest tra., 7a 80.
 - DERBY, NOTTS, LEICESTER, GRAFFORD,
 Martick, Bale and I, Chefonard, Fire Ponk Farties, Hardwin, Lees Cale,
 Ashbern, Stationall, Hausteld, Helicot, Britise, Sedenit, Molros Morebray, Wolvenhampton, Lichneid, Waland, Tanavordi, M.p. Pont Sei
 - SHROPSHIER AND CRESHIER, Shrawshier, Ladiow, Britanerii, Glosser, Chook, Atlanter, Sockente, Bricothean, Maps and Plane. Post No. 6.
 - LANUASHIRE, Warrington, Bury, Manchester, Linespeel, Burster, Linespeer, Raire, Blackhires, Wigan, Proceed, Reladelle Lemanner, Such perf, Banchepeel, etc. Baye & Plain, Proceedings and
 - VORKSHORE, Bonesster, Hall, Sedy, Bevesley, Sorbecourt, Washin, Harracto, Street, Salette, Wakehille, Brained, Halling, Reddend to Such Lit. Society Press, Post 20: 12:
 - CATHEDRALS of York, Elpen, Incident, Carliele, Chesses, and Non-Incide. With the Electronic State Co. Sec. Co.
 - DURHAM AND NORTHUMSERLAND, New-rassic, Darlington, Sucking, Sarthand, Alleria, Beweck-m-Papel, Marpeth, Tyrocanath, Colletteam, Alarkik, Sc. May Post Sen. 2s.

HAND BOOK - SCOTI, AND, Edinburgh, Mclesse, Kolso, Glasgew, Bernickie, Avr. Stirling, Africa, The Clode, Olice, Inversey, Lock Lemnal, Link Kaltine, and Domestic, Calcipular Canal, Inverses, Former, 14th Kather and Tomostic, California, Rose, Balker-land, trans-c, therefore, Brunner, Seye, California, Rose, Balker-land, &c. Mapping Phys. Post vo. 12.

IREANIT, Dublin, Belfriet, the Gunt's Caper-esy, Trangat, Galvay, Warned, Perk, Laterick, WaterSod, Killar-ser, Senter, Company, &c. Magnetti Plats. Proc Sec. 10r.

HAYTER LEWIS (J.) The Holy Pages of Junualem, Illian-tention, for the St. HISLER (See Sayra, General)

HOLD, WAY J. G.A. A Month in Norway, Frup, dyn. 2s.

HONEY REE, By REY, THOMAS JAMES Fosts, Sva. Ja.

HOOK (Dass). Church Diestonary. A Manual of Reference for Corganic and State als. New Hollan, Lorenz Mynesiest. Office to Warran Book, M.A., and W. R. W. Styrmers, M. L. Mod Sto., 21s. Thursday Life, By J. G. Lock Barr. Frap. 5vo. 1s.

HOPE (A. J. Beararonn). Working in the Church of England. Ser, 6s., c. Populo Schilling from Ben, Se let. Womster and Clarks, Sen. 18.

HOPE-SCOPP (James), Memotr. See Onesuv.

HORACE; a New Edition of the Text. Edited by Duan Milman. With 168 Wordents. Or my 640. Ta. 64. See Eron.

HOSACE Goust. The Rise and Growth of the Law of Nations: as availabled by general usage and by teasies, from the satilest times to the Treety of Usrcelt. Sec. 15s.

HOUGHTON'S those) Monographs, Personal and Social. With

Postmira Crown ivo 100 ffr.
Postmira Woman Collected Belition. With Portrait. 2 Vote. Page 8rd. 12s.

HOME AND COLONIAL LIBRARY, A Series of Works adapted for all circles and classes of Readers, having been selected for their athorisistical inverse, and about a the Austres. Post fee. Published at gr, and fa da their man arguined mater two distinctive hance we talfered to-

US.ASS A.

HISTORY, BIOGRAPHY, AND MISTORIC TALES.

SCHOOL OF GREALTAIL DE THE ABOUR WITCH. DARY PROPERTIES D. CHENWAS. By Studen Street, LIFE -- SIN FRANCIS DEAKE. By Jose Ressue, 2s. DAMPARING AT WASHING-TON IS NOW B. R. GOSS. W. THE FRENCH IN ALGIERS By Laire Day Gospen. THE PALL OF THE JESUPTS. LUYE OF CONTIE By LORD MA-

THE SINGES OF VIEWS. By Loso Economics, 20:

THE WAYSIDE CROSS By East House, 2s. SKETCHESUNGERNAN LIPE:

Br. Stn. A. Gentrow . Br. 64. THE BATTLE OF WATERLOO. By Ray, G. E. Games AUTOROUGHAPHY OF STER. FT.NS. 3

THE RESTRICT FORTS.

HISTORICAL ESSAYS.

LIFE OF LOSIN CLIVE. Rav. G. R. Gineu. Je 6d. NORTH WESTERN BAIL-WAY, Sp Sta P. S. HEAD, St.

LIPE OF MUNRO. By Bre. G.

CLASS B.

VOYAGES, TRAVELS, AND ADVENTURES DOURNALS IN INDIA. By Bission Rappa. 7 Vols. To TRAVELE IN THE HOLV LAND. By Iner and Marotan, 26 MOROCOU AND THE MOORS. By J. Darweson Hav. 2s. LETVERS VEHM one BALTIC NEW SOOTH WALLS, By Mar. THE WEST INDIES, By M. G. EXECUTES OF PERSON BY Sen Jemie Wateram:

MEMORIES OF PATRICE KIPA. 24 TYPEE AND UMON. By Usawass Markova, S Yolo, a Missionary LIPE IN CAS-ADA BY RES. J. ABSSTT. 24. LIETTH 18 PROM MADRAS. BY

A L407. Sc.

CHARLES ST. JOHN. N. 44. PAMPAR JOURNEYS. By F. B. HEAD. In. GATHERISES PROM BYAIN.
By RICHEM PROM 1. 102.
THE RIVER ANALIS. By
W. H. ROWAND. 2.
MAYNERS & COSTOMS OF
INDIA. By Ery. C. Act. 401.
By G. V. English IN METIOD.
By G. V. English S. 14.
PRICEPEGAL AND GAUCIA.
Extractivations & 84. By Land Canyaires By Loui Cassarros de S.C. Busst Live de Acktralia. By Hay 18, W. Harrascra 21. THE LIBYAN DESCRIT. By SATAR ST. Sons, 2s. BIRBERA LEONE. By A Laut, 04.64.

"of Early work may be bull separately.

HUBNER (Bases vons. A Voyage through the British Empire). South Africa, American New Arabid: The Nickle Safrictions, India, the Safth Sea Introde, California, Oregin, Ganda, Ap., 48(1), a Map.

HUBN (A. Ves). The Struggle of the Burgarians for National Independence A History of the Burgarian of Saran In 188, and Physics Addition. With Van Proceedings and Saran In 188, and Physics A History of Forgland, Trem, the Inva-

sion of Judius Connector the Editable of these. Now Edition, certains, nonverted, and continued to the Torany of Serina, 1878. By J. S. Brawen, N. A. With P. Coloured Mann & 70 Wardson, Pear Sys. In. M. With P. Coloured Mann & 70 Wardson, Pear Sys. In. M. HUNNEWELL, Manus P.). England's Chroniche in Stone:

HUNNEWALL (James Fr.). Englating Chronick in Storie; breises for a fermion Unserbeissen of the testimone, thereises Abbers, Measurem, Carles, and Friers, the first in defined in the importal feshed. Will Hustrainan. Median for it through the Importal feshed. Will Hustrainan. Median for the grant feshed, with Ooks and Ends for those who fere the Bog and the Own. With 40 Illustration. Crows from fact, 2, 2 A Southersy of the Ruise by Chemical Standardson. In

of timek, fluspeckending Greamer, Debetos, and finerico-book,

with Vocabilettes. Such anties. Thus, he for.
(James, James and Philip van Arievelle: Two
remerkable Episcoes to the annals of Fluedon. and a learning of the HYMNOLOGY, Digramany or. [See Junian.]

ICELAND. |See Cours - DUVINGOR.]

INDIA. [See Broad out Klemsstore - Hand-Book - Surju -Tourt - Marie William - Lyan.]

INGS (We. Rates). Society in Reme under the Covers. Duren bere, fie

INGRAM idous E.) A Distinuty of lattic Etymology, 8vo.

IRBY AND MANGLES' Travels in Egypt, Nulta, cyros, and the Holy Land. Post Sec. Va. IRELAND, [See DESSIS-GREY.]

JAMES (V. L.). The Wild Tribes of the Soudan ; with an account of the range from Wasir Hadiah to Dengola and Berber. With Chapter on the Conflitten of the Steedam by dea d. Barra. May and HILLSTAD CRAN SVO. 7a fts.

JAMESON (Max.), Lives of the Early Italian Painters— and its Progress of Painting in Haly-Cleanur, is Bassion, West-tel Protests, Paul Sec. 12s.

JAPAN. [See Bus-Moussey-Reed.]

JENNINGS (Laurus J.), Rambles among the Hills in the Peak of twitig-blue and on the South thesina. With sketching of people by the war, With 23 illustrations. Crown Sec. 15. Field I arise and Green Lange, or Walks in Surroy.

mil Broner. Pointer lidblien. With illustrations. Crewn fere, fie.

JERVIS (Key. W. H.) The Gallican Church, from the Concurves of Borgus, 1514, to the Revolution. With me introduction, Portraits, I Vota, Sec. 25s.

IESSE (Karaso), Glasnings in Natural History, Fep 8vo. 3s. 6d.

JOHNSON'S (Da Sawren) Life. [See Biswatt,]
JULIAN (Ext. John J.). A Dictionary of Hymnology. A
Companion to Existing Strom Books. Setting forth the Origin and
Blairry of the Hymno contained to the Principal Hymnology with
Nations of Unit Anthons. Median See.

I UNIUS' Hastowaresse Professionally investigated. Edited by the Hon F. Pajetered. With Pandadles, Wandents, fer. 400. 43.36.

KERR [Barn]. The Consulting Architect : Practical Notes on Administrative Difficulties. Crown Sec. 2s.

KING EDWARD Vira's Latin Grammar. 12mg No. 6d.

Errst Luffer Book, (200) 20, 00,

RIRK (J. Forma). History of Charles the Bold, Duke of Hur-shield. Pictroit. 8 Vols. Sec. 450. RIRK SS' Handbook of Physiology. Edited by W. Monasse Backs and V. D. Handse. With Sch Historialisms. Part Sco. 148.

KUGLER'S HANDBOOK OF PAINTING .- The Italian Schools. A New Edition, revised, macopoint up the members all the mint recent distributed in the A. Henny Layane. With 201 Educations, 2 vols. Cross Sec. 184.

The German, Flemish, and Only belows, Harland, By J. A. Cauws, With 41 Blustrations. 2 Vote. thrown from Sie.

LANK (F. W.). Account of the Manners and Customs of Modern Especiate. With Observations, 2 Vols. Past Sec. 12s.

LAWLESS (How Emily). Major Lawrence, F.L.S.; a Novel.

3 Vals. Committee 31s; Sc. Lincop Edition, 61s.
LAYAED (Sir A. H.). Ninewech and ste firmains. With Illustra-

Nineseh and Babylon; Discoveries in the Rules, Karly Adventures in Persis, Balolonia, and Person including a residence aroung the Sakholyani and other will inter-factors the discovery of Nasardi, Parrie, Educations and Mage. 2 Vol. Character. Practical Hebrew Grammar. With the

Habraw Tant of General L.-vi., and Pasters L.-vi. Gracomatical. Analysis and Vanabalary. Postave. In 6st. LENNEP (itse, H. J. Vas). Missionary Travels in Asia Minur.

With History out of Stitled History and Archeology, May and Woodests, 2 Vols. Post the Sta.

LENNEY. Motorn Customs and Manners of Bilde Lands, to Hillofishios of Seriphon. Maps and Disperations. 1 Vals. Sta. Sta. LESUIN C. R.J. Hardbook for Young Painters. Blustrations. Post Swe. 7s. ful.

LETO (Perrosco). Eight Months at Rome during the Varienn Council, 800, 520

LETTERS FROM THE BALTON By LADY KANTLARE POST SVA. 24. Manuare, By Mus. Marriago, Post Svo. 24.

Street Looks, By Street Marriage, 30, 62. LEVI (Leong). History of British Commerce; and Commis-Program of that Stations, make 1784 to 1874. Seep. 150. - The Wages and Earnings of the Working Classes

LEWIS P. Harring. The Holy Prace of Jernatem. Binatrations. Sen. Tim to

LEX SALICA: the Ten Texts with the Ginnes and the Lex Emerica. Symptosity salied by J. H. Harris, With Stees on the Emerical World in the Language by H. Kano, of Leyden, the Adv. LIDDELL (Deast Similants Harrey of Rome, from the unitest. There is the cold in the main in Employ. We asked a Visible of Fa. 54

LINDSAY (Load). Stephen of the Hotory of Christian Art. 2 Vol. Changers 24. LISPINGS from LOW LATITUDES; or, the Journal of the Hop. Impulsis Studying con. Edited for Louis Directory. With 24 Planes Abs. 21s. LIVINGSTONE (Da.), First Expedience to Africa, 1840-56.

Second Expedition to Africa, 1558-51, limates

these Part Str. in ad-

Lest Journals in Central Africa, to his lieuth, By Hele 11- wie Watten. Many and Illustrations. 2 Vols. 6ro. 15s Personal Life. By Wu. G. Blaikis, D.D. With Manhael Parleuit, Here die

Maximal Polestic, Sec. 36.

LIVINISTONIA. Adventures in Exploring Lake System. 16.

E. D. Vorestick S., Saye. Polestic. 16.

LOCKHART G. G. | Americal Spanish Bullion. Historical and Bennatic. Translated, with Notes. Illustrations. Coven time. 5a.

LONDON: Its History, Antiquarian and Modern. Founded on the work by the lake Pyter Chantaghan. V.S.A. Research distinction. 16. Jane 17 Tennas, V.S.A. Research distinction. 16. Jane 17 Tennas, V.S.A. Low and distinctive revised edition. 16. Jane 17 Tennas, V.S.A. Market H. Wursenson, Library edition, an laid paper. 2 V.St. Median two. [In 1th Prop. LOUDON (Max). Gardening for Lodies. With Direction and Chimilar of Operations for Every Worth Wordens, Fran. Sec. 19. 61.

Calendar of Operations for Keery Worth Woodcots, Yosh, Nov. 1s, 64.

LUMHOLTZ (Dr. C.) Four Years' T avels in Australia, inc'eding a Year's Broblence grown that controls and table Known Payage Tribes in the N.E. Parrof the Controls. With Majorand pel little tratfore. Me Hala Syn. (Nettelly Rooth)

ARPHERI (Marris). The First Principles of the belormatten, or the Princip Extend Dr. Marin Science, Portial, No. 12, LYALL, See August C.), K.C.B. Assiste Santis; Religious and

Same the

LYELL ISIN Circulate. Statest's Elements of Goolegy. A new fit on, coreducation by Pauronana P. W. Doncas, F. K. S. With con file currence Post ten. 9a.

Life, Lenters, and Journals. Edited by Armostonia-law Man Louis. With Portraits. I Vote riene Stie.

LYELL (K. M.). Handbook of Ferna. Post Svo. 7a. 6d.

LYNDHURST (Loup). [See Manris.]

LYTTON (Long). A Memoir of Julian Pana. Portrait, Post HIFO. BA.

M*GLINTOCK (Sm L.). Narrotive of the Discovery of the Pan of Sir John President and the Companions in the Article Seas. With Historical Post Sea. In Sc.
MACDONALD (A.). Too Late for Gordon and Khartonus. The Teatmony of an Independent Eye-witness of the Herois Efforts for their Resimons and Editor. With Maps and Plans. Sec. Use.

MACGREGOR (J.), Reb Roy on the Jordan, Nile, Red Sea, Gen-search, &c. A Caroe Craise in Paisetine and Egypt and the Waters of Damascus. With 70 Blustretiess. Coven Sec. 7s, 8d.

MARTENER'S RESCHIE GRANNER. A Methodical, Analytical, and Historical Treation on the Octiography, Proceedy, Infections, and Spoins. By Castra J. Gants, Id., D. S. Yots, Sec. 16a

MAHON (Loud). [See STARMORE.]

MAINE (Sta H. Stumes). Ancient Law: its Connection with the Early History of Society, and its Relation to Modern Ideas, Sec. 12r. Village Communities in the Best and West. 8vo. 12c.

Early History of Institutions, 8vo. 12a.

Dissertations on Early Law and Costom. 8vs. 12s. Pepular Government. L.-Prespects of Popular To superpose . If - Nature of Depressions . I'll - App. of Properson. IV - an addition of the Labord Street, 1991. Ltc. International Law, Sec. 7- dil.

MALJOUN (See Jours). Sketches of Persia. Post 870. 3s. 6d. MALLOCK OV. U.b. Property and Progress or, Foots against Personal A Lies Leging time I interpreted with Australia in

MANSEL HEARL Latters Lontieres, and Business Stor. 12c.

MARCO POLO. [See Yvru.]

MARKHAM (Mrs.). History of England. From the Pirst Invaoten to be the license and and form to user. Woodens, there, do not History of France. From the Conquest of Gaul by Julius Couse, continued drawn in 1878. Woodents. 12ms. In. 64.

History of Germany. From its Investor by Marton, continued form to the nonpletten of Colegue Cathelmi. Wholeste. lime. is fid.

(Clausers E.). A Popular Account of Peruylan Bark and the introduction into British India, With Maps. Post 840. 14s.

MARSH (G. P.). Student's Manual of the English Lauguage. Edited with Additions. By Ds. We. Server. Past Sen. 7s. 56. MARTIN (Sex Tenorous). Life of Lord Lyndhurst. With MARTIN (Sea Temporens).
Pertraits. Sec. 18s.

MASTERS in English Theology. Lectures by Eminent Divines. With Introduction by Cauco Barry. Post 8vo. 7s. 9d. Blowscald. HIA'S GREEK GRANMAN. Abridged by Blowscald.

MATTHLE'S GREEK GREWERS. Abridged by Blowwerds.

Revised by E. S. CROSER. 1200. 4c.

MAUREL'S Character, Actions, and Writings of Weilingson.

Frap. 670. 1r. 6d.

MELVILLE (HERMANN). Marquessa and South See Islands. S Vols. Part Sto. 7s. MERRDITH (Mas. Curstans). Notes and Sketches of New Sees).

Walen. Pour Bros. Sa.

MEXICO. [See BESCHLERUEST-EDXTOR.]

MICHAEL ANGELO, Scuiptor, Painter, and Architect. He Life and Works. By C. Heavy Wilson Hissististes. Sec. 15s. MILLER (Wm.). A Dictionary of English Names of Plants

append among English speaking Founds to Flants, Trees, and Herarbs, in Two Pares, Lavine English and Regists Latin. Reduce No., 52s.
MILMAN'S (Deam) WORKS:—

Hastony on the Jaws, from the earliest Pseiod down to Modern

Times, 1 Vely Fort loss, 12h.

RARLY CHRISTIANITY, from the Birth of Christ to the Abolition of Pagaroup on the Remain Empire & Vola Post Sec. 12s. Laris Constrainty, including that of the Popes to the

Profiferant Number V. S Vill. Profited 26s. Haspinger to St. Paul's Cathernal. Woodcone. 10s. 6d. QUISTI HORATH FLACE OFFICE. Woodcuts. Sm. Sto. 7s. 6d. Fall of Jimenales. Feep. 870. 1s. (Capt. E. A.) Wasside Cross. Post Sto. 2s.

(Hanner, D.D.) Life. With a Selection from his Correspondence and arrivals. By hat Sixth. Map. 801, 12s. MILNE (DAVID, M.A.). A Readable Dictionary of the English

MINCHIN (J. C.). The Growth of Freetom in the Balkan Penintella. With a Map. Croyer two. 10s. 6s,

MIVART (Sr. Greeces). Lessons from Nature; as manifested in Mind and Matter, Syo. 15s.

The Car. As beinded on to the Study of Backinged

MOGGETHOE (M. W.). Method in Almograms. A Handbook for Helpers. Part viv. M. Rd. MONTEPHORE (Sim Mann). Selections from Letters and decrease by his in wage. With Portrait. Cross Sec. 10s. 54. MOORE (Turners: Life and Letters of Lord Syron [Sec Ornors.]

MOTHEY Atom I news The Correspondence of Prettall T Yests Steel

History of the United Nethermode : from the Described William the School & that Pening Years' Trans. two. Protestes. 8 Vide Post Str. Six counts.

Life and beath of John of Barnerold.
With a Visco of the Person Conversal Steens and the United Years'
War. Districtions. 2 Vols. Post Sec. 12c.

MOZLEY (Camor). Treatise on the Augustinian doctrine of Probestication, with an Australy of the Castesia. Grown Sec. 24.

MUNRO'S (Gurenas) Life and Letters. By Hav. U. E. Game. Post Syn. As. Sd.

MUNTRE (Axer) Letters from a Mourning City. Naples during the Authors of 1884 Translated by Manna Various William William Frantisphone. Linews Sec. 58.

MURCHISON (See Robesion). And his Contemporaries. By
Asternatio Gener. Periodic. 2 Vols. Sec. 30s.
MURRAY (A. S.). A History of Greek Sculpture from the
Excited Times. With 180 literary stores. 2 Vols. Seysi Sec. 52s. 6s.
MURRAY S MAGAZINE. A New Home and Colombi Monthly

Periodical, Le. Vol. I., Jun.—Jone, 1887. Vol. II., July—Hermster, 1887. Vol. III., Jan.—June, 1888. Vol. IV, July—Hermster, 1888. 85c. 7s. 6d. used.
. Forwarded Monthly on receipt of an annual subscription of the

MUSTLES (Care) Uninguiting; a Year's Vanderings over Discretes transfer to the Science of Magazine to the His Negro-

SAPAHAAD Masquis og .. Probatanie America. Tambleed

by N brancase With Chartenberg Stor 10.
NAPLER (Garman Str. Charles) The 1 lin. By the Hom.

WH. Names have, Work I constrain May to the By the House, (first, Ste Greek T.). Desemble to the Ently Miller to the Arrive Market Stephen to the Market Stephen to the Ste

(See Wa.) English Buttles and Sieges of the Peninsular Wag, Pertrait. Post-Syo.

NAPOLEON AT FORTAGERICIAN AND KERA, Journale, Notes of theory-militar. By Sin Note Campbell. Profests. pyr. 164.

NASMYTH (Jawas). An Authorgraphy. Edited by Samuel Scoles, Linds, and Decreas, and Schlestrations. Proc Section, or harge Carry, bril.

And JAMES CARPENTER, The Mount Com-atograph is as a super a Ward, and a post-life. With his Plate and management Workshop. New and Changer I didn't a. Medium two. 216

NEW TESTAMENT. With Short Explanatory Connections, With the means of the most and the resum or Sy. Levil's, With the moleculer of Sy. Levil's, With the moleculer of Sy. Levil's, With the moleculer Value, &c. 2 Vols. Commisses. Ets. Someth

BEWTH (Samura). Pirst Book of Natural Philosophy; an Intromeetion to the Study of Street, Diparture, Diparture, Light, Heat, Elements of Meshanter-Including Dyansetatics,

with minument Examples and liver build. Mathemetical Examples: A Gendunted Series of Engagement Laurish is Arctine to Algebra, Legacities, Corrections, visit University, staff Un

NIMROD, On the Chace-Turt- and Road With Parcrat and Plates. Creard irre, Se. Qr atthiculoured Plates, Jacob.

SURDINGS (Case). Communicate Societies of the United States. With 4 Dissertation. See. 15.

ROETHCOTE'S San Jone National in the Long Parliament, Consists. Presidence from the Einst Preside, 1687. 100ml, with a Meaning lit A. H. S. Hammister A.L. will have the

(Danist). Curespoulence of. O'CONNELL. (See Fren-

UENSBY (Proc. R.) Memoirs of I, Hope Scott, Q.C. tot. Alderstockly, Tallin Selection - to be the Contraporationer, 2 tells, Sec. 24s.

OTTER (R. H.). Winters Almini: Some Information respecting
Proceeding to the Author on execution the Health. Incombat for
the Les and Guidenne of Invalida. To 66.

OVID LESSONS, [See Eron.]

OWEN (Laune Con.). Principles and Practice of Modern Artillery, perioding Artiflery Marchet Compety, and Organization and Court Artifler in Warters. With Blinds actors. Sec. Ma.

DXENHAM (Rev. W.). English Notes for Latin Elegiocs; with Property Links of Composition to Eligent Matri. Birne. In 61.

PAGEY these Council. The light Carelry, Stepade in the Latera, Ave. 3 com H ... White

PALITICANE (S. 11. L.). Level Texation of Great Britain and Indiana, come by.

PALL(SER (Mar.). Mottors for Monuments, or Epitapha selected for General Con and thirty With Handredton. Cown ten. La 64,

PANKHURST (E. A.). The Wildom of Edmund Barke: Being Belection from his Species and Willings, chiefly bearing upon Folitzal Question. For Str. 6.

PARIS (Da.), Philosophy in Sport made Science in Paramet; or, the First Principles of Namual Philosophy introducted by six of the Toys and Sports of Youth. Wordents, Pres Sci., 7, 64

PARRYNS' (Manorinia) Three Years' Residence in Abyminia; with Travels in that Country. With Himsenthese. Post ben. fa 64.

PEEL'S (See Roseny) Memoirs, 2 Vots, Past fro, 15s.

PENN (Richard) Maxims and Hints for an Angler and Choosplayer. Wwelrate. Scap too. Is.

FERCY (Jone, M.D.). Metalliners: Fuel, Word, Pent, Coal,

Charcook Core, Fir. Clays Charlestons, See, 30, Lead, including part of Salver. Illustrations, Sec. 30s. Silver and Gold. Part L. Illustrations. Sys. Siz.

PERBY (REV. CARON). Life of St. Hegh of Avalor, Siebop of blands, Parison discount.

History of the Karfich Church, 'See Strongers' Manuals. PERSIA. [See HEMANIS.]

PHILLIPS (Saures), Literary Lemys from "The Times." With Portrait. 2 Vote: Francisco, Te.

POLLOCK (C. R.). A Book of Family Prayers, Schedul from

POPES (Askraganta) Works, With Introductions and Notes, by J. B. Comman, her W. Ellions, and W. H. Internation. Vol. I., -1V, VI. -2, With Perform Ser. Do deliver | Vol. V. acquaining the Lyfe and a General Index, in mariy relate.

PORTER (Rev. J. Lak. Damasens, Palmyra, and Lebason, Map-

PRAYER-BOOK (Practitudes Latinsporters, Wine Notes, by

PRINCESS CHARLSTTE OF WALES. Memoir and Correspondence. by Lace Stone Watership, With Protrain See, St. od. PRIVY COUNCIL JUDGMENTS in Eccessistenced Gases re-lating to Decrees and Interpline, two low-rd.

PSALMS OF DAVID. With Notes Explanatory and Critical by

Dear Johnson, Corte Elliett, and Center Code. Medicin von Str. Sci.
PUSS IN SOUTS. With 12 Bloatracions. By Orvo Seconda.
16so. 1: 56. (wednesd to 66.
QUARTERLY BEVIEW (Yuk). Svo. 54

RAE (Enwarm). Country of the Moora: A Journey from Tripeli-te the Bully city of Kalessey. May not Ethings. Comes see, 124, The White Sen Pentesula, Journey to the White

See, and the Kole Peninsula. Hep and Divergence of Consular State.

(George). The Country Backer; five Chante, Cases, and Work, run the Experience of Facty Years. Proceedings in the Syrian Diverte. Post Syn., 100, 100.

RASSAM (Hongorn). British Mission to Abvednia Hiestra-tions 2 V.A. Res. 28s RAWIANSON'S (Canon). Five Great Monarchies of Chaidwa,

Assyria Media, Salylouia, and Poreia. With Maps and Discretions. 5 Vots. Sec. 42s.

RAWLINSON'S (Sox Heavy) England and Russia in the East; a Series in Players his the Corollillan of Cantral Asta, Map. Sec. 12s. Sen Hunenorus, RRED (Sir E. J.) Iron Clad Ships; their Qualities, Performances, and the Wall Stratestone, Avr. 15s.

Japan: Its History, Traditions, and Religions,
Nametter of a Children 1888, Distalations, 1 Yele, 28s. 28s. A Practical Treatise on Shipbuilding in Iron and Steel, Second and Product College, with Woodcook, Sec. (In Preparation, REJECTED ADDRESSES (Thu), By James and Houses Smith, Woodcook, Post Sto. Sa. Sat. | or Deputer Science, Prep. Sec. In. REMBRANDY. [See Middle 198.] REVISED VERSION OF N. T. [See Bickett-Borson-Cook.] RICARDIPS (Davis) Works. With a Notice of his life and Writings By J. R. M'Constrone. Swit 16s. RIPA (Partura). Residence at the Court of Paking. Post Sys. 2x. ROBERTSON (Canor). History of the Christian Church, from the Apostulla Age to the Referencion, Intl. 5 Vols. Post tree. 4s each. ROBINSON (Ray, Du.). Biblical Researches in Palestine and the Adjacent former, 1838 - 52. Maps. B Vols. Sec. 421. English Flower Gardan. With an Hinstrated intrinsical of all the Phants need, and Diportons for their Calcure and recognizant. With narros on Hinstrates. Medican fire. The Vagetable Garden , or, the Edible Vegetables, Sature, and Martin rathered in Aurope and America. By MM, Vin-Sub-Tropical Garden. Illustrations. Small Sec. 5a. Furing and Gardens of Paris, considered in Helitian to the Westa of other Chies and of Pablic and Private Gardens, With 199 illustrations see, pp.

Wild Gardens, are, Our Graves and Gardens made the alling by the Scientific sec of Hardy Excite Plants. With the Indianal Conference are. 173, 64. God's Acre Boautiful; or, the Cometeries of the Potens. With a Ultrathetica: Sec. 7s. 6s.

ROMANS, Sc. Prod's Epicele to the: With Nation and Communitary

For E. H. Stevens Bill. Analysis and London. Manking and Sc. 62. ROME Officerial conj. Son Granes - Issa - Landria - Supp. Strongerit RONALLY Jupin HA. The Western Pacific and New Guines. 2nd Dilatin With a May. Commune. Se sa. (Hreav). The Panishmant of Death. To which is added A Transactor Paide Responsibility and You for Hallat, Contraders, In. ROS : (Mos.). Three Generations of English Women; or, The Mercaits and correspondences of Mrs. John T.-Phr. Mrs. Sand Austin, and Junit In Historian. With Partiers 2 Yels. Crown Sec. 24. The Land of Manfred. Picturesque Excursions in Applicated when the patron parts of regularity thely, with special measurements their likely access of above. With this destines, Cross Sec. RUMBOLD (Sts. Housek). The Great Silver River : Notes of a Sertiscus le che Argeoffes Republic, With lithitrationa. Sec. 12c. RUXTON (Gro. F.). Travels in Mexico; with Adventures among Wild Tribes and Antiquate of the Prairies and Rocky Mountains, Pear Sec. St. JOHN (Country), Wild Sports and Natural History of the Dightands of Scorland, Illustrated Edition, Crown Sec. 16s. Charp Million, Proc. Rev. 16. 64. BT. J. HN (Barta) Adventures in the Libyan Desert, Post Svo. 2r. SALES (Srs. Rosens) Brigade in Affghametan. With an Account of the Defence of Jellalahad. By But G. R. G. and. Post five. 30.

SALMON (Pror. Gaisse, D.D.). An Introduction to the Study of the New Testament, and no Laussignstian into Modern Dithicol Criticism, based on the most recent Secures of Information, Sec. 167. Lectures on the Infallibility of the Church. 8vo.

SCEPTICISM IN GEOLOGY; and the Remons for It. An meanthings of lasts from Nation constailing to refute the shorty of "Canana and in Action." By Valerica, Wandouts, Grown Sci. Sa.

With 500

SCHLIEMANN (Ds. Henory Ancient Mycone. With 500 Henoretican Medium Sec. 502 Historians of the Trojans, With or Aurobiography. With he Cilmensitors. Imperial 900. Dis-Trops: Results of the Latest Hescarches and Discoveries on the ede of Homer's Troy, restation etc. made in 1984. With Maps, Plem and Dissertations. Manual New 1924.

Tiryun: A Prelibsorie Paluce of the Kings of Tirrus, discovered typeses and him to the Spairs. Profess and Novel by Perfect - Adaptavia 1 Copfeld. With Cabarrel Librarraphs, Wood-res, Plans, Sc., co. 1 to sugar beauty the last. Medican Scn. 42a.

SCHOMBERG (General). The Odynory of Bonner, rendered tein English same. I valu. Eve. Pie.

SCHREIBER (4-any Chartotte). English Pans and Fan Leaves. Connected and Described. With the Places, rollin, 277; 11 adventely bound.

SCOTT (Sta Granar). The Rise and Development of Mediawal Architecture, With me Bucketiers, 7 Vols. Sestimaters, 821

SCHUTTON (T. E.). The Laws of Copyright. An Examination of the Principles which stread Regular Library and Arthrite Property is Englished and other Countries, two. 10. 56.
SERBOHM (Haway), Siberia in Asia. With Descriptions of the

Matural History, Migrations of Ords, &c. Illimitations. Cross two 16a. BELBORNE (Loan). Notes on some Passages in the Litturgion) History of the Reticional English Chares, Sec. 40.

SHADOWS OF A SICK ROOM. Preface by Canon Livron. 16me. Se 64.

SHAH OF PERSIA'S Diary during his Tour through Europe in 1813. With Parirals, Crema Sys. 12s.

SHAIRP (PRINCIPAL) AND THE PRINCIPAL BY WM. KRIGHT, Protender of Moral Philosophy in the University of 21. Andrews. With Portrain. 8vo. 15c.

SHAW (T. B.). Manual of English Literature. Post Svo. 7s. 6sf. Specimens of English Literature. Selected from the

Circl Writers. Fost Svo. 7s. ds. - (Rougery, Virkand, and Kashgur, sed Room Jossey over the Karakovan Pass. With Map and Historians. Sec. 16a. SIEMENS (Sta Wa.), C.E. Life of, By Wa., Pots, C.E. Portraits.

Selemion from the Papers of, Plates, 5 vols. Sec. SIERRA LEONE; Described in Letters to Priends at Itome. By Mun Murrigus. Post fire. Se. Sd.

SIMMONS (Carr.). Constitution and Practice of Courts-Mar-Sat. Svo. 154.

SMILES' SAMORE, Lib.D.) WORKS :-BRITISH ENGINEERS from the Earliest Period to the Death of the complements. Disstructions. A Vote, Crown Sva. Je &d. each. Groups Statemasson. Post Sec. 2s. Of. James Nameron. Portrait and Illustrations. Post Sec. de. Sceron Naturalist (Time, Kaw em). Illustrations, Port 850, 64. Scores Grandout (Houset Dira), Illustrations, Sys. 14. SELV-HELF. With Illustrations of Conduct and Perseversome Paul Str., Sc. CHARAPTER A Hard of Noble Characteristics. Past Syn. tz. THERET. A Book of Domestic Council. Post Syn. Sc. Drive, With Illustrations of Courage, Patience, and Endurance. Fred tree Se. introducts Bromarny; or, Iron-Warners and Tool-Makers. Past room the Meeta Isyamus. Past 810. fis. Large and Lampa; or, Characteristics of Mea. of Culture. unit territory, Pest Son, -ff. Boy's Voyeus House run Works, Blustrations, Post Syn. Sc. SMITH (Dr. Groups) rendered whaqual of the thought by of British lette, Christman D mical, With Ways, Postawa, Ta bit, Life of Juliu Wilsten, D.D. (Benduy), Missionary and Ballettimate, Perings, Feel boy to. - Less et Win. Carry, B.D., 17-61 - 1884. Shoemaker and Spaliner Pulsar Paratri Peratri Respitation Perforation of the Pilogo of Peri William Canada Universitate Paratria 7s of Latend's open Rhelips, Power Machonary and Naturalist. mit adjust let a frameten. The common filtering at - Paster Buttery of the Ancient World, from the Creation. to the Fifth of the Street Engine, a re ties, I Calc. See. Ha to SMPTICS IDE, WAS DIRTHINABLES. Discrement of the Break, its Autiquities, Biograp 1, descriptly, and Natura Hisory. Illustrations 3 Val., 800, 1100 Control Histories and Hustrations, 800, 218. Spatial Busic Decreases. Illustrations, Part Sea 74 Cd. Contestion Association, Comprising the History, Inch-norm of Stripples of the Christian Cheese, Historian, 27 de. Restorant, 30 tile of CHONTEN BEHAVER, LITZBATERE, SECT. AND DICTRISES; trender the Thomas of the Aprilla to the Agrica Clearbonnesse. Meaning the Now to cool to the TX for the TX fo GRAKE AND HOURS ARTHUST THIS HIMPTAINING MAN BYO. 25c. CHEEK AND ROBAN BROGRAPHY AND MATRODOTE DRUGTRATIONS. : Volte: Medilenten. 4/ 4s. Green and Roman Geography. S Vols. Illustrations. Minfillion 6001 B45. ATER OF ASSESS CHOSEAPER - BINEDIAL AND CLASSICAL Faffe. 41 fb. CLASSICAL DISTINSARY OF METROLOGY, BOOKAPHY, AND

SMALLER CLASSICAL DEST. Woodenia, Growt Svo. 7s. 5d.
SMALLER DICTIONARY OF URERS AND ROMAN ANTIQUETERS.

COMPANY LATTS EXCLUSI DECEMBER. With Tables of the Homist Galesia, Newscoon, Weights, Money, and a Decilosury of Project Senior 16th Edition, Sec. 55.

Wiendraft, Ultran-Stop, Ta. Sd.

SMITH'S (Da. Ww.) Doctor-anges-continued.

SEALLER LATTE ESSAISH Decreesaar. 30th Edition. 12mo.

Copious and Chimnal Engains - Lavis Dierromany, 5th Edition, Syp. 16a. Smaller Results - Later Dictionary. 3th Edit. 12mo, 7s. 6d.

SMITH'S (Dr. Wal) ENGLISH COURSE:-

School Mayner of Estation Chairman, with Corone Executing and Appendition. Propiety, 16, 64.

PRIMARY ESCHOOL GRANNIN, for Elementary Schools, with

espetials and most Parsing Lemans. Hare, in: Masuan or Escalar Coursesvins. With Copious Illustra-tions and Corrient Exercises. Plant. In Ed.

Parmany Hosman or Berrain. 12me. 2s. 6d.

Senson Manual or Monney Groundput, Personal and Political Deliver, in

A SHALLER MASUAL OF MODERS GROUDAPUT. 16mm, 28. 6d.

SMITH'S (Dr. W.) PRENCH COURSE =

Passen Personna. Part I. A Plus Course, containing a Grammer Debrin Curies, and Versbuller. Erro. In 64. Appendix on Phasen Parkolpta. Part I. Containing addistinct Secretors, with Exact matter I be vo. Time 2. 60,

FRANCE PRIVATES. Part II. A Reading Book, containing Patter, Browns, and Alcodo to, Natural Hillor, and Source from the History of Pinton. It fit transmission by nation, being and replace Expendinguish Barthonory, Tapes 4, tol. Expendinguish Barthonory, Tapes Compusation, entitle blue scarre, Parameter, Part III, From Compusation, entitle blue

Figure Percercia. Part III, Press Conquestrion entireller. the Fortidi Hardah - Incomed with the Largests had also detauts I attach of accommenced things where there-44.16.

STUDENT'S FRENCH GRAMMAN, With Introduction by M. Littre.

Seatter Governor of the Person Labourge. Abridged

SMITH'S (Do Wa) GERMAN COURSE :-

GERMAN PRINCEPLA. Part I. A Pirat German Course, cont., ining a Granusar, Delectus, Resyclas Book, and Vocabularies. Here, fo 6% GREEKE PRINCIPLE. Part II. A Reading Book; containing Fairle, Assertines, National Hildery, and Scorms from the History of fermions. With Question Bullet, and Declaracy. 1988s. Ba. 5d.: Prayman Graman Gramman. Post Sep. 3s. 6d.

SMITTIS (Dr. Wm., ITALIAN CUCKSE .-

Frantas Prescieta. Part I. An Hallen Course, contaîning a grangent Peterine Renner Byes, with Veterinlands, and RenneR for Hallan Conversation. Total: 38 tel:

Iranas Projectia. Part II. A Pine Italian Resting Book, containing Fath a Aposton, History, and Passages from the heat Indea Archery, att. Granusantal Questions, Norm, and a Copine Etymological History, Irana. B. 54.
SMITH'S (Da. Wa.) LATIN COURSE.—

THE YOUNG BROTHERS'S PIRST LATTE BOOK : Containing the Redirects of Brancas, East Grammatical Questions and Exercises, with Venthalarase. Being a Stepping structus Principle Letter, Part I. 12mo. 24.

The Young Brownsen's Strong Layie Book: Containing an may Latin Reading Dook, with so Analysis of the Senirgon, Norre, and a Dietlenary. Being a Suppling score to Principle Latins, Puri II. Thurs. 20.

BMITH'S (Dr. Ww.) LATIS COTAGE-CONTINUED,

PRINCIPIA LATINA. Part I. First Latin Course, containing a Oranguer, Delectes and Exercise Stell, with Vocabularies. Edite. In St. * . In this Edition the Cases of the Nume. Adjustines, and Promotes. are arranged both as in the sammany Grammont and as to the Person. Scools Prints, log-mer with the corresponding Exercises

APPENDER TO PETROTORA LATERA, Part I.; being Additional Exercises with Examination Papers. Durn. Is 64.
Personnia Latina. Part II. A Reading-book of Mythology, Geography, Roman Acceptaines, and Elistory. With Name and Dismoney, 12ma 3r 4d

PRINCIPLE LATINA. Part III. A Poetry Book. Il sameters and Pentatorione: Echig. Oxidiano, Latin Procedy, Herr. Ro. 64.

PRESCRITA LATERA, Part IV. Press Composition, Mules of Special, with Encopies, Mardanations of Synonyms, and Exercises on the Special Lines. Sc. 5d.

Parsmets Lavisa. Part V. Short Tales and Ancolotes for Translation into Latin. 12mm. Sc.

LATTE-ENGLISH VOCABOLARY AND FIRST LATTE ENGLISH Diermerany pour Piramary, Committee Narros, and Canan. 12210, 3a.54. STOURSO'S LAYER GRANGE. For the Higher Forms. A now

and theroughly revised Edition. Pret Sec. 4s. SMALLES LATES GRANKAR, New Edition, 12mo, is, 6d. TACITUS, GRARDSTA, AGRICOLA, and Prast Book of the Assault blue, St. 30, 30, SMITH'S (Ds. Wa.) GREEK COURSE:—

INTERACTION, Part L. A First Greek Course, containing a Gramnot, listers and Exercise over With Versillaries. (200, 30.0f. Appendix to bytes Gracia. Part I. Containing additional

Exemples: With Franchister Papers. Delege, W. de. Belvin Daded. Part M. A. Reseling Bisch. Containing obert Pakes, American, Forder, Variabley, and teorism History, 1888, 28 64.

INTEL GRACK, Port III. Prose Composition, Containing the Robe of Scatas, with replace Emergles and Exercises, 126m. In 64. STEPPATE GREEK GRANNAR, For the Higher Forms.

Spieling Charle Congruen town Schol.

Galla April 200, 12mg. 25 66.

PLATA, Apolicy of Scientes, &c. With Notes. 12mp. 2c, 6d. SMITTIES (DE WELL STEALLER HISTORIES

Scanneau Harrier, This and Woodgets Billion, 32, 6d, ARCHIOC HISTORY. Wandson's Tomo, 34 fed.

Asoner Chamasony, Wassense, Idam as dif-

Ministra Liverilla April . 10mm. Re. Sel.

Granter. W. a Colorest Map and Woodcuts. 18mo. Re. St. Roses: With Unborred Mage and Woodcute, Dines, Se. 64.

CRESCAS MANUSCASTOR WASHINGS Tomos. Re. Sel.

Kamara. Wali Coloured Maps and Woodcuts. Inma Se. 6d. 16mo. 34 84. Entitled Liverations.

SPECIMENS OF ESOLISH LATERATURE. TOMA. 38. Sol.

SOM Eli VII. L.E. (Many). Physical Geography. Post Svo. Dr. Connexion of the Physical Sciences. Post 8vo. 3c. Molecular and Microscopic Science. Illustrations. # Juli, Post byo, Ste.

SOUTH (Jons F.). Household Surgery; or, Hints for Emergenates. With Woodcate. Four. Swi. de Sd.

Memoirs of. [See Factor.]

SOUTHSY (Rose.). Lives of Bunyan and Cramwall, Post Sec. 2s.

STANHOPE'S (EASE) WORKS :-

History of Esclass from the Erics of Queny Arms to you Peace of Versathers 170 St. 2 Vols. Post Str. 56, each.
Left of William Pitt. Portraits. 3 Vols. Str. 56, each.
Miscorlanges. 2 Vols. Post Str. 13s.
Barrier Isma, from its Origins to 1783. Post Sto. 3s. 5d.
History of "Forty Fire." Post Str. 3s.
History as "Forty Fire." Post Str. 3s.
History as Origins To Post Str. 3s.
History as Origins To Str. 10s. 5d.
Left of Barriers and Miscory, synograms Science Post Str. 7s. 5d.
Left of Cortic. Post Str. 3s. 5d.
Strong of June of Arm Post, Str. 1s.
Addition of June of Arms Consider. Jone. 1s.
[See also Whitington]

STANLEY'S (DEAD) WORKS :-

Schat awn Parassens. Coloured Maps. Sec. 72s. Binca in the Hour Lasn; Extracted from the above Work. Weekgute, Post Ser. Se Sd Rassan County Flams, Cross See, 62, Jawes Council From the Karliest Vision to the Christian lim. Percentual Naje, 3 Vols. Cross See, 188. Council of Southand, 870, 78, 8d. Recettles of St. Paul to THE CORCETRIANC. Sec. 18s. Lars or Da Assent Portrait 2 Vels Cr. 800. 124 CARTERBURE, Illustrationa. Crown 8vo. 6s. WESTEINSTER ASSET. Illustrations, 8vo. 15c. Surnove Presented in Westwenster Annue. Sec. 12s. MEMORA OF HOWARD, CATHEBREER, AND MARY STABLET, Cr. Svo. Se. CHRISTIAN INSTITUTIONS. Essays on Ecclorastical Subjects. Proper Sea. Its. Emare on Curary and State : 1856-1870 Crown Sec. Sc. SERVOYS TO CULIDREN, Including the Heatitudes, the Fulthful Servent, du. Past fire. de. M. [Hee also BRADIAT.]

SYEBBING (Wat). Some Verdicts of History Seriewed, Sec. 12s.

STEPHENS (Ray. W. S. W.). Life and Times of St. John Chrysotom. A Shatel of the Church and the Empire in the Freigh Cantury. Portrait. Sec. Ja. 6d.

STEET (G. E.), R.A. Gothic Architecture in Brick and Martife.
With Notes to North of Italy. Directairm, Miyal Sec. 24s.

_____ Memoir of By Anguon E. Spaner. Pertrait, Spo. 10s.

BTUART (Valutums). Egypt after the War. With Descriptions of the Homes and Habits of the Natives, he. Coloured Hinstrations and Woodcots. Stynd Sto. 81s. 84. STUDENTS' MANUALS. Ther ave. 7s. Sd. RACE VOLUME !-

House Horosci or Essuant from the Invasion of Julius Emer is the Berthelin in 1988. Bertael, and continued to the Treaty of Facilit, 1808. By J.-S. Bakeran, M.A. (Scionfed Maps and Wardenby, its ja 2 parts, price W. A. each, "a" Quiemonicos for shows Work, 1200, 33

HISTORY OF MODERS EDITOR, Iron the full of Constantinople to the Tours of Parties 1879. By R. Latting, M.A.

One Tegrament History; from the Creation to the Return of the Assessment Captivity. Wesslook.

New Terranery Horney. With an Introduction connecting the History of the tell and New Testaments. Wnofeste.

REIDERORS OF CHILIFFICATIVE By H. Wade, D.D. Hatte Press.

ESCHESTASTICAL HISTORY; a History of the Christian Church from the ametalian distributed the Referencies. By Partic Sarrey B.A. With appealess Worlds St., 2 Vols. Paint L. A.E. Sr., 1993, Part IL. 3807-1074

Escare Councer Harrowy, from the Planting of the Caurch

Ascence Decreat or the East, Egypt, Assyria, Babylonia, Notic, Perca. Acts Miller, and Phonicia. By Passic Servit, B.A. Wanterin.

Disconauce, By Came Bryan, Woodorta.

Harvier or Olivis at trees the Exchest Times to the Roman Decision. By Ww. Street B.C.L. Woodcate. "." Qualities on the street Work, Men. 26.

History of Rose; from the Earliest These to the Establishproperty larger in four Library Washing.

thereby Prot no and Pable of The Bollan Empley Woodmale, HALLAND HISTORY OF ESTIMATION HIS Middle Ages,

DALLARS DISTORT OF ESSLANDS from the According of Boars Will forms Double Dillore 11.

Harman or Floring from the English Tuess to the Pall rich record Lington By H. W. Jejama. Vith Colympia Maps and Windrelay

ESOLISIT LASGUAGE By GEO P. MARSH.

ESQUISI LETERATURE. By T. B. HEAW, M.A.

SPECIARIO OF ENGLISH LITERATURE. By T. B. SHAW. Modern Grounders; Mathematical, Physical and Descriptive. Ry Cases Pavag, M.A. Woodnite.

GROGRAPHY OF BATTHE INDIA. Political and Physical. By Genant Surra, Lieft. Hajm

Merat Phitosophy, By Wa. Flaunce.

SUMNER'S (Broner) Life and Episcopate during 40 Years. By Rev G. H. Sousen Payment. Son, 160.

SWAINSON (Cases). Nucse and Apostles' Creeds; Their Liberty Heavy; tracilor with more Accusal of "The Creed of St. Attunents." Sec. 10r.

SWIFT (JONATHAN). [See CRAIK.]

SYBEL, (Visc. History of Enrape during the French Revolution, 1789-1791 a Ville, Res. 284, SyMONDS' (Rev. W.) incomes of the Racks, or Notes on the

Geology of Wales, Derron, and Formuell. Constitute. 12s.

TEMPLE (See Remarco), India in 1880. Wish Maps. 8vo. 16s. - Men and Events of My Time in India. 8vo. 16s. Oriental Experience Essays and Addresses de-Byrood on Vathery theractes. With Majorated Woodenes See, 18s. THIBAUTS (Agrouss) Purity in Musical Art. With Prefatory THIBLMANN (Bases). Journey through the Courses to Talves, Kardishn Asset the Tayle and Emphritus Nassesh and Palayse, Hasteshard, X-de Factors, Inc.
THOMSON (Assensessin). Lineoin's Lon Sermons. Syn. 10s. 6d. Life in the Light of Got's Word. Post 8rd. 5c. Word, Work, & Will : Collected E-say .. Crown Syn, Ss. THORNSHILL (Mark): The Personal Adventures and Experiences Was Magnirese during Hariller, We trans, and improvement the Indian Muliny. With Fred laplace and Plan. Crown two. 12s. N'S LIPE AND TIMES. With some account of his framing from appointed income. So the we and the restreeting. University 2 Vote No. 216. TITIAN'S LIFE AND TIMES. TOCQUEVILLE'S State of Society in France before the Revolution, 1789, and on the traces who a fed to that Level. See 12.6 TOMLINSON (Case.). The Sunnet: Its Origin, Structure, and Pinco in Poster. Post Bee. Dr. TOZER (Rev. H. F.). Highlands of Torkey, with Visits to Mounts Lettures on the Occupanty of Green, Post See, Sa. TRISTRAM (Cason). Great Saluara. Blostrations, Prown Sec. the. Land of Monte. Travels and Discussifies on the Knot. Side of the lived Sea wel the Junior Phintediple, Unorables, 150, TWINING (Rev. Twos.) Rogressions and Studies of a Country Christian (Rev. Table.) Recreations and Studies of A Country Chargens due Lad Century. Charge See 2a.

PAPER 4 (Schediens from the). Roing a Sequel to the "Recreations of a Country Christian of the Paris Country." Edited by the nature Paristra. Chargens in the Paris of Early and Mantenat Cartesia Art. With 9 3 file trailoux. Country. 14s.

TWISS (Housen) Life of Lord Edden. 2 Vols. Part Svs. 21s.

TWISS (Housen) Life of Lord Edden. 2 Vols. Part Svs. 21s. TYLOR (E. B.). Researches into the Early History of Mankind, and Introdupment of Cavillication. Ind Edition. See 12s. Primitive Culture : the Development of Mythology rulescope, Religion, Art, and Costern. 2 Year 3va. 244. VATICAN COUNCIL [See Laro.]
VIBCHOW (Provision). The Freedom of Science in the Modern State. Four. von. 2s. WACE (REV. Hassey), D.D. The Principal Facts in the Lafe of sir Lord, and the Anticetty of the Compelical Norratives. Post tire 6.

The Poundations of Faith. Humpton Lectures for 1879. Second Edition, Syn. 7s. 64

WALES (H.R.H. the Patres of . Specches and Addresses of B.R.H. the Patres of . Specches and Addresses of B.R.H. the Patres of Wales I being faculty for bring feet best. Eithelp James Marattan, A.B. Wat Pottest, Son 19.
WELLINGTON (Duns on: None of Conversations with the late East Starbope 1821 1821, Composed Sec. 28 44.

Despatches in India, Denmark, Fortugal, Spain,

the Low Countries, and France. 4 Vols. Svo. 48 Sc.

Christianity and Morality. Boyle Lectures for 1874 and

WELLINGTON IN AN AN AMPLICATION To queenes, relating to to his law and the second will be the Administration of Practice United to Second State of Page 13 Vote Sec. 20. auch

WELLINGTON'S Carl and Political Correspondence, Vols. L to ABLE MY DO PER

Speeches in l'arimment, 2 Vols. 870, 42s. WESTCOTT (Cas will, F.) The Gospel according to St. John, with Notes and I have tallene Reprinted to at the Speaker's Contentary).

WHARTING CLASS, W. J. L. K. R.N. Hydrographical Surveying: being a country out the notice of action applyed presidential Martin country with Mark Elizabeth country for

WHEELER AND Chouse of a Decking. Post 880.

WHITE W. II .. Manual of Naval Architecture, for the use of Naval ritheres adjetoniders, and Verbieres, &c. Illistrations fro. 34 WILBERFORD ES Beennet Lafe of William Wilherforce, Portren Course her As

- (Saurus, D.D.), Lord Bishop of Oxford and When breeder this Life. By Corn Arment, and E. G. Wilsen-course With Protection and Western S Vote Sto. Mr. such.

WILKINSON (Sea J. th.). Manners and Customa of the Aucont. Layettane, their Peterse Life, Lees Arts Religion No. 4 are edited. Lined to See to Beneu, Likely Restricted. I Vols. from the Popular Account of the Audient Egyptians. With son Wasserule

WILLIAMS (SIR MISTER)

2 Vols Post see 12. 18 East, Brahmboon and Hindusen, Religious Thought and Life in Ludia as hard on the Vela. Sec. 10. 64.
If udditions in the connection with Brahmanism and

Here but say, and in its contrast with Companity. With Einstration, one France Translated 1sts Local th Dr. An Indian

WINTLE (H. A. . rivid Lessons 12nn, 2s.6s. [See Erost.]

WOODS (CAPTAIN) Source of the Grus. With the Geography of the Vallet of the Drus. Befor Year. Man. Sec. 11s. WORDS OF HUMAN WISHOWS Collected and Armaged by

E. S. Will will treat to the said Totals Prop. Sec. 20, 66.

WORDSWOLTTI . Brestor Viccous Victorial Descriptive, and

WORDSWALLTI : Departure Virgine, Micharial, Beschiptive, and Hindschipe. With an Astrophysical Section of the Characteristics of Greek Art. By Law E. S. Santon, N. S. Schlerer, R. S. Santon, N. A. With the Hillustrations, Regarden, Els 46.

YORK [American Section of Colleges of Relays. Contents.—Symptic Respects towards of the part of the Kalays. Contents.—Symptic Respects to Contents.—Symptic Respects to Contents.—Symptic Respects to Manufacture, Species and Laurence Tou Epines. Work for the Michard Section of The Principles of Michael Section (National Section of Computer Virginia). An Indian of the Library of the State of the Section of the Principles of the Els Respects to Computer and Computer Computer of the Principles of the Principl

Control and the Kingdoms and Married Lie Lat Hierard by the Light of Liebental Writers and Models Towers. Well haps and Striken 2 Volts. Heathers for St.

and A. C. Burnant. A fileway of Angle-Indian Colleged World and Phrases, spile Kindred Testic, Symbological, Historical, (icographical, and Descrive, Medica Str., 22. 5d.

[A. F.] The Cretan Insurrection. Post Sto. 24. 5d.

